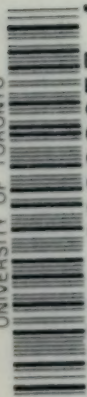


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 00882957 4

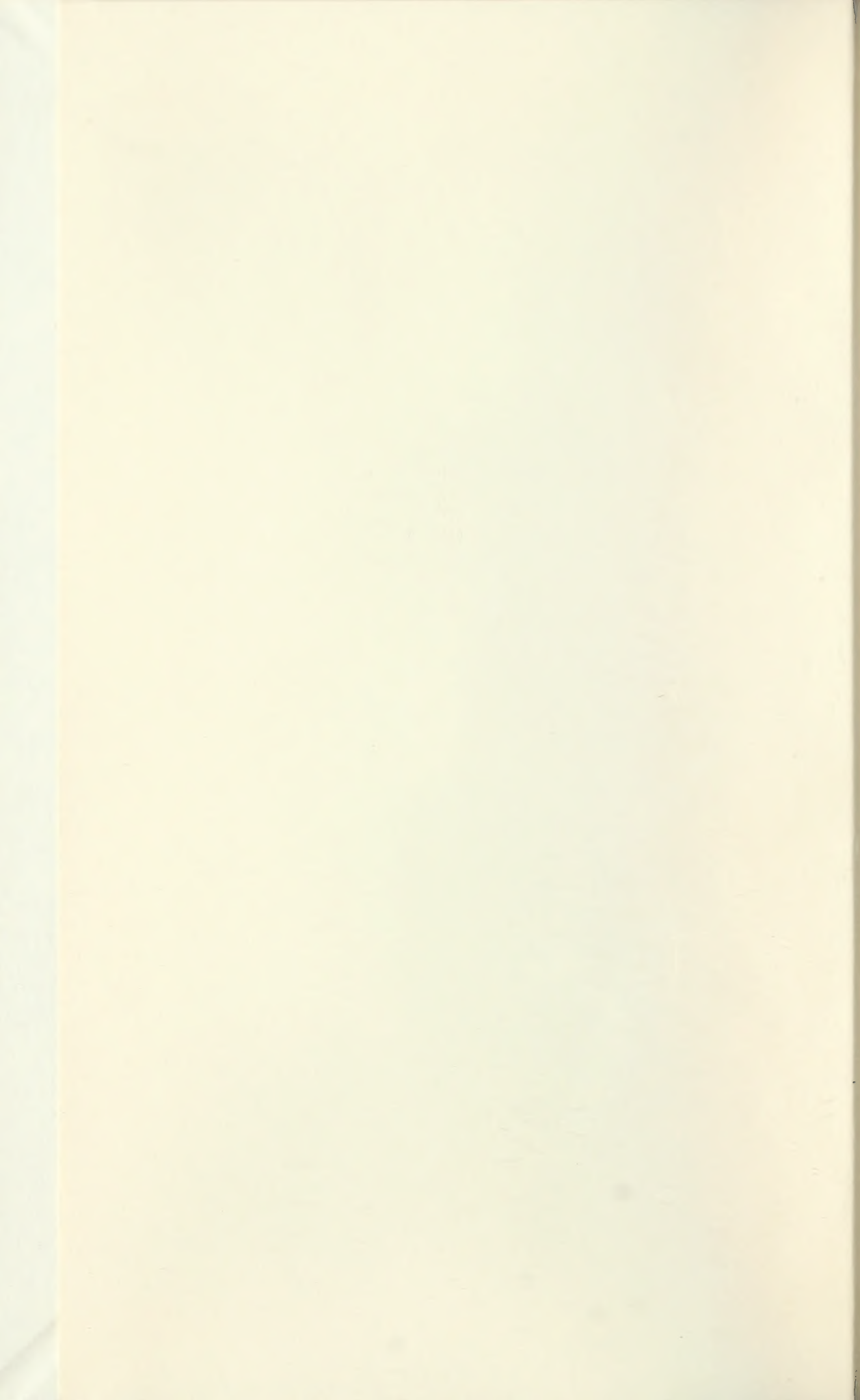












246

CIVILIZATION CONSIDERED AS  
A SCIENCE.



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2011 with funding from  
University of Toronto



CIVILIZATION CONSIDERED AS  
A SCIENCE,

IN RELATION TO

ITS ESSENCE, ITS ELEMENTS, AND ITS END.

BY

GEORGE HARRIS, F.S.A.,

OF THE MIDDLE TEMPLE, BARRISTER-AT-LAW,

AUTHOR OF 'THE LIFE OF LORD CHANCELLOR HARDWICKE,' 'THE TRUE  
THEORY OF REPRESENTATION IN A STATE,' ETC.

LONDON :

BELL AND DALDY, 186, FLEET STREET.

1861.

HM  
101  
H35



JOHN EDWARD TAYLOR, PRINTER,  
LITTLE QUEEN STREET, LINCOLN'S INN FIELDS.

TO  
THE RIGHT HONOURABLE  
HENRY LORD BROUGHAM AND VAUX,  
ETC. ETC. ETC.,

RENOWNED ALIKE AS  
AN ORATOR, A JURIST, A STATESMAN, AND A PHILOSOPHER ;  
THE UNTIRING ENERGIES OF WHOSE GIGANTIC MIND HAVE  
FOR MORE THAN HALF A CENTURY  
BEEN STRENUOUSLY AND SUCCESSFULLY DEVOTED  
TO PROMOTE THE PROGRESS OF CIVILIZATION :

*This Work,*  
HUMBLY DESIGNED TO AID IN THAT  
GREAT INTELLECTUAL CAUSE,  
IS,  
WITH HIS LORDSHIP'S KIND PERMISSION,

*Very respectfully Dedicated*  
BY HIS OBLIGED SERVANT AND ARDENT ADMIRER,

THE AUTHOR.



## PREFACE.

---

THE principal object aimed at in the following pages, is to exhibit a comprehensive though concise view of the nature of Civilization, to demonstrate its capacity for scientific treatment, as also for practical application, and to evince the necessity for cultivating every branch of it alike, in order to ensure the establishment of it as an entire system or condition. An attempt is thus made to effect a complete, definite, and systematic exposition of the true principles upon which the general Educational and Moral Policy of this country ought to be conducted.

As regards the plan upon which I have proceeded in the elucidation of my subject, I have, in the first part of this work, endeavoured to define and point out, clearly and correctly, the real and essential Nature of Civilization. After this, I have



specified and set forth the various Elements which seemed to me to contribute to its constitution and progress; and I have concluded by demonstrating the principal Ends at which Civilization aims, and which may be attained by its complete establishment in any country.

The axioms here laid down, and the Elements of Civilization here enunciated, are applicable alike to every nation, whatever be its general condition, or the form of its constitution.

An effort is also made to trace out each of the Elements of Civilization, and to analyze their first principles; to point out their essential qualities and constituents, to define clearly what active agents may claim to be ranked as such Elements, and to demonstrate the distinctive use and application of each. Even should these Elements be denied accurately and fully to comprehend the efficient causes of Civilization; yet it cannot be doubted that in their consideration is included every principle that extensively conduces to its promotion and perfect establishment.

It is not, however, either expected or intended that every rule which is prescribed for the regulation of the science proposed for consideration, should be always rigidly adhered to, or literally carried out. The object is merely to enunciate

the leading principles generally applicable, which although varying as regards their suitableness to each special exigency, retain the same main features and characteristics, in whatever case, or under whatever circumstances they are availed of.

It appears, moreover, in all cases desirable, so far as circumstances may admit of its being adopted,—as I have indeed remarked in the following pages,—that both in laying down and in establishing a system for the regulation of a State, we should not only work by natural means, and as little as possible go contrary to Nature; but that we should endeavour, in all our plans and operations, to imitate and carry out the system of Nature.

On my first entering on the present subject, and endeavouring to treat upon it, it appeared to me that Civilization was mainly to be promoted by legislative measures expressly adapted for the purpose, and which I have here classed under the term “Moral Jurisprudence,” and have considered, as upon reflection I became convinced was the case, to be merely one single Element of Civilization out of several. Education next struck me as constituting the real, efficient cause, if not the actual Essence of Civilization. But upon taking a comprehensive view of the whole matter, in all its

different bearings, and with regard to all its varied requirements; the ultimate conclusion which I arrived at was, that that which is not only really needed, but what is in fact in many cases actually intended in the demands for the intellectual and moral improvement and advancement of the nation, is not Education merely, but Civilization generally. This principle, which has not been adopted without the fullest deliberation and the sincerest conviction of its truth, is the basis of the doctrine propounded in the following pages, and its recognition is deemed of the utmost consequence to the well-being of society.

Education is, in fact, so to speak, one only out of several of the chains by which the car of Civilization is drawn onwards. By applying to this one alone, not only is the machine moved very feebly and very slowly, but there is considerable danger incurred of snapping the single chain. On the other hand, by applying to them all together, it is impelled rapidly and easily, and the strain on the one chain is relieved, all the rest contributing alike their proper share in the labour.

A very moderate degree of observation and reflection will, moreover, suffice to convince us that even Education itself,—although now considered by many as the sole Element of Civilization, and



consequently allowed to engross the whole attention both of the State, and of individuals anxious for its extension,—suffers in reality very largely from our neglect to resort to, and to promote the application of the other Elements of Civilization, which are essentially auxiliary to Education itself, as well as to Civilization generally.

The general correctness of the theory here maintained, receives, indeed, an important confirmation from the views on this subject expressed by that comprehensive and penetrating statesman, the Emperor Napoleon I., who, when referring to what he had done for the cultivation of his people, remarked that he had “caused every *institution* to be formed upon a plan which offered instruction to the public. The *Museums* were thrown open to the *cannaille*. All my exertions were directed to illuminate the mass of the nation.”\* In addition to this, we know the corresponding efforts which he made as regards certain of what I have here termed the other Elements of Civilization, in the maintenance of Religion, the promotion of Art, the establishment of a sound Jurisprudential code, and the construction of roads and other public works.

As in the allotment and determination of the

\* Voice from St. Helena, vol. ii. p. 385, 6th edition.

studies to be followed in a university, all the different elements of knowledge are cultivated together, and each aids the pursuit of the other; so in the general Civilization of a nation, the various Elements for this purpose should be adopted contemporaneously, each assisting and co-operating with, and conducing to the efficiency of the other, and contributing to promote the general object in view. Analogously, indeed, to what we see attained by certain chemical compounds of great power and efficacy, the merit of which consists in or results from the admixture, in their proper measure, of the several ingredients of which they are constituted; Civilization is completely effected, and fully established in any country, not by carrying to the utmost extreme the introduction of any one of its Elements singly,—be it Education, or Religious Influence, or Art,—but by the harmonious blending of them all together, and the adoption of each, though in due proportion.

It is in truth as unreasonable to expect a nation to advance in enlightenment and in Civilization by supplying to it only the means of Education, without affording any opportunities, through the requisite National Institutions and other Elements of Civilization, of gratifying the intellectual craving so produced and excited; as it is to invite a



number of hungry men to a feast, and to suppose that they will be perfectly satisfied with having several empty dishes set before them. We readily supply mental dishes, but resolutely deny mental food.

To a certain extent, nevertheless, all Civilization, and every Element of it which is here enumerated, might be said to constitute, and to be comprehended in, Education ; so that in one respect Education may be contended to be the only Element of Civilization. But this is true only in a particular and very limited, and by no means in a strict or general sense ; and in the same way only that all nutriment, in which we might include water, and even air, may be said to be meat. Thus, every Element of Civilization conduces, more or less, to the Education of a man, as tending in some degree to influence and develope his mental and moral being. This, however, may be remarked of every single occurrence of his life, but which no one would think of classing among the Elements of his Education. So Education, as regards its application in the Civilization of a nation, has its proper and strict limits, and is distinct from the other Elements of Civilization, each of which, however, contributes to aid its progress. They are, nevertheless, in reality, no more a part of our Education, than air is a portion

of our food ; however necessary it may be to our preservation, and even in order to render food itself nutritious.

It may also be correctly laid down, that the only really true and legitimate mode of rendering Education compulsory, is not by legislative enactment, but by Civilization ; by creating such a strong necessity for it from the general Civilization of the people through the application of its other Elements, that all, in self-defence, in order to enable them to avail themselves of these Elements, and of the sources of enjoyment thereby opened to them, will be at once voluntarily induced of themselves to seek Education, instead of having it, as now proposed, involuntarily forced upon them.

On the other hand, the error pursued by many,—which is doubtless both very great, and very deleterious in its consequences,—in urging the excessive extension of Education of every kind upon all classes indiscriminately, has arisen from considering Education alone, and not Civilization generally, as the real requirement of the nation ; in fact, from mistaking Education for Civilization. It is, indeed, possible that even Education itself,—as where it is the means of promoting a too exclusive attention to one pursuit, either in an individual or a nation, to the neglect of the other

branches or Elements of Civilization ; or where it tends too largely to foster luxury or refinement, as in the case of the extensive cultivation of certain mere accomplishments,—may be directly and essentially injurious to the promotion of Civilization.

Two important circumstances seemed peculiarly to point out the present period as a fit time for the publication of the following pages, which have been for some years lying by since their original composition, have occasionally received additions as new ideas presented themselves to the author's mind, and have obtained a revision as opportunity offered, or as events appeared to render this expedient:—

1. The extensive feeling now abroad in this country in favour of the Education of the people generally, and on the most comprehensive principles. 2. The great desirableness which has long been felt, and is now generally perceived and acknowledged, of some grand, and leading, and distinct elementary principles being laid down which should serve to guide the framing of any measures for this purpose.

To encourage and stimulate still further the one, and to supply in some measure the want of the other, is the reason for the appearance of the present work, and must form the apology for its



publication. Should it only have the effect of causing a yet deeper attention to the very important and interesting subject treated on, the author will not conclude that his labours have been entirely in vain. If his views are deemed by any erroneous or deficient, he trusts that this consideration will induce others to discuss the matter with more discretion and more discernment.



# CONTENTS.

## THE REAL NATURE AND ESSENCE OF CIVILIZATION.

|                                                                 | PAGE |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| Capacity of Man for Improvement . . . . .                       | 1    |
| Natural Analogy between Men and States . . . . .                | 3    |
| Threefold consideration of Man . . . . .                        | 3    |
| 1. As an Individual . . . . .                                   | 3    |
| 2. As the Constituent of a State . . . . .                      | 4    |
| 3. As the Type of a State . . . . .                             | 6    |
| Rival and Conflicting Influences . . . . .                      | 9    |
| Moral Influences and Causes . . . . .                           | 12   |
| Origin of Civilization . . . . .                                | 13   |
| Influence of External Intercourse . . . . .                     | 14   |
| Civilization the Natural and Proper Condition of Man . . . . .  | 16   |
| Essence of Civilization . . . . .                               | 16   |
| Requisites to Civilization . . . . .                            | 18   |
| Elements of Civilization . . . . .                              | 20   |
| Geographical Position . . . . .                                 | 22   |
| Situation and Circumstances of Great Britain . . . . .          | 23   |
| Mixture of National Races . . . . .                             | 26   |
| Influence of Climate . . . . .                                  | 27   |
| National Character . . . . .                                    | 29   |
| Letters and Language reflective of National Character . . . . . | 37   |
| Ancient and Modern Civilization . . . . .                       | 40   |
| Influence of Scientific Inventions . . . . .                    | 41   |
| Vast Achievements of the Ancients . . . . .                     | 45   |
| Application of Discoveries . . . . .                            | 46   |
| Christianity and Civilization . . . . .                         | 47   |
| Chivalry and Civilization . . . . .                             | 48   |
| Decline of Civilization . . . . .                               | 49   |
| Effect of Luxury . . . . .                                      | 49   |
| National Wealth . . . . .                                       | 51   |
| National Poverty . . . . .                                      | 53   |

|                                                        | PAGE |
|--------------------------------------------------------|------|
| National Debt . . . . .                                | 54   |
| Civilization reducible to a Science . . . . .          | 56   |
| Duty of the State in regard to its Promotion . . . . . | 57   |
| Constituents and Elements of Civilization . . . . .    | 60   |

## THE ELEMENTS WHICH CONTRIBUTE TO THE PRO- MOTION AND PROGRESS OF CIVILIZATION.

### I. NATIONAL EDUCATION OF THE PEOPLE.

|                                                               |    |
|---------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| Education the Keystone of Civilization . . . . .              | 62 |
| Its Threefold Nature . . . . .                                | 64 |
| Different Kinds of Education . . . . .                        | 65 |
| Its Principles and Objects . . . . .                          | 69 |
| Necessity for Systematic Principles . . . . .                 | 70 |
| Education and Crime . . . . .                                 | 72 |
| Want of a suitable Literature for the Lower Classes . . . . . | 74 |
| Political Knowledge for the People . . . . .                  | 77 |
| Popular Ignorance . . . . .                                   | 79 |
| Educational Fallacies . . . . .                               | 80 |
| Extension of Intercourse between Classes . . . . .            | 82 |
| National Education a National Duty . . . . .                  | 83 |
| State Provision and Regulations for this Purpose . . . . .    | 84 |
| Competitive Examinations for Civil Offices . . . . .          | 85 |
| Period and End of Education . . . . .                         | 89 |
| Artificial Stimulus to Education . . . . .                    | 90 |
| Religious Education . . . . .                                 | 93 |
| Threefold Results of Education . . . . .                      | 94 |

### II. NATIONAL RELIGIOUS INFLUENCE.

|                                                                          |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Reciprocal Influence of Religion and Education . . . . .                 | 96  |
| Universality of Religious Influence . . . . .                            | 97  |
| Civilizing Influence of Christianity . . . . .                           | 98  |
| Different Kinds of Religious Influence . . . . .                         | 99  |
| Different Modes of its Operation . . . . .                               | 100 |
| Civilizing Effect of Christianity upon Mankind . . . . .                 | 102 |
| Its Aid to the Operation of the other Elements of Civilization . . . . . | 103 |
| Immensity of its Influence . . . . .                                     | 104 |
| Relative Influence of Christianity and Paganism . . . . .                | 105 |
| Personality and Materiality in Religion . . . . .                        | 106 |
| Priest Worship and Fabric Worship . . . . .                              | 109 |
| Popular Instruction in the Evidences of Religion . . . . .               | 110 |
| Ceremonials in the Celebration of Religious Services . . . . .           | 111 |
| Character of Religious Edifices . . . . .                                | 112 |

|                                                               | PAGE |
|---------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| Morality and Religion . . . . .                               | 113  |
| Civilized Countries and Individuals Destitute of Religion . . | 113  |
| Duty of the State in the Promotion of Religious Influence .   | 114  |
| Reverence and Regard to be rendered to Religion . . . .       | 115  |
| State Protection of Religion . . . . .                        | 117  |
| Avoidance of Repulsiveness in Religious Celebrations . . .    | 119  |
| The Style of the Scriptures a Model for Sacred Services . .   | 120  |

### III. NATIONAL INSTRUCTORY INSTITUTIONS.

|                                                                                     |     |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Nature, Object, and Regulation of Institutions of this Description . . . . .        | 120 |
| Institutions entitled to be deemed National . . . . .                               | 121 |
| Claims to Exclusive Privileges . . . . .                                            | 123 |
| Counteracting Effects, and Changes in the Condition of these Institutions . . . . . | 124 |
| Threefold Correspondence of Institutions of this Class, with Education . . . . .    | 125 |
| Different Kinds of Instructory Institutions . . . . .                               | 126 |
| I. A Church Establishment . . . . .                                                 | 126 |
| Its Advantages Direct and Indirect . . . . .                                        | 127 |
| Tendency to Corruption, necessitating certain Safeguards . .                        | 130 |
| Futility of Strict Tests for this Purpose . . . . .                                 | 131 |
| Expediency of Extending the Basis of the Church Establishment . . . . .             | 131 |
| New Criterion of Churchmanship Proposed . . . . .                                   | 133 |
| Liturgical Revision . . . . .                                                       | 137 |
| Requisite division of Clerical Duties . . . . .                                     | 139 |
| Veto on Ecclesiastical Appointments . . . . .                                       | 140 |
| Educational and Religious Institutions and Charities . . .                          | 141 |
| II. Universities and Scholastic Institutions . . . . .                              | 145 |
| Ends they ought to Serve . . . . .                                                  | 146 |
| Necessity for a Systematic Plan of Instruction . . . . .                            | 148 |
| Lectures and Readings . . . . .                                                     | 149 |
| Examinations, to what purpose to be Directed . . . . .                              | 151 |
| Requirements of Instructory Institutions generally . . . .                          | 152 |
| Suitable Local Position for Universities . . . . .                                  | 153 |
| Public Libraries . . . . .                                                          | 154 |
| III. Museums and Galleries of Works of Art . . . . .                                | 157 |
| IV. Spectacular Institutions . . . . .                                              | 158 |
| A National Theatre . . . . .                                                        | 160 |
| The Stage a National Moral Censor . . . . .                                         | 163 |
| Unjust Aspersions on its Character . . . . .                                        | 165 |
| Civilizing tendency of the Stage . . . . .                                          | 169 |



## IV. NATIONAL CULTIVATION OF ART AND SCIENCE.

|                                                                         | Page |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| Reciprocal Influence between Civilization and Art and Science . . . . . | 169  |
| Classification and Apportionment of Pursuits of this kind . . . . .     | 171  |
| Aid of Science to Civilization . . . . .                                | 173  |
| Influence of Art on Civilization . . . . .                              | 174  |
| Effect and Power of Music . . . . .                                     | 176  |
| Poetry, National and Devotional . . . . .                               | 177  |
| National Monuments . . . . .                                            | 181  |
| Partiality evinced in their Erection . . . . .                          | 182  |
| Civilizing Effect of Monumental Tributes . . . . .                      | 183  |
| Memorials not Monumental . . . . .                                      | 188  |
| National Buildings . . . . .                                            | 189  |
| Domestic Application of Art and Science . . . . .                       | 189  |
| National Disfigurements . . . . .                                       | 190  |
| Ornamental Gardening . . . . .                                          | 191  |
| State Provision for the Promotion of Art and Literature . . . . .       | 192  |
| Popular Art . . . . .                                                   | 193  |
| Blending and Co-operation of Art and Science . . . . .                  | 194  |
| State Patronage for the Promotion of Science . . . . .                  | 195  |

## V. LIBERTY OF THE PRESS, AND TOLERATION.

|                                                                     |     |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Restraints on Liberty . . . . .                                     | 196 |
| Liberty, Physical and Intellectual . . . . .                        | 197 |
| Relative Influence of Liberty and Slavery on Civilization . . . . . | 198 |
| Different Kinds of Intellectual Liberty . . . . .                   | 199 |
| Freedom directly conducive to Civilization . . . . .                | 199 |
| I. A Free Press . . . . .                                           | 200 |
| Its Independence and Influence, whence derived . . . . .            | 201 |
| Censorship by the Stage and by the Press . . . . .                  | 202 |
| The Parliament, the Church, and the Press . . . . .                 | 203 |
| Basis of the Power of the Press . . . . .                           | 204 |
| Legitimate Restraints on the Liberty of the Press . . . . .         | 205 |
| Licentiousness not Liberty . . . . .                                | 208 |
| Present Character of the British Press . . . . .                    | 209 |
| II. Religious Liberty . . . . .                                     | 210 |
| True Principles of Toleration . . . . .                             | 211 |
| Basis of Toleration . . . . .                                       | 212 |
| Toleration in relation to Civilization . . . . .                    | 213 |
| Inefficacy of Coercion . . . . .                                    | 214 |
| Essence of Toleration . . . . .                                     | 215 |
| Legitimate Limits to Toleration . . . . .                           | 217 |
| Intolerance no Test of a True Church . . . . .                      | 221 |
| Rival Religious Bodies . . . . .                                    | 223 |
| Toleration degenerating into Intoleration . . . . .                 | 224 |



# CONTENTS.

xxi

|                                                       | PAGE |
|-------------------------------------------------------|------|
| Religious Superstitions . . . . .                     | 225  |
| Basis of Intolerance . . . . .                        | 225  |
| Right and Exercise of Private Judgment . . . . .      | 226  |
| Change of National Religion . . . . .                 | 227  |
| State Benefits resulting from Toleration . . . . .    | 228  |
| Instruction should supersede Intolerance . . . . .    | 229  |
| Summary of the True Principle of Toleration . . . . . | 230  |

## VI. NATIONAL COMMEMORATIONS AND FESTIVALS.

|                                                                      |     |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Threefold Advantages of Days of Recreation . . . . .                 | 231 |
| National Relaxation . . . . .                                        | 232 |
| The Christian Sabbath . . . . .                                      | 233 |
| Right Rule for its Observance . . . . .                              | 234 |
| True Principle in Sabbatarian Legislation . . . . .                  | 235 |
| Present necessity for National Recreations . . . . .                 | 236 |
| State Precedents for National Holidays . . . . .                     | 237 |
| Holy-Days and Holidays . . . . .                                     | 239 |
| Commemorative Anniversaries . . . . .                                | 240 |
| Specific Days proposed . . . . .                                     | 242 |
| Utility of these Commemorations . . . . .                            | 242 |
| National Amusements, their Regulation, Adaptation, and Aim . . . . . | 243 |
| Corrective Influence of certain Recreative Pursuits . . . . .        | 244 |
| Convivial Celebrations . . . . .                                     | 245 |
| Improving Recreations . . . . .                                      | 247 |
| Excitements to Emulation . . . . .                                   | 248 |
| Demoralizing and Depraving Recreations and Spectacles . . . . .      | 249 |
| Gambling, and Games of Chance . . . . .                              | 252 |
| Vicious and Idle Pursuits . . . . .                                  | 253 |
| State Provision for National Recreations . . . . .                   | 254 |
| Plan for accomplishing these Proposals . . . . .                     | 254 |

## VII. DIGNITIES AND HONORARY REWARDS.

|                                                                        |     |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Civil Distinctions originate with Nature . . . . .                     | 256 |
| Differences, Artificial and Natural . . . . .                          | 257 |
| Civilizing Influence, and Moral Effect of National Dignities . . . . . | 258 |
| State Honours representative of Real Renown . . . . .                  | 260 |
| Civilizing Influence of an Aristocracy . . . . .                       | 261 |
| Suggestions for preventing the Impoverishment of the Peerage . . . . . | 262 |
| Gentility . . . . .                                                    | 263 |
| Honours suited to a Civilized Age . . . . .                            | 264 |
| Dignities and Rewards for Achievements in Civilization . . . . .       | 266 |
| Minor State Dignities . . . . .                                        | 268 |
| New Order of Dignities for Men of Letters . . . . .                    | 269 |
| Revival of Extinct Orders of Nobility . . . . .                        | 269 |
| Hereditary Honours . . . . .                                           | 270 |

|                                                              |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Peerages for Life . . . . .                                  | 271 |
| The End and Aim of Honorary Distinction . . . . .            | 272 |
| State Pensions to Meritorious Persons . . . . .              | 273 |
| State Rewards correspondent with their Objects . . . . .     | 276 |
| Professional Pecuniary Recompense . . . . .                  | 277 |
| Pensions to Men of Letters and Science . . . . .             | 278 |
| Dispensation of State Preferment . . . . .                   | 279 |
| Rewards to Men of Middle Rank . . . . .                      | 281 |
| Special Qualities requiring National Encouragement . . . . . | 281 |

## VIII. MORAL JURISPRUDENCE.

|                                                                     |     |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Nature, Scope, and Aim of Moral Jurisprudence . . . . .             | 282 |
| Leading Principles of Jurisprudence generally . . . . .             | 283 |
| Proper Sphere of Moral Jurisprudence . . . . .                      | 286 |
| Leading Principles of Moral Jurisprudence . . . . .                 | 287 |
| I. Systems of Civil Government . . . . .                            | 288 |
| Essential Principles of Liberty . . . . .                           | 288 |
| Moral Influence of Sovereigns in Monarchical States . . . . .       | 291 |
| Moral Influence of Rulers . . . . .                                 | 294 |
| Representative Governments . . . . .                                | 295 |
| True Principles of Representation . . . . .                         | 295 |
| Mixed Constitutions . . . . .                                       | 297 |
| II. Objects and Systems of Laws . . . . .                           | 298 |
| Specific Adaptation of particular Codes . . . . .                   | 299 |
| Laws repugnant to Nature or Religion . . . . .                      | 300 |
| Accordance with National Character of National Laws . . . . .       | 302 |
| Marriage Laws, and Influence and Position of Women . . . . .        | 303 |
| Criminal Moral Codes . . . . .                                      | 306 |
| Courts of Chivalry to arbitrate on Cases of Honour . . . . .        | 308 |
| Leading Principle on which Punishments proceed . . . . .            | 309 |
| Preventative Punishments . . . . .                                  | 310 |
| Varieties and Objects of Punishments . . . . .                      | 311 |
| Moral Effect of Punishments . . . . .                               | 313 |
| Degrading Punishments . . . . .                                     | 314 |
| Reformatories . . . . .                                             | 315 |
| Whence Punishments fail in their End . . . . .                      | 317 |
| State Rewards for Good Conduct . . . . .                            | 318 |
| Discouraging Punishments . . . . .                                  | 319 |
| Oaths . . . . .                                                     | 320 |
| Punishments corresponding with the Crimes to be repressed . . . . . | 321 |
| Mode of Administering Justice . . . . .                             | 322 |
| Necessity of a Public Prosecutor . . . . .                          | 322 |
| Civil Disabilities . . . . .                                        | 323 |
| Revenue and other Restrictive Laws . . . . .                        | 324 |
| Copyright and Patent Laws . . . . .                                 | 326 |

|                                                                | PAGE |
|----------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| Principle of the Poor Laws . . . . .                           | 326  |
| Jurisprudential Changes . . . . .                              | 327  |
| Laws Repugnant to the National Sentiment . . . . .             | 329  |
| Moral Causes and Operations, and Moral Jurisprudence . . . . . | 330  |

## IX. INTERNAL COMMUNICATION.

|                                                                      |     |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Civilizing Influence of Mutual Intercourse . . . . .                 | 331 |
| This Element should be combined with the others enumerated . . . . . | 331 |
| Amalgamation of Societies in a Nation . . . . .                      | 334 |
| Analogy between Individual and Internal Communication . . . . .      | 335 |
| Intercourse between Ranks and Classes . . . . .                      | 337 |
| Varieties of Internal Communication . . . . .                        | 338 |
| Specific Modes of Intercommunication . . . . .                       | 339 |
| National Intercommunication a National Object . . . . .              | 340 |
| Establishment of Railway Communication in this Country . . . . .     | 341 |
| Postal and Telegraphic Communication . . . . .                       | 343 |
| Different Points of Internal Communication . . . . .                 | 344 |
| Rival Rural and Urban Interests . . . . .                            | 347 |
| Preservation of Balance between Contending Interests . . . . .       | 349 |
| Colonial Communication . . . . .                                     | 350 |
| Steam Navigation and the Electric Telegraph . . . . .                | 353 |
| Communication of each kind essential . . . . .                       | 355 |
| Importance and Civilizing Influence of this Element . . . . .        | 356 |
| Its due Regulation and proper Application . . . . .                  | 357 |

## X. INTERNATIONAL INTERCOURSE.

|                                                                                |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Mutual Influence of Civilization and Intercourse . . . . .                     | 358 |
| Intercourse the primary Stimulus to Civilization . . . . .                     | 359 |
| Influence of International Intercourse on National Character . . . . .         | 361 |
| Civilization subversive of National Barriers . . . . .                         | 362 |
| Influence of Religion in relation to this Element . . . . .                    | 364 |
| International Commerce . . . . .                                               | 365 |
| International Interests . . . . .                                              | 366 |
| Early Civilization of this Country by International Inter-<br>course . . . . . | 367 |
| Foreign Policy regulated by Geographical Position . . . . .                    | 368 |
| Insular Situation . . . . .                                                    | 369 |
| Marine Intercourse . . . . .                                                   | 370 |
| Civilization contributes to Promote Nationality . . . . .                      | 371 |
| Various Modes of International Intercourse . . . . .                           | 372 |
| Influence of War upon Civilization . . . . .                                   | 373 |
| International Interventions . . . . .                                          | 378 |
| Influence of Civilization upon War . . . . .                                   | 379 |
| Provocations to War, and Preservatives of Peace . . . . .                      | 381 |
| Civilization increases Martial Skill . . . . .                                 | 383 |



|                                                            | PAGE |
|------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| Maintenance of National Boundaries . . . . .               | 384  |
| Protection of National Frontiers . . . . .                 | 385  |
| Preservation of Balance of Power between Nations . . . . . | 385  |
| International Alliances . . . . .                          | 386  |
| International Independence . . . . .                       | 387  |
| Precautions respecting Foreign Influences . . . . .        | 388  |
| International Honour . . . . .                             | 389  |
| International Enterprise . . . . .                         | 390  |
| International Laws . . . . .                               | 391  |
| International Language . . . . .                           | 392  |
| Civilizing results of International Intercourse . . . . .  | 393  |
| Civilization of the World . . . . .                        | 394  |

### THE END RESULTING FROM THE COMPLETE ESTABLISHMENT OF CIVILIZATION.

|                                                                        |     |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| Correct Enumeration of the Elements of Civilization . . . . .          | 395 |
| Incomplete Accomplishment of Civilization . . . . .                    | 396 |
| Conjunction of each of the Elements of Civilization . . . . .          | 397 |
| Definition of the End of Civilization . . . . .                        | 398 |
| Threefold Objects of Civilization . . . . .                            | 401 |
| Happiness and Civilization . . . . .                                   | 402 |
| Changes, Material and Moral, occasioned by Civilization . . . . .      | 403 |
| Contemporaneous Co-operation of the Elements of Civilization . . . . . | 404 |
| Mutual Aid to each other of different Elements . . . . .               | 405 |
| Experience of this Application of Elements . . . . .                   | 408 |
| Threefold Results of Civilization . . . . .                            | 410 |
| National Diseases in relation to Civilization . . . . .                | 411 |
| Ideal of a completely Civilized State . . . . .                        | 412 |
| Influence of Civilization upon Manners and Morals . . . . .            | 414 |
| Moral Causes, and their Influence upon Civilization, . . . . .         | 415 |
| Civilization the Safeguard of Civil Liberty . . . . .                  | 416 |
| Symbols of Civilization . . . . .                                      | 418 |
| Physical Advantages resulting from Civilization . . . . .              | 420 |
| Stimulus to Progression . . . . .                                      | 421 |
| Results of Civilization, Individual and National . . . . .             | 421 |
| Social Evils attendant on Civilization . . . . .                       | 422 |
| No instance in History of a completely Civilized State . . . . .       | 424 |
| Civilization, Past, Present, and Prospective . . . . .                 | 425 |
| Recapitulation and Conclusion . . . . .                                | 426 |



THE  
REAL NATURE AND ESSENCE  
OF  
CIVILIZATION.

---

MAN is directly and peculiarly distinguished from every other created being in the world, alike by the superiority of his intelligent powers, as also by the capacity of those powers to advance forward in the career towards perfection to an almost infinite extent. Not only, indeed, is the mind of man thus susceptible of improvement, but the full growth and even the very development of its faculties are dependent on the cultivation bestowed upon the former. Instinctive intelligence, on the other hand, is created perfect, and neither admits of nor requires cultivation for its advancement. The capacity of the human mind to be thus ever progressing onward towards a perfect condition, both as respects its acquirements and its powers, has been regarded as one of the most sure and satisfactory proofs of the soul's immortality. This capacity for improvement

and advancement is moreover alike true with regard to each individual mind, and as respects men in the aggregate when united together into a civil society or state. There is also not only a growth observable in a national as well as a natural body, but in a national mind too the progress of growth and development is as plain, and as perceptible at each stage, as it is in the mind of a man: and the changes and peculiarities observable at the different stages in each are corresponding and very similar. Both individuals and nations differ, however, one from another in many important respects, according to the various and conflicting circumstances by which they are surrounded. In the case, moreover, both of men and states, however disposed to exert themselves to further their own progression and civilization, there are certain counteracting causes ever in operation by which the course of nature is wont to be diverted or impeded. These require to be attended to, not for the purpose of constructing a new channel, but in order to restore the current to that in which it originally flowed. It is also of high importance to all who are interested in the promotion of civilization, that those great principles by which its growth is regulated, whose foundations lie deep in the knowledge of human nature, and which are as fixed, and sure, and definable as those of any other science, should be fully developed and understood.

In entering upon the subject before us, it will be proper, in order to obtain a comprehensive and adequate view of the nature and essence of civilization, that we should first inquire into the capacities and adaptation of man to be influenced by it, more especially under the following conditions:—1. Man considered as an individual. 2. Man considered in the aggregate, or as collected into a society or state. 3. Man considered as the type of a state.

1. The influences produced by civilization on the individual man, need not here to be pointed out. Man indeed owes everything to Civilization. He is dependent on this not only for his intellectual acquirements and enjoyments, but to enable him to construct a habitation to dwell in, and even to furnish clothes to protect him against the weather. Nay more than this, his very corporeal frame calls for the aid of civilization, and of constant artificial appliances, in order to ensure his comfort. Animals, on the other hand, have most of these wants supplied by Nature, while man's destitution seems providentially ordered to stimulate him to those artificial resources of invention, and application, and exertion, which he, unlike the rest of the creation, is capable of putting forth. Aristotle observes in his *Politics*—a work alike philosophical, practical, and profound, and which forms probably the most complete and most comprehensive compendium of state-wisdom which has ever yet ema-



nated from the mind of man :—" Perfected by the offices and duties of social life, man is the best, but rude and undisciplined, he is the very worst of animals."\* In a civilized condition, moreover, every power and capacity of the mind is developed and brought into activity ; while in a state of barbarism, many of these lie dead, and the most exalted may never be called upon to exert themselves. This is indeed of itself surely enough to prove that civilization is not merely the highest, but the natural condition of man ; that alone in which all his endowments, and more especially the most important of them, can be exercised and perfected. In a state of barbarism, on the other hand, the animal propensities and lower impulses only of his nature,—which ought ever to be restrained and subdued,—are those which will be fully developed and brought into use.

2. As regards the influences produced by civilization upon man in the aggregate, or upon a body of individuals collected together into a society or state, we must consider on the one hand that these persons, though united into a community, are each individuals still, and retain all their particular intellectual endowments and dispositions ; while, on the other hand, by being thus united they become in many respects much changed through the influence produced by the operation of these different

\* Book I.



minds on each other, whereby various faculties, and powers, and dispositions, are developed, which, while each remained in solitude, or acted by himself independently, would have lain dormant. Hence the same man when in society and when in solitude, though really and essentially unchanged, conducts himself very differently; as might be seen in the case of fifty people meditating alone on any topic, and the same fifty when engaged upon it while congregated into one assembly.

Men join together in societies from a sense of their own individual incompleteness and insufficiency, and from a consciousness that they are but units or elements of the whole civil body. If each man was able of himself to do all that he required, he would not resort to the aid of others. Indeed we only do so now from necessity, and in those cases where we cannot effect what we wish by ourselves alone. This want it is which induces, or rather drives men into society; societies into nations; and nations into confederations; until the whole world is, to some extent at least, knit together into one grand social community. And the further that civilization advances, the more extensive in all respects will be this union; and the more extensive is this union and co-operation, the more complete is the confederation thus formed. Society is, indeed, the very soul of civilization. Without this, civilization cannot exist. And it is in a great degree, because, on

account of the inferiority of their powers of intelligence, they can only enter into society to a very limited extent, that animals do not advance in civilization beyond their original condition, and are not adapted for ever attaining it in any large measure.

3. In considering man as the type of a nation or state composed of a body of individuals united together for mutual society and aid, and governed by laws conducive both to their individual and general welfare, we shall find that the resemblance extends to various and striking particulars. Both men and states have their periods of childhood, youth, maturity, and decay; both in their early condition are comparatively powerless, gradually acquire strength, and increase by degrees in wealth, importance, and civilization; both in their progress from infancy to maturity pass through many stages and changes; both are subject to certain disorders at particular times, and at different periods of their growth are peculiarly liable to be affected by specific influences and circumstances. Demosthenes, in the second Olynthiac, finely compares the condition of men and states as more especially illustrated when any defect befalls either. "As in our bodies, when one is in good health, the peculiar flaws in the system do not show themselves; but if any malady comes on them, then they are all stirred up,—fractures, sprains, and whatever else is faulty; so it is with states and sovereigns." As different diseases affect

or are more peculiarly prejudicial to mankind at particular stages of their career; so among states different diseases affect them, and are more peculiarly prejudicial at one time than they are at another. And young states are as little liable to many of the diseases of those at an advanced career, as young children are to gout and other infirmities of old-age. Moreover, both nations and individuals during their youth are regulated by the simplest rules of conduct, as both their concerns and property are of the simplest kind, gradually becoming more complex and important as those who are interested about them advance in age. The petty quarrels of youthful states are also similar to those of children, occurring frequently, resulting in but little, and being soon forgotten. Both a kingdom and a man arrive at maturity very gradually, and both have their respective eras of rise and prosperity, and highest power, and perfection, and decline; both,—and from somewhat similar causes, from that tendency towards dissolution which is a part of the constitution of all things terrestrial, whether physical or political,—after arriving at their point of perfection, begin to fall into decay, and gradually at length become enfeebled and die. Each nation, moreover, like each man, is distinguished by some particular character or disposition and talents; and the national character of a people is as marked as that of the various individuals composing it, while



both are of essential importance to be studied by those who would legislate for them. In a nation, as well as in an individual, various powers and interests will be found co-existent, each of which will be striving to obtain the ascendancy over the others, and to acquire the supremacy and rule over the whole. If we desired strictly, and to its full length, to carry out the comparison here commenced, of an individual man to a collective state, we might refer to the intellectual faculties of the former as resembling the ruling and judicial powers in the latter, among which the reason should bear the supreme authority, like the administrator of justice in a nation. The moral feelings and dispositions might be compared to the middle class and well ordered portion of society, which possess neither the power of the highest, nor the turbulence and licentiousness of those that are depraved and disaffected, which must always form a considerable portion of every population, and which may be represented by the animal passions and propensities. In imitation of some philosophers, both in ancient and modern times, the metaphor might be yet further followed out, by comparing the brain to the capital of the nation, the nerves to the organs of intelligence and means of communication between different parts, the limbs and natural weapons of defence to the military and naval powers, and the alimentary and other material organs to the commercial bodies of



the kingdom. The muscles, and veins, and arteries, may represent the roads, and rivers, and canals, and the senses and their organs, the ports of the empire.

In a nation as in an individual, a constant rivalry and contention exist between the different powers and interests, where those of the higher order, and of superior intelligence and virtue ought to bear sway, but which are controlled in the exercise of their rule by the lower endowments, while the influence of the middle rank moderates both, and keeps each in its position. In times of anarchy, however, these several influences change place, the lower ruling in the stead of the higher, and the middle either joining with the victorious party or becoming altogether annihilated. In man the various powers, and feelings, and passions, and propensities, each contend together for the supremacy; but though in the exercise of his mental faculties he may be much biased by his animal passions and feelings, yet the former bear sway, and reason presides as the ruling power, supported by the moral endowments of the soul. When however intemperance or passion takes possession of the man, reason is driven from her throne, the animal influences usurp the authority of the intellectual endowments, and conscience and the moral influences are disregarded. In the case therefore both of men and of states, the higher influences ought to

be upheld and bear rule; those of the most cultivated minds and the purest morals should possess the supreme command; while those of depraved habits and ignorant minds, ought not to be allowed to exercise their baneful sway. The restricted influence, however, even of the lower animal impulses, if properly availed of, may be beneficial. The mind, if exerted without any consideration for the requirements of the material frame, would conduce to the disorganization of the whole system, as well as to the injury of each particular part; and in states each legitimate interest may be advantageously used in its proper sphere. Great minds exercise an influence over those which are inferior, and over the mass of mankind, corresponding with that which man exercises over animals. But it is an influence only: the mass remains the same. We tame animals, but they are animals still, and retain all their habits and dispositions as before. So a body of men in a state, are acted on by the authority of the leading minds who address themselves to it. But they are biased only, not changed: the course is not stopped, but merely diverted. As therefore it is not always desirable that even the highest faculties of the mind should bear undisputed sway uninfluenced altogether by the animal impulses; so it is not always expedient in a state, that those of the highest rank, whatever be their attainments or their virtues, should rule without

control. Aristotle observes with characteristic penetration, that "the best commonwealth is that in which middling men most abound." \* And again, "Governments are good and nations happy in proportion to the preponderancy of the middle ranks, and their ability to defy the pride and oppression of the great, as well as to resist the rapacity and malignity of the vulgar." † So an individual who would regulate his conduct most discreetly, would be ruled not exclusively by the direction of his highest faculties only, but by the aid of his middle-rate endowments and moral powers. On the other hand, as no body can be sound when the head or any vital member is violently affected or subject to disease; so no state can be in a healthy condition when its rulers or governing bodies are depraved, or weak, or disordered. The people, too, are very apt to copy the vices and even the failings of their superiors, or at any rate to palliate their own by reference to those of the great.

The changes in condition both of men and of states forms another striking coincidence between them; and on this point Aristotle, in the work already quoted from, observes, "In moral and intellectual endowments, one man is scarcely ever more different from another, than the same man is different from himself at different periods of his life." ‡

\* Politics, book vi.

† Ibid., book vii.

‡ Ibid., book iv.



A nation, like an individual, may also possess property and territories of its own; may have both other states and individuals subservient to and dependent upon it, and may form treaties with or wage war against them. In each of these instances we may see how much more important is progress in civilization than mere physical strength; and what real power it confers alike on men and on states, over those who are inferior to them in this respect; how great a difference also is produced in both by intellectual and moral culture.

Thus, from the study of human nature do we learn an important lesson both in politics and in civilization, and have afforded to us an illustration how intimately connected together those important studies are, and ever ought to be. Nations and men are, therefore, influenced and ruled by the same means, and according to the same grand principles,—a consideration which it is ever of consequence to bear fully in mind. But neither men nor nations are primarily ruled by laws. There are doubtless moral causes in their operation far more influential than any laws can be, and of these civilization, in its true and comprehensive sense, embraces all that is most important, most extensive, and most valuable. By these influences, both men and states are not only affected but changed; not merely moved but carried along.

As regards the actual origin of civilization alike

among states and individuals, different opinions have been formed by those who have devoted themselves to this inquiry. Archbishop Whately has maintained that civilization among mankind would never have arisen had not the earlier inhabitants of the earth been taught this by a Divine instructor. But unfortunately for this theory, the early inhabitants supposed to have been so taught were but very partially civilized, which we can hardly suppose would have been the case, and that the Divine purpose for this end, if it existed, would have been allowed to be so very imperfectly accomplished. On the other hand, a very high degree of civilization was ultimately reached by mankind when no such Divine influence is supposed to have been exerted, which renders the Archbishop's theory still more improbable. Nor is it any proof of uncivilized nations not being capacitated to advance in civilization, that we find that in certain arts or pursuits they have not for a long period made any progress, as this may arise from peculiar circumstances quite independent of the general advancement of civilization, such as those particular arts having been brought to the highest perfection which the materials for them admitted, or which the occasions for which they were used were required. Their want of intercourse with other nations, is what is here necessary to promote their civilization. In our own country, although civilization generally is rapidly

advancing, certain arts and pursuits have nevertheless ceased to progress to a higher state of perfection.

Because in some peculiar cases the advancement of a particular art, or of civilization in general, has been produced by intercourse with other nations, therefore some persons have supposed that it must have been so in all cases; and they have been led to deny that, without any exception, either art or civilization could ever have originated in any people spontaneously or by their own invention. Because art in Greece was advanced by the example of art in Egypt, they have concluded that in all nations where art has advanced, its progress must have been owing to the example of some other nations. As in an individual so in a nation, any particular art or science, or other pursuit connected with civilization, may either have been invented by that people, or they may have learnt it from some other people. In most cases, however, probably part is original in the man or in the nation, and part is borrowed from others. The proportion in which either invention or imitation prevails, will be mainly regulated by the character of the particular person, or people.

The main requisites for originating civilization in any nation are, in the first place, that there should be a constant and close intercourse between the people in such a state, whether arising from the



extent of the population, the proximity to each other of its cities, or whatever cause, so that different minds may be both stimulated by competition, and obtain a continual interchange of ideas. Intercourse with foreign nations also conduces to civilization in a corresponding mode. But in addition to all this, it is requisite that the people in a particular nation be in a condition of such security and prosperity as to have leisure from providing for the necessities of the body, to bestow a care on the requisites of the mind. And this intercourse of the people in a state both with one another and with those of foreign nations, forms, as I shall hereafter point out, two of the essential elements of civilization, though but two of them only out of several others.

If it be urged that savages are not only behind other nations in civilization, but that their mental faculties are so feeble in comparison with those of cultivated people, that they are intellectually incapacitated from rising out of their rude state; I would reply, that as their cultivation advances their powers become improved, and as their powers become improved, civilization itself progresses. That which is mainly wanting in their case to advance them in civilization is, however, not power, but stimulus. They have the capacity to move, but they lack the motive to urge them to do so. Their condition furnishes them with all

that they require; and until they require more, they will rest content with that condition.

I have already observed that civilization, although it may not be the original condition of mankind, is in reality far more their natural condition than is one of barbarism. Many of the habits and customs, indeed, of men in an uncivilized state, will, if duly inquired into, be found much more contrary to, and even more at violence with nature than what are either ordinarily or often followed in civilized society, even where the most artificial habits have been pursued. While civilization necessarily introduces many usages which are unnatural, it also ever seeks to restore and to turn into the course of nature those which are shown to be contrary to it, and to be perversions and corruptions of what originally were attempts to follow the dictates and guidance of nature. Reason, moreover, in a state of civilized society, ever exercises her full sway, while in a condition of barbarism she is silent or unheeded.

We have next to consider in what civilization really consists; to define its actual essence, and to point out the true tests by which its existence may be ascertained.

Civilization does not consist in the "perfecting of civil life;"\* as this may be effected, at any rate to a very large extent, especially as regards the

\* Guizot: History of Civilization.

social condition of a people, when civilization has made but little progress among them. Nor does it consist in "progress;"\* as both nations and individuals, although in a progressive state, may be either in a very advanced or a very low condition as regards their civilization, according to other circumstances. Progress, indeed, may exist among a people in a very barbarous state, while it may not be observable among those in a high condition of civilization. Nay, it is necessarily wanting in those who have attained the highest point. Civilization does not, moreover, consist in luxury, as this, so far from being its consummation, is but the forerunner of its decay. Nor is it even an artificial state; as it is in reality the true, and legitimate, and natural condition of intelligent beings.

Civilization is also said to consist in part in the relinquishment of barbarous pursuits, such as war, hunting, and migrating from place to place. I must, however, contend that it is not the relinquishment of these habits that constitutes, or even contributes to civilization; nor are those habits actually and necessarily inconsistent with it. Civilization, nevertheless, causes a change in these habits, and renders what before was barbarous both in its nature and tendency, far less so, and to a certain extent even refining and elevating.

By what therefore is civilization constituted?

\* Guizot: History of Civilization.



Civilization in the individual, immediately results from and is directly caused by the due cultivation, development, and exaltation of the intellectual and moral faculties and powers, so as not only to bring them fully to maturity and into complete action, but also to enable them to acquire a proper and efficient control over the animal feelings and influences. And in a state, civilization results from, and is caused in a corresponding manner, by the due exaltation of those higher influences, such as talent and virtue, which ought ever to be predominant in it, and to be the characteristic qualities both of the individuals and the institutions which bear sway, so as not only to render these noble principles the most important in the state, but also to enable them to acquire a due and entire ascendancy over the influences of vice, and ignorance, and corruption, as well as over such portion of the people as are liable to be swayed by any of these pernicious influences.

The first ingredient, therefore, which is essential to constitute civilization, whether in an individual or in a nation, is the possession of knowledge, both as regards general information and the acquaintance with particular practical pursuits, and sciences, and arts. Without this, civilization cannot subsist. Knowledge, nevertheless, does not of itself constitute civilization, but is only an incipient step in that direction. The next essential ingredient in

civilization, either in a man or in a state, after the possession of knowledge, appears to be the possession of a certain degree of moral and social refinement, by which the mind of each person in the nation becomes softened and elevated, and the whole community are united together in one bond of mutual alliance and friendship, the rupture of which is directly inimical to civilization. Various other causes and agencies spring out of these, the operation of which together contribute to constitute a complete condition of civilization; the ultimate result of the whole, both in the man and in the state, being that the higher endowments and influences obtain the ascendancy, while those of a lower grade and class become subjugated to them.

In order to render civilization perfect, a refinement and purification should also be effected, not only in the general manners and habits, but also in the tastes and intellectual pursuits in which the people both individually and collectively are wont to indulge, and for promoting which, as will be seen, a separate element is here provided.\*

It is essential, moreover, that civilization should be generally diffused throughout the nation, and not confined to some particular districts or individuals. In most nations there are some persons who are more or less civilized, even while the mass remains rude and uncultivated. But it is the wide

\* Element 4.

spread of civilization throughout the state, that alone constitutes a condition of this kind. Not only, indeed, should civilization be diffused through all the different districts of the nation, but among all classes also must its influence be extended, and with as great an equality as can be effected.

Nevertheless, it is not absolutely essential for the establishment of a high degree of civilization either in an individual or in a nation, that a condition of perfect morality or freedom from crime in general should exist; and, indeed, it cannot be denied that civilization is sometimes found both in men and states coexistent with a considerable amount of crime. There are, however, certain crimes, more especially those of violence and disorder, wholly inconsistent with a high condition of civilization; and the natural and legitimate tendency of civilization is to extinguish crime, and to enfeeble the influences which tend to its production.

It is not correct to divide civilization as regards its essence into that which is material and that which is immaterial, as in many cases while its essence is absolutely material, its medium may be as entirely immaterial, and *vice versâ*. So, in the case of sculpture, while the medium of this art is in all respects material, the essence of the art, in which consist its intellectual excellence and tasteful merit, is as completely immaterial.

The elementary principles of civilization, by



which both its promotion and its progress are regulated, may be comprehended in the four following classes:—1. Mental. 2. Moral. 3. Legal. 4. Local.

1. Under the first of these classes, are comprehended those of the elements of civilization contained in Numbers I., III., IV., V., VI., and VII. of the following sections, which relate to the cultivation of the national mind, the affording opportunities for intellectual improvement and refinement throughout the nation, allowing full liberty for exercising these high privileges, and the offering encouragement to those who use them aright; each of which will be fully discussed under the sections appropriated to them.

2. The second of the above classes includes Numbers I., II., III., V., and VIII. of the following sections, which relate to the moral and religious education of the national mind, the means to be adopted for effecting this freely, and with proper regulations, as is there pointed out.

3. Under the head of Legal Elements, are comprehended those cases where legislative interference appears requisite to aid in carrying out the principles to be established, and which are discussed under Sections V. and VIII.

4. The topics embraced under the head of Local Elements, though treated on in Sections IX. and X., require some consideration while discussing the

general subject of civilization, more especially as many of the causes there adverted to are such as do not admit, like the other influences here commented on, of being altered or modified according to the circumstances of the particular case, or the desire of those who have to deal with them.

A person taking up a map of the world who was ignorant of its history, would be almost spontaneously led to infer that Asia is that portion where population would at first be most abundant, and where civilization would primarily dawn; and which he might conclude from its central situation and accessibility from other countries. Europe, he might suppose, would be from its climate naturally very favourable to civilization, and Greece peculiarly so from its situation, being accessible both by sea and land from so many points, and of so salubrious a climate. Italy, also, from the same causes, would naturally be expected early to reach a high point in civilization, and to which, moreover, the moderate dimensions of these countries would much conduce. Britain, from its insular position, and owing to its being so distant from the latter countries, would not be likely to be visited by or populated from them for a considerable time, and might, therefore, be expected to remain for a long period in a state of barbarism. It might, however, be inferred that when once civilization was planted there, it would probably soon take root, and flourish with vigour.

To her local or geographical position, Great Britain indeed owes much as regards her progress in civilization, especially in relation to the four following points:—

I. Being an island it is accessible, and yet defensible on all sides, having thus the advantage of both facility of communication with foreign parts, and at the same time of security against foreign attack. From the insular position of this country, we are not only more free from invasion than are countries which form a part of the Continent, but from this circumstance the limits of our inland territory are distinctly and finally settled, and we are consequently exempt from aggressions by and disputes with foreign countries respecting such matters, which with many nations is the source of so much and such constant contention. Another result of our insular position, which may not however influence civilization, is that from our having much less general intercourse with the surrounding nations than is carried on by continental countries, the purity of the race is preserved for a much longer period. The British nation do not intermix and intermarry with foreigners as do the people of France, and Germany, and Hungary. It has also been remarked,\* that a further great advantage arising out of our insular position and character, is that our social institutions have formed themselves out of our proper

\* Coleridge : Constitution of Church and State.



needs and interests. Peninsulas, such as Greece and Italy, are, next to islands, most favourable for civilization from the above causes. Large continents, like Africa, especially if not intersected by rivers or seas, are the least favourable for civilization. Insular position may, indeed, in some cases be unfavourable to civilization, as impeding that freedom of intercourse with other countries which is highly conducive to it. In the case of Great Britain this has, however, been counteracted by the following circumstances:—1. Our extensive commerce leads to much foreign intercourse, and occasions our both constantly visiting foreign countries and receiving visits from the inhabitants of those parts. By this means we are also to some extent influenced by their customs and laws, and become acquainted with their opinions and mode of life, instead of living entirely to ourselves. 2. Our great naval force promotes this intercourse yet further, and obtains for us a communication with nations both far and near, and of every variety. 3. Our extensive colonial possessions occasion also a constant and a close intercourse with several foreign countries, and exercise, in a variety of ways, an extensive influence on the mother-country.

II. The size of this country is another point from which it derives essential advantages, being extensive enough to constitute a kingdom able to maintain itself, both as regards its forces for protec-

tion and its natural resources ; while, on the other hand, it is not so large as to be incapable of being ruled or superintended by one government ; nor are any of its parts so distant from the centre, or metropolitan district, as to be difficult of access ; nor is the sea so remote from any portion of the British isles as not to be in some way available to the inhabitants of that district ; while the greater part of the country is near the coast. The large extent of coast, for which Greece was so peculiarly distinguished, conduces to the promotion of navigation, which in its turn encourages many other pursuits tending to civilization. Opportunities for navigation to different parts of it are also afforded by the numerous rivers which flow through our island.

III. The situation of Great Britain as regards its proximity to the continent of Europe, and to the most civilized nations there, is another matter of great importance. Its position in this respect is peculiarly advantageous ; for while it is distant enough from the Continent to be secure from any unexpected annoyance from that quarter, it is near enough for all the purposes of communication ; and at one point, indeed, which admits of being effectually guarded, from the nature of the spot, a direct and easy access to the Continent is opened. The geographical position of the territory of the Jews was immediately conducive to their civilization, being such as to afford intercourse with all those

nations of the world who, from their locality, might be expected to be the most civilized.

There is also another point of essential importance connected with our local position, which deserves here to be noted. It is that of the union into one kingdom of three nations, consisting of distinct and very different races of people, though their natural territories near adjoin. Varying as these people do in character, and pursuits, and turn of mind, an important influence is produced as regards the promotion of civilization, by each calling forth the energies of the other, and by which the natural defects of each may be in some measure counteracted. Their very differences in race, temperament, habits, and religion, are thus rendered beneficial in serving to develope the minds and feelings of various persons. New opinions are thus originated by each, while they are modified by all. This conjunction of different elements is essentially characteristic of the British mind; and we see it still further carried out in the constitution of the British government, where three different estates co-exist together, rivalling and occasionally competing with each other, but always tending to call forth the energies of the opponent. To this also rival parties and sects no less essentially contribute, while rival professions, and even individuals, promote the same end; and thus opposition becomes the parent of progression. This circumstance has



probably an important influence in securing that freedom of opinion and discussion, which to so large an extent is established in this kingdom.

IV. The mild and salubrious climate of this country, is another point of great importance as conducive to its progress in civilization. It is at all times moderate, and yet not the same in different parts; favourable for both animal productions and those of the soil, and for these in great variety. Added to this the weather is temperate, the soil fertile, and the ground, without being mountainous, is sufficiently undulated for all purposes of commerce and cultivation, and which also ensures its being well watered. The natural productions of the soil are moreover of great practical utility.

Climate, indeed, in numerous ways, and both directly and indirectly, exercises a vast influence over the animal, moral, and intellectual condition of a people. The influence of climate upon national character varies, of course, greatly according to its quality, some climates being invigorating, others relaxing, and producing accordingly corresponding dispositions, and also certain mental and moral qualities and endowments. Climate also variously affects the sensibility of the frame, and the strength of the passions. Temperate climates are the most favourable to civilization, as developing the higher qualities, and not invigorating the baser feelings.

Varieties of climate in the same country are also in many respects favourable to civilization. The health, manners, pursuits, morals, and several occupations and enterprises of the inhabitants of a country, are all more or less affected by climate. And to each race a particular climate seems specially adapted.\* Both men and animals are wont to degenerate when transplanted to a foreign soil, whose climate and nature differ from that which gave them birth. Even certain of the laws for the regulation of a state may originate in the condition of its climate, as those for repressing luxury, which is more apt to affect nations of a relaxing and warm climate, than those where the air is cold and invigorating.

Many of the diseases, moreover, to which a people are liable, and the constitutional diseases to which states are subject, are more or less traceable to climate. The form and manner of constructing the common habitations of the people, and their mode of dress, both which so largely influence their manners and customs, must also greatly depend on the climate of their country. On this also mainly depends the natural food which any country produces, whether animal or vegetable; and

\* The clear air of Attica, refreshed and purified by constant breezes, is celebrated as one of the chief advantages of its climate, and is described by Euripides as lending a charm to the productions of the Athenian intellect.—*Müller's Literature of Ancient Greece*, 227.

which in its turn, both as regards the manner of procuring it, as by hunting, fishing, or cultivating the soil, and the physical effect of it as food, extensively influences the character of the inhabitants of any nation, and that whether such food be solid or liquid. On the other hand, where a country which has but a scanty supply of natural food, is so placed that a constant supply of foreign food may be obtained; influences of different kinds will be produced through this circumstance, both by the food itself and by the intercourse thus opened with foreigners.

Nevertheless, the influence of climate, and even that of race, must not be allowed to be so overpowering as might be supposed; but correspondingly with the several elements of civilization, ought each to be regarded as merely one out of many that proportionally contribute to produce a particular result. This is at once obvious from the circumstance that the races who continue for ages to inhabit particular localities, widely vary during different periods of their history, in nearly every characteristic quality and pursuit that serves to distinguish a particular people, and one race from another. Thus, how extensively and in all respects different are the people of Greece and Rome in our day from what they were during the era of their greatness and their glory! And the Britons and Gauls of this age are equally dissimilar to the



ruce races which existed when Greece and Rome were at the height of their renown and power.

Each separate nation appears to possess, as already observed, a character as marked and independent as that which belongs to particular individuals. And as in the case of individuals so in that of states, the course of conduct that is generally pursued by them will be for the most part in strict accordance with that character. The most forcible illustrations of this fact are afforded in those instances where the same object has occupied the attention of each, such as learning or religion, which seems fully to develop the peculiar genius or disposition of a particular people. A striking example of what is here asserted, is supplied by the histories of Germany, Italy, France, Spain, Holland, and Great Britain; and not least by that of individual districts in this country. How marked is the character of the Chinese! and their conduct in accordance with it. Individuality of character is, moreover, observable as much in the decline as in the prosperity both of states and of men; and in the case of both, the particular language or idiom used is highly characteristic. Nevertheless it will in each instance be apt to develop itself in a very different manner according to circumstances.

Men of different nations differ, moreover, one from another as much morally and physically as they do mentally. And on each of these indi-

viduals, the different causes that influence national character more or less operate, in conjunction with the original natural constitution by which these different people were characterized.

It is, nevertheless, a point of some difficulty to determine on what the character of nations mainly depends. It is not wholly owing to climate, as, while this remains unchanged, the character of the people may become entirely altered from particular circumstances. Nor is it altogether owing to the races of the people who constitute it, as these are often so commingled, that no distinct feature in them can be traced; besides which, these change on being transplanted to a fresh country. Races, indeed, have an individual character, but this they owe to climate, the nature of the country from which they sprang, education, habits, and a variety of circumstances; and if these are changed, the particular character of the races in a few generations becomes also changed, independently even of their intermixture with one another; besides which, the character of a people often appears to alter from circumstances which are not ascertained. Indeed, people of different races differ not more from one another in all essential particulars, than do people of the same race, and even those of different families in the same town, or, it may be, those of the same family. Variety in capacity, turn of mind, disposition, habits, and feelings, is what constitutes

the main distinction between different persons ; and in these respects the difference is as great between people of the same race, as between those of different races and countries.

As regards two subjects more especially, it is peculiarly interesting to trace out the development of the national character, which is often displayed at a very early period of a nation's history, but which does not generally become fully manifested until civilization has attained a high degree of perfection. The bud is seen as soon as the shoot rears its head above the soil ; but the flower does not bloom until the plant has reached a considerable height. I allude to the early characteristic traits which each nation exhibits in the infancy of its history, and to the development of the formation and growth of the different civil institutions which serve no less than the former to mark its particular genius. As regards the manifestations of national character, the courage, the generosity, the independence, the spirit, the ingenuity, and, I must add, the superstition, too, which were displayed by our rude forefathers, may have constituted the germ of the nobler, or, rather, more perfect qualities of the same kind which at this day characterize the inhabitants of this country. The same spirit of commercial enterprise which animates us now, was also a marked feature in the ancient Britons ; and the habit of travelling about, and of wandering abroad to explore new countries,



for which Englishmen are so remarkable, we may have derived from the predatory Saxons and Danes, whose blood was mingled with that of the primitive people of this country. In many nations in whose character there are very marked features, it is curious and interesting to trace to how large an extent the future history of the country accords with the early exhibition of that character.

With respect to the civil institutions of this kingdom, many of those which are not only now in use, but the most highly prized among us, had not merely their type at an early epoch in our history, but the germ of these institutions was then fully developed. I may especially refer to that boasted institution, so conducive to the liberty of this country, and which sprang from that ardent love of freedom so peculiarly characteristic of the people of this land at every period of their career, the trial by jury. The holding of free Parliaments was also an institution of our Saxon ancestors; and even the mode of conveying property, and the principles for its regulation, were very similar to those now recognized, and formed, indeed, their foundation. It is interesting moreover to observe the care taken in the judicial proceedings carried on in these rude times, to promote the investigation of truth, the anxiety with which it was sought out, and the skill with which they directed the measures devised for its discovery. On the whole, we may, I think, not

unreasonably infer that the ultimate effect of the mixture of different races in our own nation has probably been, in many important respects, to correct the characteristic defects, and to develop the characteristic virtues peculiar to each ; and that the rivalry of different institutions borrowed originally from various nations, has, in a corresponding manner, tended to improve and perfect each other.

Considering all these circumstances one with another, the character of a nation appears to me to depend in part on the climate of the country where it is situate, in part on the geographical structure and position of its territory, in part on the natural productions of the latter, and in part on the character of the surrounding nations. According as any of these change, the character of the people changes with it, and it is affected by each modification of any of these causes. In addition to this, there is probably some peculiar original characteristic belonging to each race of people, corresponding with what each individual exhibits, which is independent of these causes for its origination, but is nevertheless liable to be extensively modified by their influence. The most striking original natural qualities of a people, as serving to mark their national character, are intelligence, activity, energy, and the peculiar proneness to certain habits and pursuits. These are the primary elements of national character, but they admit of variety in every possible mode of combination.

Events in their career affect the character of a nation, in a manner corresponding with that in which they do the character of an individual. They do not so much alter as influence, not so much divert as develop certain talents or propensities in each, though their result may be both as extensive and as lasting as the endowment with original traits. These causes of different kinds have, moreover, a reciprocal influence on each other. Thus, original individual character has its influence on each of these changes, and each of these changes influences original character. They affect, too, the mode in which the change operates, and give a bias to each diversion that it pursues in its course. But while changes in the circumstances of a country produced by civilization occasion a change in the character of the people corresponding with it; yet the original characteristics of each nation are not affected by this fact, and remain ever unaltered, as we see strikingly exemplified in the case of the Jews. Moreover, the changes which take place in the character of nations at different periods of their growth, nearly correspond with those which occur in the case of individuals. Thus, England was, in every respect, as regards external character and manners, very different at the Conquest, at the time of Henry V., Henry VIII., Queen Elizabeth, Queen Mary, Queen Anne, and Queen Victoria. Her internal original



character was nevertheless precisely the same at each of these periods. As in the case of an individual, so in that of a nation, the leading natural traits will ever remain the same; but events in the career and the progress of civilization will so affect her whole character as completely to change her external and perceptible, if not her internal and essential nature. Perhaps, indeed, the best exemplification of the mode and of the extent to which the characters of nations change during the course of their career, is afforded by the animal creation, in which we see different kinds of animals much affected by change of climate, and habit, and food, but at the same time retaining all the distinctive characteristics and marks of their original nature and species. So both nations and persons, however affected and even changed by climate and custom, still exhibit the characteristic traits which first distinguished them.

To how remarkable an extent nations may retain the leading features which distinguish their character through all the changes which circumstances cause in them, is exemplified in the case of the Jews, who have probably been more powerfully operated upon by events than has been the lot of any other nation, more especially in the fact that though possessing a peculiar attachment to their own country, they have, from necessity, been constantly obliged to be denizens in foreign states.

This people has also served to illustrate how early the individual character belonging to a nation, which adheres to it throughout its career, is displayed, correspondingly with the case of an individual, and the extensive result in the case of both produced by early influences. Thus, the germ of their national avarice was evinced in the children of Israel selling their brother Joseph into Egypt; and their early wanderings in the wilderness, seem to have had an influence in producing that restless disposition for which they are still distinguished. The people, too, of the United States of America, still retain much of the original character for which their ancestors, the first settlers there, were remarkable. Both on an individual and on a nation, civilization effects a greater change than is ever caused by any variety of races. In each particular country of Europe, the original races are, moreover, now too much intermixed to admit of any individual character being very clearly discernible. The distinction which is attributed to race, often, in reality, arises from education, or habit, or local position. Where however the race is kept pure, and does not mingle with others, as in the case of the Jews, all its distinct features and peculiarities are at once perceptible. Probably language, and also accent, serve as long as any other circumstances to perpetuate the distinction between original races.

The use of letters, or rather the manner of using them, is what mainly distinguishes civilized from barbarous people; the variety of tongues spoken exhibits the distinction between those of different races; and the various idioms and terms made use of in the same language, distinguish people of different characters among the same race. Letters indeed form a kind of intellectual coinage for the interchange of thoughts between different minds, and from the nature of the currency in use we may judge somewhat as to the traffic carried on. The language spoken by any nation, has a vast influence upon its advancement in civilization, especially as regards the facility of it for holding intercourse with other countries around it, and also with respect to its capacity for conveying ideas of terms in science or art, or for being the vehicle of those great works in literature which contribute alike to the improvement of the people, and the glory of the nation in which they sprang. The language of this country, from its being derived so extensively from that of nations who were peculiarly celebrated for the purity, grace, and power of their mode of speech, from its very mixed character, and from its extensive adaptation to modern requirements, in all these respects possesses important advantages. It is moreover to a singular extent representative, or rather reflective, of the character of the people; particularly as regards the great varieties of



racés which are intermixed and blended into one, the opposite qualities which are by this means brought together, and the new productions of each kind which are the ultimate result of this amalgamation.

Language, as is the case with each of the arts, appears to reflect, as it were, the feeling, and tone of thought, and manners of a people; and in its turn influences each of these to a certain extent. Indeed, there is a mutual reciprocal influence between the two. Language must always more or less necessarily direct, and may either extend or limit the expression of ideas; while the expression of ideas in its turn, on the other hand, in a corresponding manner influences language. Language may therefore be regarded as not only the vehicle, but the reflection of thought. And it is the sole medium of communication both of thought and feeling from one man to another, and also between bodies of persons. Hence is derived the influence of language not merely on individuals but on nations.

Closely connected with, and indeed a branch of the subject of language, is the application and use of epithets, by which certain actions have a particular and indelible moral character of one sort or other affixed to them, and never cease to be so regarded. This is a matter which may exercise extensive influence over the feeling, and even over the con-

duct of a nation, and as such is calculated to produce an important result in regard to its civilization. An epithet is, indeed, sometimes so pregnant with ideas that, directly it is uttered, like a bomb thrown into a besieged town, the ideas fly out with the greatest force, and enter the mind of the person to whom it is addressed. To select these words properly, and to use them in the right place, is the province of eloquence, which constitutes as it were the artillery of the soul, of which words are the martial implements.

Language has moreover a great effect in binding people together, not only socially but intellectually; and it is the means of causing the same sentiments and feelings to arise and to be diffused throughout the nation wherever it is spoken.

In considering the subject of civilization, especially with reference to the nations of old who have been distinguished in this respect, and comparing them with those of our own times, it is essential to bear in mind the vast changes that have been effected in our whole social condition, and more especially as regards their influence on the state of civilization. The grand causes of this revolution are the four magnificent inventions of (1) printing, (2) gunpowder, (3) steam, (4) the compass. Other causes and inventions have also aided collaterally in producing the changes that have been wrought. The first of these inventions affects us principally

as regards our intellectual and moral condition. The second mainly as regards our relation with other countries, and in totally changing the art of war. The third and fourth have produced an effect both as regards our intercourse with other countries and with different parts of our own, whereby our social condition is changed. The first has tended to equalize the distribution of knowledge ; the second the power of arms; the third and fourth the advantages of local position. Out of these have sprung innumerable other changes, which would necessarily be produced by such a revolution and disorganization as would be thus occasioned ; and yet we still go on framing laws and rules of conduct exactly in accordance with the circumstances existent and the principles adopted ages ago, as though none of these mighty changes had been wrought ; and in many important respects we are even now acting as though neither printing, nor gunpowder, nor steam, nor the compass had ever been discovered.

The following appear to be the principal alterations and revolutions effected by these inventions, and comprise the operations resulting from them :—

1. By the discovery of printing, books became generally diffused, instead of being confined to a few, and deposited only in colleges or cities. Newspapers are circulated among all classes, and almost take the place of lectures and orations. All ranks have nearly equal opportunities for acquiring know-



ledge and cultivation ; and laws and political measures are discussed by all, instead of being tacitly obeyed, or their consideration limited to a very small class.

2. By the invention of gunpowder, all nations are rendered more nearly equal as regards their martial power and resources than they were before. Advantages of position, and castles, and fortifications, are of but little value. The whole art of war has by this means been changed, and many of the institutions and social relations originally connected with it, have been rendered altogether obsolete.

3. By the invention of steam, distance between different countries, and between different parts of the same country, has been, for all practical purposes, immensely lessened, and each country, for all the essential ends of government, greatly reduced in dimensions. Man is no longer dependent on the condition of the elements as regards his locomotion ; and, by the same means, mechanical power of a much greater force is substituted for animal and manual labour, which both increases the extent of our operations, and renders the manufacturer less dependent on the assistance of other hands.

4. By the discovery of the compass, an infallible guide is afforded for the traverse of the whole world throughout, independent of natural observances, so that in all seasons and weathers alike the work of

navigation may proceed ; and thus a social compact is established, which includes in its mighty bonds every nation on the face of the earth.

Another grand invention, which in its consequences—indirect, at any rate, if not direct—may be regarded as almost equally important with those already enumerated, is that of the telescope. In peace and in war, and to science also, the aids conferred by this discovery can hardly be over-estimated. The microscope, which is indeed but a branch of the same invention, has also contributed extensively to the advancement of science.

Yet with all these grand discoveries, and the undoubted vastness of their results, a great many things remain the same as before, and have made but trifling, perhaps, no progress, for centuries, or indeed since the time of the ancients. It may be questioned whether even in the science of medicine, any substantial and radical improvement has been effected ; while the metaphysical sciences, and those of morals and pure mathematics, have scarcely, if at all, advanced. The fine arts of each kind have receded rather than progressed. Travelling and navigation have not been invented, but have only been improved and extended since the discovery of steam and of the compass. As regards war, the method of carrying it on is that only which has been changed ; it still exists the same in all its most important features and events. With respect

to the diffusion of knowledge by means of printing, perhaps Aristotle had as much real information as any one of the moderns, and he was here but a sample of his contemporaries. From all these grand discoveries, indeed, there appear to emanate no absolutely new elements of civilization; modifications only and recombinations of old elements are effected. Railways have not so far exceeded the rapidity of coaches as to produce any material change from their establishment, nor steamboats that of sailing vessels. Nor were the galley-boats with which Cæsar invaded Britain, more at the mercy of the elements than are modern steamboats of the present day. In many cases, indeed, the main result of one new discovery, or the development of a new element or principle in any science, is to counteract that of some other; and this is essentially so in the science of civilization. Thus, the compass and steam, by bringing distant countries nearer together, as they practically do, counteract the effects of redundancy of population, and prevent any particular country from concentrating itself into one great city, by diffusing its population, whenever they become too dense, over the face of the earth.

The effect produced on the world by these discoveries, is probably analogous in the main to what would be wrought in an individual by the attempt to supply the loss of, or a defect in some natural organ by artificial means, which may in some cases



more than compensate for the natural loss, while new independent powers are conferred and effects produced which were not calculated on. Many of these grand discoveries have but corrected existing wants, or little more than adequately supplied the place of acquirements which they superseded. Thus, railways supplied the place of coaches; gunpowder that of archery; printing that of copyists; the compass that of the observation of the planets as nautical guides.

But, perhaps, we somewhat overrate both the greatness and the importance of the discoveries made, while we at the same time underrate the powers possessed by the ancients in comparison with those of the moderns. Vast, indeed, and astonishing, if we fairly examine them, were the operations effected in days of old, ere steam had displayed its stupendous powers, or the thunders of gunpowder had roared over the plains. By the ancients, deep mines were sunk, the pyramids were upraised, exceeding in the greatness of their operations our longest railways; castles and cathedrals, which excite our astonishment, were erected; grand inventions in science of amazing variety were effected; and we seldom discover a new country, or penetrate further into the recesses of old ones, but we are startled by finding that the ancients have been there before us, and were not only familiar with what we so pride ourselves on having

first explored, but have left monuments there of their skill and their power. And all this was accomplished by them without the aids from science which we receive.

Not only, however, the extent as regards their result, but also the very effect of modern discoveries, may be overrated. So far, as we are sometimes told, from gunpowder having prevented war, the most sanguinary and the most keenly-contested battles have occurred since its discovery. And it was, indeed, long posterior to the invention of printing, that the representative system in government, which, some assure us, it has rendered practically obsolete, has been reconstructed and perfected in different countries. So far, moreover, from printing having rendered unnecessary the delivery of lectures, and sermons, and orations; this is peculiarly the age in which they appear to flourish. Before steam was applied, the remotest shores of the globe were familiar to our sails; intercourse had been established with each nation under heaven; and distant colonies planted in every part of the world: and much of this was done even before the compass was invented.

It is not, indeed, the knowledge, but the mode of applying discoveries of this grand nature, that promotes the advancement of any nation in civilization. The principles of all or most of the foregoing discoveries were more or less known to other nations long before we became acquainted with

them; and the Chinese are said to have possessed a knowledge of printing, of gunpowder, and of the magnetic needle, centuries before we did. They failed, however, to cultivate these advantages, which thus became comparatively lost to them.

Probably the most important event in modern times tending to the progress and to the perfection of civilization, is the establishment of Christianity. Religion, in general, has ever been favourable to, and, as I shall hereafter show, its influence is an important element in civilization, being the friend of order and good government, and tending to ennoble and refine those who are regulated by it. But the Christian religion is in a variety of ways eminently conducive to civilization, from the purity of its precepts, the intellectual nature of its instructions, the high tone of its morals, and the noble and sublime nature of its scheme as a whole. Eminently, indeed, as has been observed by distinguished writers on this subject,\* was Christianity adapted to complete what the enlightened influence of Greece and Rome had commenced in the career of civilization. Its institutions are also highly conducive to civilization, among which the establishment of the Sabbath, and of a visible Church, open to all nations alike, may be especially mentioned, and exhibit the extent to which the essential elements of civilization are blended in its theory.

\* Dr. Arnold, M. Guizot, Dr. Temple.



Throughout the sacred volume, exhortations applicable both to individuals and to states, in favour of intellectual and moral culture, are to be found; and the attainment of knowledge, the punishment of error, and the exaltation of the higher influences both in men and states, over the lower, are repeatedly enjoined; while the right exercise of reason with candour and care is made a positive duty.

Nor less by its precepts does Christianity exert itself to oppose the corruptions of civilization, through the warnings that it repeatedly gives against those vices, and those indulgences, which both in men and states conduce to its decline. And it may in truth be said that as with regard to individuals, "reason is the glory of human nature,"\* so with regard to nations, Christianity is the perfection of civilization.

During the Middle Ages, chivalry no doubt contributed largely to the progress and the establishment of civilization. Nevertheless, chivalry can have no claim to be considered as either essential to, or as a distinct element of civilization; but, on the other hand, in the constitution of chivalry, many of the elements of civilization will be found united, more especially so far as chivalry promoted art, and to some extent education, and moral jurisprudence, as also intercourse both foreign and domestic, each of which I have considered as elements

\* Watts.

of civilization. The age of chivalry, which was a very imperfect one of civilization, has, however, now, and for ever passed away; and the age of civilization, when the latter has attained its highest point, has arrived. The elements of civilization which chivalry contained, remain, though chivalry itself has become obsolete, except so far as it may in some respects be considered to continue to exist in these elements.

Every terrestrial institution, as soon as it has reached its highest condition or climax, begins, however, at once to decline. A stationary position seems not to belong to establishments of this class. Nevertheless, an inquiry into the more immediate causes of the decline and decay of civilization, is not inappropriate here, and is indeed necessary for a complete consideration of the whole system. Among the foremost and most predominant of these causes, luxury must be ranked. As civilization consists essentially in effecting the supremacy of the higher and intellectual and moral powers over the lower and animal impulses; so luxury consists in rendering these nobler endowments of man's being subservient to the cravings and desires of the baser part of it, by inducing the former to minister to their wants. This, indeed, only arises at an advanced stage of society, as during barbarous periods the soft refinements of luxury have hardly been brought to such a degree of excel-

lence as to enable them to exercise any important influence; nor is the intellect of the nation then sufficiently cultivated to apply itself to obtain more than the rude necessities of life. Both in man and in states, at an advanced period of their career, their intellect and their energies are but too often perverted to devise means for pampering the appetites, and are employed not to resist, but to encourage and aid them, by heightening the pleasures and temptations in which they are wont to revel, and thus in the end become subservient to them. Luxury is indeed a disease which affects and debilitates each member of the state alike: the sovereign influence, the nobility, the commercial interests, and the martial power of the state are each degenerated and enfeebled by it. Its effects moreover on a nation and on an individual are in a striking manner correspondingly similar. Luxury is to civilization, what superstition is to real knowledge. Both have a tendency to lead us away from the pursuit of what is pure and solid, to that which is worthless and perishable.

Luxury is probably, both in men and in states, of all vices the most difficult to restrain or repress, although the manner in which this is indulged in must necessarily vary much in different ages of the world, and among different nations, according as the materials for supplying it are afforded.

The further society advances in its progress, the



greater is the inequality in the distribution of wealth, one portion of the people having barely enough for subsistence, while the other portion are surfeited to excess, and indulge in every kind of luxury. In a primitive state of society there is enough for the wants of all, but for their wants only. Luxury and indigence are alike strangers here. As the world progresses, wealth seems, moreover, to undergo a change both as regards its own nature and its tendency to promote civilization. Thus, in earlier times, land and vassals or villeins formed the chief possession of a man of substance: now money and securities are as complete a property as is land; and even knowledge itself is deemed a capital; as, for instance, the acquisition of skill in a profession or art.

The distribution of wealth among the people of a nation, is so far conducive to civilization as it tends to excite to exertion and to enterprise, without which there can be no great progress in civilization, although at the same time it may be allowed that these do not by any means necessarily produce the latter. It must, consequently, follow that the more free and general is this distribution of wealth, and the more accessible it becomes to those of all classes, the greater and more extensive is its influence in favour of civilization. No state, indeed, ever became highly civilized that did not resort to the use of money; and the further it advances in

civilization, the greater are the varieties of money in use, which reflect as it were the different exigencies of the nation with regard to wealth. Nevertheless, neither in nations nor among individuals is the mere possession of wealth any proof of intellectual riches or of advancement in civilization; nor, on the other hand, is the want of it any test of deficiency in this respect. That both individuals and nations may be possessed of enormous wealth, and yet be in a condition of very imperfect civilization, might be exemplified at once by the instances of several Indian native princes, whose treasures are of almost inestimable value, but whose minds are quite rude and untutored, and whose subjects are almost in a state of barbarism.

Doubtless, however, the possession of wealth does afford alike to nations and to individuals great advantages in the acquisition of knowledge, and all the arts of civilization; and the want of it must ever, more or less, retard their progress in both these respects. Athens was, nevertheless, comparatively poor when at the highest point of civilization, and as far below many states in riches as she was superior to them in intellectual wealth. Aristotle, in his *Politics*, observes that "excessive wealth and excessive poverty are equally productive of that restless temper which subverts laws and ruins states."\* While the enjoyment of excessive wealth may in-

\* Book vi.

duce both states and individuals to indulge too much in luxuries; the pressure of poverty will constrain both a person and a state to confine themselves to the mere necessities of life, and will exclude them from participation in many of those refinements and intellectual pleasures which most conduce to civilization.

Though amassing wealth for its own sake, both in men and in states, is inimical to civilization, and is calculated to induce sordid feelings, and to lead to the exaltation of the lower influences over the higher; the acquisition of it and dispensing it in the promotion and patronage of art, and science, and learning, is of course extensively conducive to civilization. Hence wealth, if regarded as an end, is debasing and inimical to civilization; but if regarded only, as it ever ought to be, as merely the means for attaining great and noble objects, it is directly advantageous to it. Indeed, the sordid desire of wealth, for its own sake, is as depraving and demoralizing in a nation as it is in an individual, and as many crimes are committed through avarice as through want, both by men and states. Most true indeed was, and most abundant are the illustrations in support of St. Paul's declaration, that "*the love of money is the root of all evil.*"

As wealth does not of itself produce civilization, so poverty does not necessarily prevent it. Nevertheless, wealth tends, as already pointed out, though



indirectly, to the promotion of civilization by the means that it provides for this purpose; while poverty, for the same reason, tends to barbarism. Nor is this circumstance altered by the fact that not only among individuals, but among communities, and even nations, the richest have sometimes been the rudest, and the poorest the most learned and polite. Perhaps, indeed, civilization conduces as much to prevent poverty, as poverty does to prevent civilization.

In a republican government, the main distinction between individuals arises from the amount of wealth which they possess, which operates in a most unfavourable manner as regards the intellectual and moral tone and civilization of the nation. To the acquisition of riches, the mind and energies of the most able will be therefore in such a state mainly directed. To correct this evil, the distribution of rank and honours, especially when these are instituted as the rewards for talent and virtue, is most efficient and beneficial.

But an opposite evil, both in nations and individuals, to that of covetousness, may sometimes prevail, and is as inimical to civilization as the other. This is a heedless disregard of wealth altogether, by which not only poverty, but debt and all its attendant ill consequences, are occasioned. The immense national debt incurred by this country is productive of a vast variety of evils both direct and

indirect, with regard to which the position of the nation bears a near resemblance to that of an individual thus unhappily circumstanced. The crippled resources of the man, prevent him from the enjoyment of many of those intellectual pleasures and recreations in which it is desirable for him to participate, his physical necessities requiring that all he has to spend be devoted to them. Just so is it in the case of a nation whose resources are crippled and encumbered; the intellectual and moral wants of the people are disregarded amidst the pressure for supplying the physical exigencies of the state; besides which, all articles of refinement are severely taxed, so as to debar any but the wealthier classes from their use. In addition to this, great moral evil is produced by the national example afforded to individuals by the state. Individual profligacy finds an apology in national extravagance. Although men readily follow the example of the state by running into debt, they do not always follow it as regards paying what they owe. The disaffection, moreover, that is occasioned by the taxes necessary to support these burdens, is no slight moral evil. The pernicious effects of war are thus made to extend over the periods of peace. Our needful repose is disturbed by the consequences of what, during our martial turmoil, we engaged in. In Athens, the weight of the public burdens depressed all private fortunes, and reduced many to indigence. Both ex-

ample and experience loudly warn us of the evil of this condition.

There is still, however, one very important consideration which requires to be dwelt upon before bringing the present section to a close, and that is the inquiry how far the subject of civilization is entitled to be regarded in the light of a science. What Aristotle observes of legislation, may equally well be applied to civilization:—"If legislation be a science or an art, must it not partake of the same nature, and follow the same progress with all other arts and sciences, which, being founded on observation, have been reared, extended, and perfected by experiment and reflection? That it does partake of the same progress, civil history affords the most convincing proofs."\*

What, indeed, are the elementary principles essential for the constitution of a science? These may be defined to be as follows:—1. That our knowledge of its nature and essence be certain and absolute. 2. That that knowledge be capable of being practically applied. 3. That the principles to be applied be certain and practical. 4. That, as a whole, it be a matter of practical application as regards its operation. In all these respects, civilization appears entitled to the rank of a science. Our information on the subject is at least as extensive as that on most of the other sciences. And

\* Politics, book ii.



that that information admits of practical application, is matter not only of general history, but of every day's experience. How far the principles for the regulation of the science are capable of being reduced to a certainty and of exact application, it is the main object of the following pages to evince. If in this I prove successful, and demonstrate, moreover, the practical use and pursuit of civilization as a whole; then, comparing civilization with the other sciences, and bearing in mind the real essence and principles of each, we cannot hesitate to class civilization among the sciences, to a rank in which it is moreover pre-eminently entitled, on account of its vast importance and its extensive utility.

Nearly every other practical subject of human pursuit, whether physical or moral as regards the nature of its operation,—Theology, Jurisprudence, Medicine,—has been reduced to a science. Why should not Civilization, which is equally practical in its application, equally certain as regards its principles, and, doubtless, fully as important in its nature as either of the above, with them also take rank as a science?

If, however, civilization be, as is here contended, strictly reducible to a science, and be also capable of practical application, it remains to determine the precise duty of the state as regards the promotion of the civilization of the nation. This duty cor-

responds pretty nearly with that of the wise head of a family, in the superintendence of the intellectual and moral, as well as the physical development and welfare of each of his children. This he should endeavour to direct and supply according to the exigencies of each, the variety of their characters, and the defects which require to be counteracted. A question may, nevertheless, arise, how far the duty of the state extends in the active promotion of civilization, and in what cases it ought to exert itself, whether to originate or to aid different undertakings and institutions connected with civilization, or whether it should be merely their director and superintendent. It seems to me, however, that all that can be legitimately in such cases demanded of the state is, that it assume the general control of the institutions and other elements and means of promoting civilization, but without interfering with their ordinary, proper, and natural operation, which should be left to the guidance of those who are their members and supporters, affording them, however, such legitimate and necessary aid as they may fairly ask for, and as may be required of the state for their maintenance. The duty of the government here, is, in fact, closely analogous to that of the driver of a steam-engine which draws a railway train, and whose business is not to construct or to propel the engine, but only to guide it aright, and to see that it is supplied with proper fuel, and with

the elements requisite for its due operation. So the duty of the state is not arbitrarily to force on or to compel the progress of civilization, but to supply all the necessary means within its power for encouraging its promotion, and for affording it the opportunity for advancement.

Having thus far considered the nature of civilization, and the adaptation of man both as an individual and in his political capacity to be affected by it; we have next to inquire into those leading principles or essential elements, by which its operation and progress are regulated, to which I have already adverted in the foregoing pages, and which may be comprehended under the several divisions contained in the sections which follow.

It is here, however, important to note that certain of the actual constituents of civilization, which are essential for its very existence, are also, on the other hand, no less essential as elements to support and promote its stability and progress. Thus, knowledge is essential to the existence of civilization, and education is no less necessary as an element. So also with regard to religious influence, moral jurisprudence, and intercourse of different kinds, which are equally essential as constituents to form, and as elements to uphold and promote civilization. Nevertheless, there are certain elements which are very efficient to promote civilization, and to render it permanent, which are, however, not at all of



themselves necessary to constitute it, and without which it may exist as completely and as efficiently as though they had never been supplied. Thus, for instance, a nation may be highly civilized in which there are neither national institutions, nor honorary distinctions; and indeed, owing to peculiar circumstances, it may be able entirely to dispense with such aids to civilization. But this militates nothing against the efficiency or the necessity of these elements to secure and promote civilization in certain other cases where by circumstances they are required.

It may be contended, however, that certain or all of the elements here enumerated, are not in reality the causes of civilization, but merely its effects.\* To some extent they may be said to be both the causes and the effects. They spring out of the civilization of a country in the first instance; while, on the other hand, they contribute to, and are essential to complete that civilization.

Independent, indeed, of the elements of civilization, and as the agents through which they operate and produce the results they are calculated to effect, are example, direction, correction, warning, encouragement, and the like; the full benefit, and force, and efficiency of which, the establishment and mutual co-operation of these several elements of civilization alone can secure. In addition to

\* Buckle's History of Civilization, Introd. p. 232.

this, the efforts of those minds of great power, which have been duly cultivated, and which are, moreover, devoted to the intellectual and moral improvement of their fellow-creatures, are the real engines by which the progress of civilization is accelerated, and by which its several elements are acted upon for this purpose. Like the influence of the planets rolling through their orbits in the celestial spheres, by which certain mighty changes in the terrestrial world are, though silently and unseen, ever ordered and controlled; so the sway that is exercised by those sublime souls, directs and urges onward the flowing tide of civilization, which both from them receives the guidance that regulates its course, and reflects on its glowing surface some faint shadow at least of those glorious beings by whom its career is animated.

## THE ELEMENTS WHICH CONTRIBUTE TO THE PROMOTION AND PROGRESS OF CIVILIZATION.

---

### I.—NATIONAL EDUCATION OF THE PEOPLE.

IF, as has already been observed, states, which are composed or made up of individuals, are benefited by civilization, it must be of great consequence to secure this advantage to each individual member of a state, whatever be his condition or pursuit; and it must also be one of the first and most important duties of a state to provide for this, considering that the mental and moral exigencies of its members, as intellectual beings, demand equal care with their physical wants.

What civilization effects for the state, education should do for the individual. The cultivation and exaltation of his intellectual, and moral, and higher powers, and their complete development, so as to give them the entire ascendancy over the gross animal feelings and propensities, should be the result of the latter. As knowledge is the first element in the imparting of education, so education,



by which knowledge is attained, is the first element of civilization. But as knowledge does not of itself constitute education, neither is education the only element of civilization. Education, although not of itself constituting civilization, as many appear erroneously to regard it, forms, nevertheless, as it were, its keystone. It lends its support, and gives stability to all the other elements. While education is the main trunk which nourishes the whole tree, the several other elements of civilization represent the branches, without which neither leaves, nor flowers, nor fruit can be produced ; although, on the other hand, the branches could not be put forth without the trunk. So education is necessary to originate the other elements, and they are essential to perfect education ; while the due promotion and operation of the whole together, result in the complete establishment of civilization.

That education and civilization are very different, even in the case of an individual, is proved by the fact that a man may be very learned and yet at the same time very barbarous, both as regards his manners and his tone of feeling. Even gentility does not necessarily imply civilization, though perhaps it does so more than education alone. But education and gentility combined do not either effect or constitute civilization ; and a man influenced by both, may be very deficient as regards his general character in this respect.

While the object of education is to prepare the individual to exert his powers to the utmost advantage, the object of civilization is to obtain the accomplishment of the very purpose for which the other adapts us. While education is the preparation for, civilization is the actual consummation of the work of refining and extending the intellectual powers. Education teaches us how to learn; civilization is the result of having learnt.

The first of the several elements which contribute to the civilization of a nation, both as regards the direct nature of its influence, and the importance of its results, must consequently be the education of the people of such a nation; education being indeed the first step towards the civilization both of a nation and of an individual. Ignorance and barbarism are as opposite to civilization as darkness is to daylight. The education of the people, and the national provision for this by the state, is therefore not a mere measure of expediency, but is one of real and actually national necessity, if the establishment of civilization in such a country is made a matter of concern.

Education is of three several distinct and independent kinds, which may be severally classed as mental, moral, and manual; or, of the head, of the heart, and of the hand. 1. Mental education, or what is commonly comprehended under the term instruction, consists in imparting knowledge, sto-

ring the mind with ideas, and disciplining and cultivating it so as to adapt it for engaging in intellectual studies and pursuits. 2. Moral education, or that which is comprised in teaching men their duty, consists in the inculcation of correct principles of action, and training the disposition and moral habits. 3. Manual education, or that which consists in teaching the occupation, professional employment, or trade which each person is to follow as his calling in life.

This division of education into different kinds, holds good with regard to persons of each class alike, although the actual quality of the education adapted for the different classes is necessarily very different, corresponding of course, both as respects the knowledge to be conveyed, and the discipline to be instilled, with the duties which each have to discharge. In the case of all, however, the legitimate leading object of education is not so much to store the mind with knowledge, as to cultivate and discipline it, and fit it for the task of imbibing knowledge in future, as also for applying that knowledge advantageously. It is rather the tilling than the sowing of the soil that education effects.

As regards the precise nature of the education which should be imparted, general elementary instruction and discipline and cultivation appear, in the first place, essential, as they are what all per-



sons alike, of whatever class or calling, require, in order to develop their mental powers, to raise them to the rank of intelligent beings, and to prepare them for whatever walk in life they may hereafter seek to engage in. In the next place, such instruction should be given to each individual, as is especially suitable to the particular occupation which he is intending to follow.

Both the quality and the extent of the mental education that each person should receive, must of course mainly depend upon the nature of his pursuits in after-life; and the quality of the manual calling in which he engages, is that by which his mental education must be mainly regulated. For instance, with those whose manual occupation is principally of a laborious or servile kind, not much opportunity for mental cultivation can be afforded. Those, on the other hand, whose manual or professional calling is of a learned nature, may and indeed must necessarily devote a considerable portion of their time to mental education, which with them is in fact the same as that which is manual. Those, however, whose manual pursuits prevent them from obtaining a complete mental education, should aim especially to cultivate those mental pursuits and studies which will be at once both most mentally improving and most practically manually useful. The excessive cultivation of certain branches of mental education which are not of this description,

especially of the kind which are rather ornamental than useful, and which are ordinarily termed accomplishments, to the neglect of those that are solid and valuable, often proves (as already stated)\* a serious bar to the progress both of education and of civilization. To all alike, moral education is, however, equally essential; and it varies little either as to the quality or the extent of it adapted for those of each class. The proper moral education of each, and the due cultivation and training of his dispositions and affections and qualities, is, indeed, of the highest importance both to his happiness and his welfare, and to the comfort and convenience of all those with whom he is connected or associated, who, like himself, are members of a civil society. Incident to this, are also the cultivation and regulation of the manners and habits of the persons instructed, and which are, indeed, both indicative of, and are ever regarded as serving to develope their particular character and disposition. In order, however, to a complete moral education, in addition to the mere inculcation of moral principles,—moral discipline, moral training, and moral trial and experience also should, if possible, be introduced; so that the future pilgrim through the world, who will be beset at every stage by so many moral dangers, may be not only told what weapons to use, but taught the proper use of them,

\* *Vide ante*, Preface.

and qualified and drilled for encounters of this kind. For this end, the ordinary daily habits of practical school social life may to a large extent be made to serve.

So soon as, and provided that each of the before-mentioned essential educational objects are secured, and these initiatory stages are passed, such departments of knowledge may be pursued by each, according as his peculiar taste, and the extent of his leisure will allow.

With respect to the pursuit of particular branches of knowledge, certain of the elements of civilization here specified, provide for and promote this; as, for instance, Element II., Religious Knowledge; Element IV., the Study of Art and Science; Element X., the knowledge of Foreign Languages. Other elements promote and encourage study generally; as Elements III. and VI., by affording leisure for intellectual occupations; Element V. secures freedom for thought and discussion; and Element VII. supplies patrons for the encouragement of art and learning generally. Each element should, moreover, contribute to the aid and support of the other, to extend its influence, and invigorate its operations.

One most important and essential part of, or perhaps, rather adjunct to education, is that which consists in securing for the bodily frame and limbs such an amount of regular and healthy exercise and recreation, as will prevent them from suffering



any injury from the too great attention to mental education ; and in the acquirement of such a habit of physical discipline as will through life be most serviceable and efficient for this purpose.

Education, even that which is intellectual and moral, may be imparted by many other means besides books. Pictures, maps, and lectures, especially the latter when accompanied by experiments, are equally available for this purpose, and for some ends are far more efficient. This however must of course depend upon the particular description of teaching to be inculcated. Variety of mode as well as subject, often adds to the agreeableness of instruction, and its agreeableness to its efficiency.

The leading principle to be observed in education, considered independently as an element of civilization, is that it should be so adapted as both to improve and exalt the minds of the individuals to whom it is applied, and also at the same time to qualify those receiving it for being advantageously influenced by each of the other elements of civilization, or such of them as in the peculiar circumstances of the case may be resorted to ; and that it should enable each person properly to perform the duties allotted to him.

Education, in order to be efficient, should not only be conducted according to the principles, adaptation, and exigencies of human nature as regards our various faculties, and qualities, and require-

ments, intellectual, moral, and physical; but its leading aim should ever be to develope and to bring to perfection the endowments of the person who is being educated; and both by cultivating excellencies and correcting defects, to raise him to the noblest condition at which he is capable of arriving. Education, moreover, with reference to the particular country in which it is carried on, should be so especially framed and adapted as to counteract the errors and remedy the defects, whether intellectual, moral, or social, existent among any people, arising from any peculiarity in the national character, the situation of the country, its climate, the pursuits mainly followed, or those belonging to its system of government. Thus, in a commercial country, an avaricious spirit should as far as possible be counteracted or softened by liberal educational influences. In an inland country, the people should be made acquainted with the geography and history of other countries, which they have but little opportunity of learning by intercourse with them. Where art is naturally followed with avidity, science should be cultivated, as its accompaniment and corrective.

In whatever country or situation any one may be placed, education ought, however, to be conducted on a systematic principle, so as to qualify the man for the highest efforts and duties in life which he may be called upon to fulfil. The edu-

cation of each must, moreover, have regard to others as well as himself; must not merely fit him for mental cultivation as an individual, but must also adapt him for being a useful member of society. As an independent person by himself, and having relation to no other being, it might be sufficient for a man to cultivate only his intellect, or to pursue that branch of education alone which I have classed under the head of mental. As owing allegiance to a superior Being, and also as a member of a social community, and therefore connected with and necessarily more or less dependent upon others, it is however essential that moral education should also receive a due share of his attention.

Two important, and indeed fundamental rules with regard to education, ought ever to be kept in view, but which it is to be feared are entirely neglected in many systems. The first of these is the inculcation, together and in conjunction with mental instruction, of correct and definite principles of conduct in the different courses of life in which the persons educated are likely to be called upon to act. The other is the supplying proper and wholesome food for the intellectual craving which education has called forth, such as suitable libraries for the people would afford. To the neglect of these two *desiderata*, all the evil results of which education has in any case been accused, may be clearly traced.



With regard to the first of these rules, although a doubt may be expressed as to how far among those of the humbler ranks and necessarily laborious occupations, pursuits of the highest mental order can be followed extensively; there can be none as to the great extent to which, and the immense benefit with which moral education and discipline may be there carried out. Indeed, mental cultivation has a tendency to raise the moral character, so far as that thereby low and sensual gratifications lose their attraction. From their being early habituated to the pursuit of virtue and to shun vice, it is alone, however, that the people may be efficiently trained in this course, and sound principles of conduct instilled into their minds. Moreover, by being taught to reason correctly, they are fortified against the fallacies of insidious writers. As an actual preventive to crime, education, if rightly directed, operates very powerfully, and is indeed the only sure protector; and there can be no doubt that it is from not having received a proper and sound moral and religious education, that crime is so prevalent among the poorer classes. Indeed, as regards the difference in this respect between them and persons of the higher and middle ranks, it is not by the absence of want, or the difficulties of escaping detection, that the latter are deterred from the commission of crime. On the contrary, their exigencies are frequently equal to, if not

greater in comparison, and more urgent than those of the poor; and they have more constant and better opportunities of supplying them criminally, without being found out. From the education, however, which they have received, right principles have been instilled into their minds, and they would suffer as much from the consciousness of committing crime of a base and dishonourable nature, as from the fear of discovery. And even in those cases where education may indirectly facilitate the commission of certain crimes, by the skill that it supplies, and may also aid the perpetrator in escaping detection; it has, on the other hand, supplied the means of detecting offences in a variety of ways. It is, moreover, only from the defective nature of the education of any individual, that it becomes in any way conducive to crime. If it be urged that although the higher classes are not addicted to thieving, there are other crimes to which they are as prone as the poor are to pilfering, and which are not opposed to the prejudices instilled by education; this may be regarded as an additional proof of what education may effect, accompanied by a regret that its moral results are not uniformly successful in the restraint of crime of every variety.

With regard to the second of the fundamental axioms which I have laid down as necessary to be observed in framing a complete system of national education,—that a supply should be furnished to

those educated of intellectual and moral food to satisfy the craving which has been called forth ;— it is a great misfortune, and proves a great neglect, that in the present day the poorer classes, when their education is finished, are left entirely to their own discretion, or rather, want of discretion, as to the books they will read ; the art of reading correctly comprises nearly the whole of the education that has been imparted to them ; no effort is made to point out the path which they may follow with the greatest advantage and improvement ; no direction whatever to their future studies is afforded ; but they are launched out into the world without chart or pilot to direct them in their course. As the almost necessary consequence of such a system, they are carried away by the first current into which they float ; they become the easy dupe of the first designing essay fraught with pernicious principles that falls in their way. Many of these works, not only from their nature and the subjects on which they treat, form alluring baits for the inexperienced in such matters ; but from the specious style and the captivating manner in which they are composed, they are especially calculated to arrest the attention and please the fancy of readers of this description, to whose tastes and comprehensions they are so adroitly adapted, contrasting in this respect very favourably with the dry and laborious moral treatises which well-intentioned persons may



have placed in their way, and which are apt to be regarded as the only fit works for the humbler classes to be entrusted with.

It cannot, therefore, be doubted, that people in the latter position are exposed to an evil of a most serious nature, and one which it is all-important to remedy. Two modes only exist of effecting this end. We must either suppress altogether the dissemination of pernicious publications, or supplant them by supplying those of a better tendency. To accomplish the former is impossible, and it would not be a legitimate, even if it were a practical course. The other plan is not only quite legitimate, but may be carried out to the full; and not merely with entire success, but the most beneficial consequences may be anticipated from its adoption.

It is hardly possible, indeed, to over-estimate the importance of supplying to the poorer classes a literature at once attractive in its nature, and combining intellectual instruction with moral improvement. This is a measure worthy of the attention of the greatest philanthropists; and it is a *desideratum* so extensive, that it surely ought to be made a national object. Whether it could not at once be attained by issuing, at the expense of the State, a cheap reprint of works particularly adapted for this purpose, and which might be furnished gratis, or at a very low cost, to all parochial libraries, I would here beg to suggest.

Many of the poor, especially during the long winter evenings, have abundance of leisure at their disposal, which, if it is not well spent, is either wasted in idleness, or passed in profligacy. By acquiring a habit of study, and following the pursuit of useful and entertaining knowledge, both the advantage and the happiness of themselves and their families would be extensively promoted. Moreover, from not being able to enter into the expensive amusements of the rich, they peculiarly stand in need of some recreation of this kind. A sound maxim for the regulation of life was laid down by Locke,—that persons of sedentary occupations ought to adopt active amusements, and those who follow active laborious occupations, amusements of a sedentary nature. In this respect, study suits well with the occupations of the poor, most of whose employments are of a manual character. Equally absurd and noxious is it, to consider the more engaging and attractive branches of literature, such as poetry and the other arts, general history, and romance, as unfitted for and improper for the perusal of the poorer classes; and that those works only which are dull and dry are adapted for their pursuit. From hence it is, that the poor find so little pleasure in the cultivation of their minds. Their only experience of this is in the slavish drudgery of learning to read, and in the dreary, unattractive books which they have had placed be-

fore them. They have no conception whatever of the intense delights which the capacity of reading they have already acquired is capable of conferring upon them, and this is a secret which a large portion of them never discover.

There is, however, another very urgent reason for advocating the general education of the people, quite independent of the essential advantages which it confers on themselves. I allude to the benefits that are thereby derived to the nation itself. The people of this free country, forming an essential branch of the Constitution, and being by law invested with important political privileges, it becomes not only expedient, but essential, that they should be instructed aright in the use of those privileges. By depriving them of the knowledge that would serve them for this purpose, while you thereby abridge not in the least their actual power, you deprive them of the means to exercise it rightly; you surrender them to the influence of those whose only desire is to lead them astray. By placing proper treatises before them, you enable them to teach themselves. And self-instruction, as it is ever received without suspicion, so is it the most influential on the mind of the recipient. It is surely of the very highest importance, in a political point, that the people at large should be early imbued with correct notions respecting the rights and duties of property; and should be taught not only to



reverence and obey the Constitution and the laws of their country, but the reasons also why they are entitled to this homage and this submission.

It may, nevertheless, again be urged, as it formerly used to be, although of late this argument has become much out of fashion, that by educating the lower classes you afford them the readiest means of being led astray. Could we, however, be persuaded that those only who are instructed in the common rudiments of education are rendered liable to be assailed and misled; even this would not be sufficient to justify the withholding from them all the advantages which result from education; and which would be, indeed, detaining them in a state of almost animal imbecility, for the sake of guarding against certain evils for which the inculcation of sound and correct principles is the only sure remedy, and for which the other false and unnatural antidote would prove wholly inefficient. Constituted as our nature is, it is easier to imbibe wrong tenets than those which are right. Most men have, therefore, enough cultivation to enable them to be led astray. The only difficulty is to afford them sufficient teaching to fortify them against fallacy. By the instillation of sound principles, and the storing their minds with knowledge, they would be less liable to be misguided by erroneous doctrines, and would detect the sophistries by which they were sought to be seduced.

Perhaps, indeed, the most perilous condition of all in which a human being can be placed, is when he has been taught to read and write, and is turned out upon the world without any direction how to use his acquirements properly. This is somewhat like starting an express train in full speed upon a railway, but without supplying an engine-driver to direct it. What is the remedy for this emergency? If you stop the train suddenly, you overturn it, and produce at once all the worst consequences that can be caused by the careless act in question. If, however, you can by any means supply an efficient engine-driver to the train, all danger is at once removed. So also in the case of education, it is impossible to quench the little knowledge that has been imparted, or to paralyze the powers that have been called into exercise. The only resort left is to give that knowledge a right direction, and to apply those powers to their proper purpose.

Nor does popular ignorance supply any safeguard whatever against political disaffection or tumults, or serve to prevent the people from uniting in seditious societies, or lawless combinations. On the other hand, it only subjects them the more easily and the more completely to be led away and controlled by some designing demagogues. Does history, indeed, record any single example of the barbarity of a people being adduced as a proof of their loyalty? And I would appeal with confidence to

the experience of all those who may have studied the history of the tumultuous times of this or any other country, whether the danger of popular outbreak is really more to be apprehended among a people who are truly enlightened, possess a correct knowledge of the nature and extent of their rights and duties as citizens, who are fully acquainted with the privileges they enjoy, who have been taught to respect the laws under which they live, and who must, from their superior education, be little liable to be led astray, if not from the soundness of their principles indisposed to be so;—than among a body of people who neither value nor even know the privileges which they own, who are unable to reason aright on any great questions, who misunderstand their position in society, and are under delusions of every variety with respect to their claims and civil duties, possessing, as they do, only so much information as is sufficient to render them liable to be led astray, and whose brutality when excited is restrained neither by reason nor right moral feeling. Are not popular tumults, in the great majority of cases, to be traced to popular ignorance, and to the multitude having been misguided? Has the superior enlightenment of the people ever been suspected to be the cause?

The most plausible argument which has been urged against the extensive education of the lower classes is, that it raises them above their station,



and unfits them for manual labour ; that it, in fact, destroys the proper balance in the state, as regards the influence from superior intelligence which ought to preponderate in the case of the higher classes over the lower. To all this, however, it may be satisfactorily replied, that many of these among the higher classes whose minds are extensively cultivated, engage in arduous manual labour, which affords, indeed, a recreation to their minds ; and that if the mass in general are well educated, those among the poor who are of superior endowments will be but on a level with them, and will be less inclined unduly to over-appreciate their own acquirements, and so also less likely to despise their ordinary and necessary avocations. Indeed, the only legitimate mode to prevent an undue preponderance on the part of the lower classes from their extensive intellectual acquirements, is to increase those of the rich, for which this mental progress of their inferiors would form a very wholesome stimulus ; and who, from their superior advantages and much greater leisure, ought ever to be far in advance in respect of mental cultivation and acquirements. Thus, the education of the poor is not only beneficial to themselves, but contributes also essentially to the intellectual progress of the rich.

So far, however, from any among the poorer classes being led, on account of their improved education, to endeavour to exalt themselves unduly

above their superiors, and to obtain situations and positions to which they have no legitimate claim ; they would then be taught that such high and important offices can be filled only by persons of extensive endowments and qualifications, and they would on longer envy the holders of them as they now do.

One great bar to the civilization of the populace in many nations, is the difficulty which exists of a free and full intercourse and interchange of ideas and feelings between them and the rich, which is to a large extent owing to the difference in the dialect and even language in which the two classes carry on communication. Hence a gulf between them is fixed, which the education of the poor alone can fill up, by familiarizing the latter with the language of the former. The civilizing influence of those of superior acquirements, would then first be experienced by the people at large, who would also be able to enter into the thoughts and feelings of the former, and to understand works composed in their purer and classical style of composition, which to many of them are at present incomprehensible.

Not only, therefore, is it essential that education of each of the foregoing kinds should be supplied to every member of the state ; but no well-regulated state will omit to provide for this necessary end. In neglecting to do so, the nation is guilty of a crime corresponding with that committed by the

father of a family who fails to educate his own offspring. Nevertheless, the state, in aiming to produce moral effects, should never attempt to interfere with the natural inclinations of the people, or act in a compulsory manner; but its clear duty appears to be to exert itself so far as to prevent the natural dispositions of its members from being counteracted or impeded by obstacles which arise out of the artificial state of society in which they are placed. To the extent already specified, education is essential, and therefore thus far it is the duty of the state to supply it, or provide for its being supplied.

Nor, in a case of this national necessity, ought the state to trust to the charity or bounty of individuals to carry out such a measure, any more than it relies on the chance generosity of the public, or a portion of it, for supplying the resources to carry on a war. Moreover, by rendering a system of education national, it becomes engrafted on the constitution and forms an essential part of it, and is prevented from decaying when the fashion or feeling of liberality which originally supported it may have died away. The inconsistency is doubtless great of those who uphold and argue in favour of a system of national education, and who talk loudly of the duty of the state to provide for the intellectual and moral as well as the physical wants of its members, and yet deny the necessity of an established church. But the inconsistency is even greater of those who



profess to value this church, and are yet opposed to the establishment of a national system of education, whereby the benefits of the former would be much extended, both alike largely and essentially contributing to the civilization of the nation.

As regards the particular mode in which the state should exert itself to promote the education of the people, this may be effected by the three following measures:—In the first place, the state should provide by a grant of money ample means for the general intellectual and moral instruction of the poorer classes, so that all persons, of whatever degree, may be able to obtain a suitable education, according to their station and requirements. The state should take care that facilities for this are afforded, which it is bound to supply not merely for the sake of the individuals so to be benefited, but for the sake of the nation itself, and on account of the advantages that it derives from the proper education of its members, and the disadvantages which it must experience from their education being defective. The general mode in which national education is conducted, should also be placed under the control, inspection, and regulation of the government.

In the second place, the state should issue such regulations as to the proper qualifications, both moral and intellectual, to be possessed by all those who desire to become professional instructors of

youth, as appear to be expedient for obtaining efficient officers, and those only, to be appointed for this purpose. Teaching ought equally with preaching to be confined to persons who are licensed as duly qualified for so important a duty.

In the third place, the state should hold out such inducements to those of all classes to obtain an efficient education, as will operate as due and reasonable stimulants to that end, on account of the advantages accruing therefrom. For instance, the public offices in the state should be confined to those who can adduce proof that by intellectual endowments they are duly qualified for filling advantageously such employments. Public oral examination ought not, however, to be the only test here afforded; nor is it by any means in every case a fair mode of ascertaining the real merits of a candidate. On the contrary, in some cases, from his peculiar constitution, or, from other causes, it may be a very unfair mode. Probably, in certain instances, and with certain persons, one mode is the most efficient, and in others another mode. An examination is, nevertheless, an essential portion of, or rather adjunct to education, constituting perhaps not so much a part of education itself, as a test of its extent and efficiency. It forms, in fact, not the filling of the vessel, but the gauging of it in order to ascertain the amount that it contains. In each case, examinations should be adapted alike

to the subject to which they are applied, the quality and attainments of the students, and the end for which the particular studies in which they have been engaged are being followed. Probably, therefore, the correct principle as to the sum-total of the value of examinations for public offices, is as follows. They are very efficient to exclude incompetent persons from such places, but are by no means sufficient to secure the choice of such as are competent and deserving. For the latter purpose, some additional process is required, which may effect a point beyond the reach of examinations, in enabling us to select out of those who have been examined, and been proved not to be disqualified, the men in other respects, and beyond what the examination could testify, best qualified for the office to be filled. From the whole, I therefore conclude that a mixed mode is that which is the best calculated for general adoption; being one which is effected in part by oral and in part by written examination; in part by testimonials as to past conduct and general qualifications, and in part by the written compositions of the candidate made at the time.

· But as intellectual education is not the only kind of education which each person ought to receive, so an intellectual test is not the only test of many a person's fitness to fill certain offices. Moral and even physical qualities are often as requisite for



this purpose as are those of an intellectual nature, which, although unquestionably the highest, are doubtless not the only endowments to be considered. Hence a public examination of candidates for state offices, and electing them according to the credit with which they passed such examination, may often fail of ensuring the fittest persons to fill those offices, although probably in nine cases out of ten it will succeed. Where, however, it does fail, it fails entirely. It will succeed in all cases where intellectual qualifications are mainly required, and the candidate has no physical impediments which may interfere with his examination, and no moral disqualifications to impair his efficiency. It will fail in all cases where moral and physical qualities and endowments are equally requisite with those of an intellectual nature.

The plan of promoting candidates for civil offices by examination as to their qualifications, is doubtless, however, directly conducive to civilization. It gives to intellect and intelligence the supremacy in the affairs of state; in some respects indeed, as already observed, conferring upon them even a greater degree of influence than by right they are entitled to possess, inasmuch as moral as well as mental qualifications ought to be considered here, and to have their due weight, but which they will not obtain if the choice of the candidate is determined solely by his intellectual capacities and attainments.

Manual education, or that which is intended to adapt various persons for the particular professions and callings they are respectively intended to follow, does not require any state provision to be made for its promotion, inasmuch as all those who are interested in gaining such instruction will naturally be led to secure this without the interference of the government. So far, however, as regards making provision for this instruction being placed under proper regulation where such is necessary, it is essential for, and it is the duty of the state to interpose, especially where this is required in order to prevent the nation from suffering through ignorant, or unskilful, or unprincipled practitioners. As respects this matter, both the teaching and the pursuit of certain callings demand, of course, more imperatively than do others, to be placed under state regulation, according to their relative importance and quality. Such, in particular, are those professions by which may be placed in jeopardy either the life, the property, or the liberty of the public. The state may fairly and advantageously interfere to frame such precautions with respect to these professions, as in its wisdom it sees most fit.

Education which is of a merely ornamental kind, such as refined accomplishments, may be left to the taste or particular requirements of each individual, who will obtain this according to his necessities or his means, without any state provision be-

ing made for its establishment. Such an education should, however, be placed within the reach of every one, as will supply him with the elements of knowledge and learning, and capacitate him for further progress in this respect; as will train him in correct moral and religious habits, and fit him to be a useful member of society, and to employ himself in some advantageous office, profession, or calling.

In the case of each individual, moreover, his education ought not to cease with his school career, but should be continued and carried on alike by means of the national institutions which every state is bound to provide for the intellectual and moral education of the people, and by the development of various kinds which intercourse with society tends powerfully to promote. And, on the other hand, education ought to qualify the youth both for availing himself of the institutions of the nation provided for adult instruction, and for conducting himself with propriety and advantage during his intercourse with the world in after-life. Thus considered, indeed, education continues through life itself, and ceases only with the entrance upon eternity, which is the period of harvest when its fruits will be gathered in.

In general education, it is advantageous that the elements of each branch of knowledge should be taught, in order to show how vast is the expanse of



knowledge which may be traversed; and also to prevent the relative importance of those special departments of it which the individual is mainly following, from being overvalued. We can only judge adequately and accurately of the advantages of a particular locality which we think of choosing, by taking a survey of the country adjacent from an elevated spot, and viewing all the features of the surrounding district.

The Spartan system of education consisted not so much in communicating the knowledge of a great variety of subjects, as in forming the passions, sentiments, and ideas to that tone which might best assimilate with the constitution of the state. The object of education, indeed, should ever be twofold:—1. To make good men. 2. To make good citizens. It ought to lead individuals to consider themselves not merely as such, but as members of a state; should inculcate not only private but public virtue.

As regards the mode of instruction in each case to be pursued, this owes its value not to the quantity of knowledge that may be imparted, or to the strictness of the discipline followed, but to the development and cultivation of the faculties effected, and the result produced on the moral habits and disposition by the principles taught.

A very important question here arises, to what extent, and in what respects, it is desirable to fur-

ther the progress of education by resort to artificial stimulus. For this purpose, the readiest means seem to be the examination of students either verbally or by writing, and the institution of certificates or classes of comparative merit, by which an emulation between them is created, and they are urged forward to exertions which they would not otherwise undertake. The defect, however, of the stimulus in all these cases is, that it is not the desire of study, or of obtaining knowledge, which is the ultimate or real object aimed at, but the desire of acquiring superiority over those with whom they compete; and that immediately the stimulus to exertion called forth by this emulation is withdrawn, the zeal for study at once also ceases. The application of this stimulus is somewhat like the process of placing seeds in a hotbed, by which their early growth is much accelerated, but the eventual vigour of the plant is correspondingly decreased. So with regard to the emulation excited by examinations and class lists, the desire to excel in competition urges young men forward to succeed here, but damps their ardour in study beyond and independent of this; and they are too frequently led to regard success in the class list as the ultimate object of study, instead of as a mere inducement to enter heartily upon its career. So far, however, but so far only, as the latter purpose is attained, the stimulus is efficient and expedient.

Aristotle says that "until the age of seven complete, the school for children ought to be the father's house."\* The tone of mind and cast of thought which are formed at this early period, depend much on the precepts and example enforced by those whose influence must naturally be the greatest; and though no new faculties or dispositions can be conferred by this means, the apt development and cultivation of those existent at such a juncture is of paramount importance. More especially as regards the inculcation of sound moral principles, fortifying the mind against error, and preparing the child to enter upon the world, it is that the education conferred by the mother is most valuable, and most essential. By this means, moreover, he is fitted for the more enlarged and extensive education which he acquires from the school, in which mental training and moral discipline are alike to be imparted, and which, as a little world in itself, prepares him for the duties and the dangers of that great and real world through which he will hereafter have to direct his course.

In order, however, to urge forward the people as a mass to take a very decided interest in the education of their children, you must convince them of the great advantages that would result from obtaining that education. These results being in their effects unseen, require the more clearly to be de-

\* Politics, book iv.



monstrated. The more extensively these advantages are pointed out, the more active will be the efforts made to secure them.

Of all moral education, religion is the most important, the most comprehensive, and the most efficient. The most important, because duty to God as well as to man is enjoined by it; the most comprehensive, because actions of every kind are the objects of its rule; and the most efficient, because by its influence the heart is not only regulated, but changed. This alone is able to control the actions of the body, by influencing the impulses of the mind. It directs the working of the machine by acting on the mainspring. It is essential, moreover, that not only both education and religion should be inculcated, but that they should be inculcated together. Education should unite with it the teaching of religion; and with the teaching of religion the inculcation of knowledge and of education generally should be followed. Enlightenment and religion should ever proceed hand in hand together. Religion as regards its general influence over the mind of a nation, apart from and independent of religious education, forms a separate and very important element in the promotion of civilization. The Christian religion, as has already been remarked, is in its nature highly favourable to the civilization alike of individuals and of states, and both intellectually and morally. The

knowledge that it teaches is the highest and most elevating; and the principles that it enforces are the purest and most comprehensive.

The beneficial effects resulting from the general education of the people, are threefold, corresponding with the nature of education itself;—raising the national mind; improving the national character; providing means of general subsistence to each and to the whole by teaching every individual an occupation. By education, moreover, the people are rendered independent of unprincipled demagogues and seditious teachers, and thus the higher influences in the state are raised above those which are demoralizing and base; just as in the individual man, education renders him less subject to the control of his animal passions and propensities. For the sake, therefore, of the state as well as of the several individuals who compose it, it is essential that a due system of education be established in every nation. The histories of nations, and the histories of individuals, alike bear testimony to the importance of this principle, in each case.

But Education, though an important and essential element in the civilization of a nation, is but one element only. It is not the consummation, but merely the commencement of civilization. It is not the reaping, or even the sowing, but merely the tillage of the field. By it the hard ground is broken up, and rendered fit for the reception of

seed. On the other hand, unless this preparatory step is adopted, and efficiently carried out, the other elements of civilization about to be discussed can hardly be brought into action, or be availed of with success. According as the national mind is prepared by Education for their application, may we anticipate in proportion that they will contribute to the complete civilization of that particular nation.

---

## II.—NATIONAL RELIGIOUS INFLUENCE.

While inquiring into the essence of civilization, I referred to the effect produced by Christianity upon its progress. We have now to consider the general influence that religion exercises over a nation, and upon mankind at large, and which, as I shall show, constitutes one of the most important and essential elements of civilization. At the same time, it is necessary to be borne in mind that Religious Influence, although so leading and powerful an element in the constitution of civilization, is not and does not of itself amount to civilization, nor does civilization consist of Religious Influence. The two may be much alike, and often mistaken for each other; but they are, nevertheless, wholly independent and totally different. Both are, however, important aids to the other of them; and perhaps



without each other's assistance, neither can attain a high degree of perfection, or produce very extensive results.

But, notwithstanding the importance to civilization of the element of Religious Influence, I have placed Education as the first element, inasmuch as Education must necessarily precede and lay the foundation for Religious Influence; for it is difficult, if not impossible, to suppose the existence of Religious Influence without the inculcation to some extent of Education, although there may be Education to a considerable extent, however defective, and civilization also, without Religious Influence. Ignorance is equally opposed to the teaching of religion, and to the progress of civilization.

There is, moreover, a mutual reciprocal effect upon each other produced both by religion and Education. And, probably, Education, according to its quality and tendency in any particular case, produces quite as great an influence upon religion, as religion, according also to its quality and tendency, does upon Education.

Religious Influence is not only one of the most important of the elements of civilization, but it is one of the most powerful, and exercises its sway in the most direct manner, by raising man from the condition of a mere animal and terrestrial, to that of an intelligent and immortal being. It conduces, moreover, to the regulation of every part of his

conduct, and forms the rule and supplies the ultimate object by which all his actions are controlled, and to which his aims are directed. I may further observe that there is no nation whatsoever, either in ancient or modern times, that has reached a high degree of civilization, which has not been to a large extent influenced by religion also. On the other hand, all those nations which have been the most barbarous, have been in a corresponding manner signally wanting in the exercise over them of religious influence. But if religion, so falsified and corrupted and distorted as was that which prevailed in Greece and Rome,—although it may not unreasonably be surmised that even here the Almighty deigned to permit some faint shadow of his attributes, and of the duties which religion enjoins, to be cast among these people, who had no direct revelation made to them of the true religion,—could work such wondrous effects, and be regarded by their rulers as so important an element for the regulation of the state; how much more important and influential must be the true religion itself, whose principles are so pure, and whose teaching is so ennobling! If the mere rude semblance is so sublime, what must be the glory of the actual reality?

As the influence of each kind of religion is powerful and civilizing according to its truth, so the influence of the Christian religion, which alone

is that which is wholly true, is the best adapted to the exigencies of human nature, and the most calculated to promote civilization. Even among barbarians, the influence of religion, so far as it has extended, has been all-potent; and both among them and civilized people, its indirect and unseen influence is probably greater than that which is direct and open. This alone has been able to tame the fierce spirit of savage tribes, to subdue the lawless passions of the most untutored races, and to restrain the excesses of the most rapacious. Among civilized people, religion has ever commanded the regard and the veneration of the wisest. In the government of a nation, moreover, whether rude or refined, the influence of religion has always been found most powerful, and in this respect it has been extensively conducive to the promotion of civilization. It alone has been able to control the actions of the body, by ruling the impulses of the mind. It is able to still the raging of the storm, by its power over the elements which contributed to its excitement.

Disgraceful, therefore, is it to us who live in this enlightened century, and when civilization has advanced to its present condition, that the influence even of the Christian religion, whose ethics are so pure and whose doctrines are so refining and so ennobling, should not have exercised more extensive sway, both in the affairs of states and over the



minds of men, than the influence of Paganism appears to have achieved ; or that the wild superstition of Druidism and of the Hindoos should have been able to entwine themselves more closely around the hearts of their devotees, and to have exercised a more supreme authority even in state affairs, than Christianity has ever been found to command.

Religion, as regards its influence, might be distributed into three different kinds or classes, corresponding with the three different classes into which education has been divided. As, for instance, intellectual religious influence, or that which consists in the understanding and the reason being thoroughly informed and convinced in regard to its principles, which is, indeed, necessary as a stable foundation for all real religious influence. In the next place, moral religious influence is that which is required, constituting indeed the influence of religion over all questions of duty and action. And, in the third place, this influence should not only regulate our notions of social duty, but it must be practically applied and carried into the habits and occupations of everyday life, corresponding with the mode in which education should be made useful in our professional or other ordinary employments, as well as being desirable as an intellectual or mere ornamental acquirement. Religious Influence should control the actions and the hearts of

its votaries, and sway powerfully the current of desire and determination.

In three distinct and independent modes, moreover, Religious Influence contributes to the civilization of a nation, both as regards men individually and men in the aggregate. The first of these is by raising the minds of the people to a sense of their own natural dignity and importance as immortal beings, and as allied to the great Creator of all things. The effect of this influence is very different, and, indeed, directly opposite to pride and vanity, which spring from the supposed individual superiority of one man to another, and not from any opinion as to the dignity of the whole race. The second of the modes by which Religious Influence contributes to the civilization of a people, is by instilling into their minds the consciousness of a constant observer of all their actions, to whom they are accountable for every deed. And the third of these modes, is by the establishment of a strict and unerring rule of the highest authority for the direction of their conduct on all occasions, both as to principle and practice.

As all law derives its authority from God, so is each law dependent for its force and efficiency on the support that it derives from the same source. Hence religion has ever been seen to be most powerful and influential in disposing men to submit to rule ; and, indeed, without the aid of religion, it

has been found impossible to govern them. So far, indeed, has this been the case, that for lack of a true religion, men have even invented false ones, which inculcated belief in a superior over-ruling power, and by which mankind have been controlled and kept in order.

Another grand civilizing influence of religion, arises from the tendency which it has to create an impression on men's minds that virtue is desirable to be followed, and will be productive of reward; while vice is undesirable, and will be productive of punishment.

Religion both elevates and inspires the soul. The most magnificent works of art have been instigated by the influence of religious fervour, and the noblest and sublimest ideas have been afforded by religious subjects. Religion has, moreover, ever been the soul of poetry, and of productions in each of the sister arts. The use and influence of art in its turn to aid religion, as well as to promote civilization, I shall advert to when treating of the promotion of art as one of the elements of the latter. The Christian religion is, indeed, and in many and various ways, through the influence that it exerts, directly conducive to civilization. The injunctions contained in the Book of Revelation for the improvement of the mind by obtaining knowledge, and for subjecting the lower and baser influences of our nature to those which are higher and purer,—



the body to the soul, the passions and desires to the intellectual and moral endowments,—directly each contribute to the promotion of civilization.

As containing the purest and most perfect system of ethics which has ever yet been framed, and which is, moreover, fully adapted for practical guidance and conduct, the moral influence of Christianity must necessarily be very powerful and very extensive. If these precepts fail in any respect, this is not from being at all defective in themselves, but from their being too exalted and too refined for human nature in its degenerate condition. Many human and even Heathen systems appear in several respects practically more efficient, because they were more implicitly followed; which was from their being less refined and exalted, and from the less sublime and extensive nature of their aim. Not only the morals, but the manners and customs of every civilized nation, are more or less influenced by the religion embraced by that people. And not the general tone merely, but the direction of each particular act is thus swayed.

Christianity has also a direct tendency to promote civilization, from the manner in which it enjoins amicable unity, and social communion, and good fellowship among different people. It strives to join together, in one vast community, or rather fraternity, the whole family of the human race, and impels us to endeavour to disseminate through

the remotest regions of the world the blessings of true religion. This principle, from which, indeed, springs the very foundation of civilized society, Christianity carries out further than does any moral or constitutional code that has been established in any nation. While science and intellect induce us to extend the pale of our sympathies to all those of our race who are capable of partaking of, or of appreciating our efforts in the cause of learning or art; Christianity leads us to extend it to all who belong to the common race of mankind. And while the former urge us from a feeling of connection, Christianity constrains us from a principle of duty. In the promotion of general benevolence among mankind, Christianity has done much for civilization; as also, in conjunction with it, by the numerous charitable, educational, and religious institutions which it has been the means of founding. In this respect, the indirect influence of our religion, independent of its direct effects, in promoting mutual goodwill among the several members of society, both in our own country and in foreign nations, by the exertions which it calls forth to alleviate their wants, and to minister to their necessities and comforts of each kind, of itself causes Christianity to have a powerful civilizing influence over the whole world. No other religion has produced this great effect; it alone has accomplished it perfectly.

So far as Religious Influence contributes to unite together in amicable union the different members of a state, it may be considered as aiding the efficiency of Element IX. of civilization, that of Internal Communication. To some extent, it so far aids Element X. also, which is that of International Intercourse. More especially in the case of colonies belonging to any state, how important is it that the same principle of religion should unite the two, which is the strongest bond of union that they can possess, and the want of which must necessarily occasion a tendency to separation. This has been peculiarly evinced in the case of India, the conversion of which to Christianity, we must now be convinced, alone can closely connect it with this country, and the accomplishment of which is consequently most important, not only as a matter of duty, but as a principle of state policy.

The influence of religion, in addition to its tendency not merely to bind together men of different feelings, and interests, and dispositions, and communities, in the closest ties, as members of one family, but to unite them in a league whose continuance is everlasting; serves of itself to create a pure and genial moral atmosphere around us, by which are more or less affected each of the other elements of civilization. By this means it both prepares the minds of men for their operation, and serves perfectly to accomplish the ends they are intended to serve.



It cannot, indeed, be doubted that the greatest conquests over human nature which have ever been effected, and the completeness of which is most fully evinced, as in the case of other conquests, by the entire change in heart, and habits, and customs, and conduct, which is produced, are those which have been accomplished by the influence of Christianity. Nations and individuals alike attest the truth of this proposition. In fact, the world at large may be appealed to for this purpose, in which the most extensive moral revolutions that have ever been wrought, have been effected through this medium alone. And the direct and powerful tendency of religious influence to promote civilization, is conclusively proved by the circumstance that wherever, throughout the world, Christianity has taken root, there civilization has been at once established. Christianity is, indeed, as it were, the moral sun by which alone the darkness of ignorance and superstition has been effectually dispelled, and from which the bright and genial beams of civilization have been generally diffused.

One immense, and indeed incalculable advantage which Christianity possesses as regards its influence, over all the Pagan and Heathen systems, is, that those who are its teachers, and who take the lead in its propagation and ministration, sincerely believe in all that they teach and inculcate, and are not imposing a belief upon others with which they

themselves are not impressed. Sincerity in the advocates of religion is essential for its support. Where this is wanting, neither energy nor vitality can be found. According, therefore, in each sect, as the teachers of religion are imbued with and evince sincerity, will be the power with which their followers will be impressed. If, however, Heathenism and Paganism have in some instances appeared to exercise a more striking and more extensive influence over the minds of their votaries than Christianity has done; this is not because Christianity is in reality less influential than those systems, but because the people of the present day possess less of Christianity, than the people of past ages did of Paganism or Heathenism. The laxity of Christians is not from any defect in Christianity itself, but from their own defect as regards the limited extent to which they are really endowed with it.

The Pagan system of mythology had a civilizing effect, especially as regards the intellectual and moral stimulus which it excited, by raising up and placing ever before the eyes of the people as models by which to regulate their conduct, and as examples for imitation, their various deities, who were the incorporations, as it were, of great and noble qualities; and also their various heroes exalted into deities, who were regarded as so much god as to command the general veneration of mankind, and as so much



man as to inspire each with the hope, as well as desire, of imitation. With respect to the moral effect produced by such a system, Christianity supplies us with examples for imitation in the lives recorded in Holy Writ of those good men whose actions are there set forth, and whose humanity places them on a level with ourselves, while principles of the loftiest and purest nature are promulgated with regard to our conduct: and the Deity whom we are taught to adore, is not only in His nature far more sublime, and in His attributes far more perfect than any of those of Pagan invention; but to His loftier and diviner qualities of omnipotence and omniscience, they never even pretended to aspire.

In two important points, Paganism doubtless possessed a great advantage over Christianity, as regards the direct influence upon its votaries which it was capable of exercising. In the first place, the personality which attached to the objects of its adoration, stimulated the interest of its worshipers. And in the next place, the material nature of its associations gave vigour to their feelings with regard to it. By the first of these, by investing all its deities with personal human characters, the people were induced to enter fully into its principles. By the other, this religion was rendered comprehensible to every understanding, and became the subject of sensation as well as intellect. In the early ages of the world, the principle of personality



in the religion of the Almighty was supplied by the frequent personal manifestations of Himself which He was pleased to make, as when He appeared to and held personal intercourse with Adam, and with Abraham, and Moses, and many other of the ancient patriarchs and prophets. This was also especially effected by the personal appearance among us upon earth of the Saviour of mankind. In later ages, when these personal manifestations have altogether ceased, and the record of them only remains to be referred to, and as the education of the world, both religious and intellectual, has advanced and has grown more refined and elevated, religion itself became more exalted and more spiritual. We are taught to adore the Deity as an invisible being, and as a spirit; and the influence of the Holy Spirit is that by which we are immediately affected, and who is the Being with whom alone we now hold direct personal communication. Of either of the persons in the Trinity, we have no sensual perception whatever.

The partiality of mankind towards materiality, even in religion, and the innate proneness to materialize every subject of whatever nature, which is, indeed, an inclination that develops itself in many other pursuits besides religion, is exhibited by the people of every age and country alike. It is this which has mainly conduced to lead mankind to invest different deities with material frames, who

stand as the representatives of particular qualities; and which is also evinced in the tendency to idolatry in their religious services which from the earliest ages of the world, all nations alike have uniformly displayed. Not only was a material character in early times given to the Deity, whatever form of religion was in vogue, as also to religion generally; but his actions were considered to be more of a material than a moral nature, and with regard to the former character was their importance discussed. And the disposition to introduce personality into religion, was no less plainly exhibited by the proneness alike to deify those renowned persons whose qualities they admired, and also to personalize the very deities whom they regarded as objects of adoration.

In one particular mode it may, perhaps, be said that, in later days, we are peculiarly prone both to personalize, and also to materialize religion. And that is, that in many cases we are disposed to pay to the ministers of religion too much of that homage which is due to the Deity alone; and that we regard too much the edifice erected for its celebration, instead of the celebration itself. To some extent, indeed, both the personality and the materiality which have been arbitrarily by man attached to religion, may appear to be sanctioned, or rather, permitted by God, in compassion to the infirmity of our nature. Thus, in the reverence enjoined to the priests and prophets under the Jewish



dispensation, a certain degree of personality was introduced and allowed; while in the importance attached to the material structure of the Temple at Jerusalem, and the figures and ornaments carved upon it, and the adoration enjoined to the Brazen Serpent, which was a material type of the only true object of adoration, materiality in religious service and its objects was also sanctioned. On the other hand, the carrying to too great an extent, and the abuse of both these principles, was especially guarded against, and balanced and counteracted, by the promulgation of the first and second commandments in the Law given to Moses on Mount Sinai.

In proportion as religion is less personal, and is deficient as regards its hold on the popular mind by not affecting the senses, should the evidences afforded of its truth, and which the people should be taught during its inculcation, be more striking and convincing, and which may serve to counterbalance its want of influence in other respects. Thus, while the evidence obtained through the senses, such as that of miracles, and the personal appearance of the Deity and of angels, is less strong than what was formerly supplied to mankind; that afforded by the reason, from reflecting on these miracles and appearances, is more influential, inasmuch and in proportion as the reason is a far more exalted endowment than are the senses.

It may perhaps, indeed, be urged against the



popular teaching of the evidences of religion, that it is best not to disturb the absolute and unhesitating acquiescence which persons in general naturally acquire in the truth of religion through their education, and without even a suspicion that it may not be unimpeachable. But in this case, their religion is based rather upon prejudice than upon conviction; on ignorance more than on knowledge. Although the foundation may serve very well so long as fine weather lasts; yet, directly that a storm arises, of which many are hovering around, it must inevitably give way. It is surely, therefore, expedient to blend with the teaching of the principles of religion, the evidence of its truth. And while inculcating its doctrines, we ought, doubtless, to fortify the mind against the attacks of infidelity. Moreover, pretty exactly in proportion to the strength of our conviction of the truth of religion, will be the extent of its influence over the mind.

Not only does it appear expedient for aiding the influence of religion, but also reasonable in itself, that religion should be celebrated with a due degree of ceremony and even pomp. It is this which affects the multitude; and though it may be through their frailty that they are thus moved instead of by more important matters, yet it is owing to their natural constitution that this is the case. And further than this, in the ceremonial for the administration of religious rites framed by God himself,

and ordained for His chosen people,—and whose religious influence and civilization were immediately superintended by the Almighty,—a large measure of this pomp was not only permitted, but expressly commanded: a concession, it may have been, to human infirmity. Even in heaven also, according to the descriptions contained in the Apocalypse, great pomp attends each exercise of worship. Nevertheless, it is an important point to be kept in view in the ordering of religious ceremonies, that they do not detract from more essential matters, but, on the contrary, aid their observance, and add effect to their celebration.

Moreover, according to the magnificence with which we erect temples devoted to the worship of the Almighty, will the importance of this worship be judged of by the multitude; and the cost bestowed upon our religious celebrations, will afford them a sure proof of the value we attach to the faith which we profess. If we ourselves seem to sacrifice nothing to religion, we cannot expect others to give up much to follow our precepts.

The character of the structure devoted to public worship, may also produce an important moral effect upon the worshipers within its walls. A church should not only be of a different nature to ordinary buildings, but should exceed them both in its extent and its dignity, as the purposes for which it is used are superior to those of common

dwellings. The antiquity of the pile may contribute to remind us of the lasting nature of the religion to which it is consecrated, and of the veneration paid to it by the people of past ages as well as by those of the present. Its solidity may lead us to reflect on the eternity of that religion, and its splendour upon its importance. So also may the grandeur and beauty of the edifice itself serve to typify the solemnity and purity of the religion to which it is devoted.

As in this place we have to consider rather the influence upon mankind of religion than its actual essence, the due and legitimate pomp and ceremony attendant upon its celebration must necessarily be taken into full account. It is by this mainly that the multitude are affected.

In conjunction with religion, it is essential that morality also should be inculcated; for although morality may be unstable which is not built upon religion, yet that religion can possess but little influence or genuineness which is not supported by morality.

But it may be said that some of the most highly civilized men, and bodies of men, are wholly, or at any rate to a large extent, destitute of religion; and that if this is the case, its influence cannot be essential or even very important in the civilization of a nation. In these cases, however, although the practice of religion may have been abandoned, the



influence of many of its most striking precepts, and of its moral obligations, is still retained and acted upon: and civilization is here existent, not, indeed, because religious influence is not an element in its constitution; but civilization exists in such a case only imperfectly, because it is wanting in this element, except so far as any of it remains in its formation. On the other hand, no instance is on record of a highly civilized nation or individual who has never adopted any religion at all. Where they have once embraced, but have afterwards wholly or partially renounced or neglected it, of which instances are not infrequent, much of the influence that religion is calculated to produce would continue to operate long after its abandonment.

Having now examined generally the nature of Religious Influence as it affects a nation at large, more especially in the promotion of civilization, and the extent to which it is exercised; the next question is, how ought this influence to be extended and secured, and what is the duty here of the state? How is Religious Influence, which is by all persons of intelligence, and by all the most civilized nations, acknowledged to be so important, so essential, nay, so paramount an element in the civilization of a state, to be duly availed of so as to render it of the utmost value, and to turn it to the fullest account?

The state is bound alike by duty and by interest

to provide for the dissemination of this influence throughout the nation, which can only be effectually secured by the aid of appointed teachers for the purpose, who, as in the case of the instructors in education, should be so far placed under the regulation of the state as to ensure duly qualified persons only attaining to this office. In most civilized states, Institutions have been established for the supply and support of teachers of this description ; and to the consideration of Institutions of this class, which form a separate Element of themselves, our attention will presently be directed, when their necessity will be pointed out. As regards such Institutions, I need here only observe, that it is the duty of the state to protect and maintain them, on all occasions, in all their integrity, and also to adopt such measures for their regulation as may appear to be desirable for rendering them as efficient as possible. It is not, nevertheless, by any means, the duty of the state to interpose as regards the particular mode in which Religious Influence shall be disseminated through such an institution, which often suffers essentially, and the operation of its machinery is disordered, by such interference.

In the first place, however, it is the duty of the the state, and is, indeed, a necessary initiatory and preparatory step to what has already been considered, to render to religion on all suitable occasions its due share of honour and reverence, and to ac-

knowledge its importance both in public and private transactions. Religion may also fairly claim to be protected by the government, so far as regards securing it against common obloquy. A reverential respect to religion by the state, is but the just rendering to it of the tribute which is its due by right. It is surely fitting that the Governor of all things should receive proper homage from the government that He supports; that the fountain of all authority should be acknowledged by the authorities of a state; and that the only source of all power should be honoured by the powers which are but the delegates of His sway. Moreover, as all rule and all authority originate in obedience to God; so to the promotion of this duty ought all rule and all authority in every state alike to lend its efforts, and to consider it as among its paramount requirements.

By two modes, more especially, may the state legitimately and constitutionally interfere with respect to the support of religion, and the extension of its influence. 1. By publicly maintaining and enforcing the regard and veneration which are due to religion. 2. By endeavouring to promote generally an attachment towards it. For the furtherance of each of these ends, measures, both positive and negative, may be resorted to. The proper conduct for rulers with regard to the first is plain and obvious, and on them it depends mainly whether this



principle shall be observed ; and here the duty is directly positive. The second of them is perhaps chiefly to be effected, so far as the interference of the state can avail, by negative means ; by repressing and punishing every attempt to throw odium or ridicule upon religion, or upon the institutions or officers connected with it.

The duty of the state as regards the protection of religion from undeserved censure and obloquy, the degree of licence to be allowed in the controverting of any of its tenets, and the propriety of punishing direct attacks and aspersions upon religion, will be more particularly considered while discussing the Element which embraces the subject of Toleration.\* As regards the principle on which this duty rests, the aim of the state should be to maintain the proper dignity of religion, and also to secure it from undue aspersion. A deep reverence towards it, is all-essential for the very existence of religion ; and a due respect and regard for it are necessary to ensure both its observance, and its possession of any influence whatever over its votaries. Whatever, therefore, is calculated to detract from either of these, is fatal to the character, and consequently to the influence of religion, although in reference to a private individual such an attack upon his character may fall quite harmless. Nevertheless, in the case of religion, an essential

\* Element V.

distinction should ever be made between the ridicule of religion itself, and the ridicule of its corruptions, or of false pretences or pretenders to it, which, though avowedly and apparently a part of it, are in reality its most inimical parasites. A great difficulty frequently here arises, both in legislation and in the administration of justice. Thus, many superstitious customs appertaining to religious ordinances, might be satirized with advantage to religion itself, provided that in doing so you could avoid satirizing religion also. But unless this can be effected, you will often be obliged to spare the parasitical plant, for the sake of the tree to which it clings. Nothing is so injurious to religious influence, and, indeed, to religion generally, as a discordance and opposition of sentiment between its different teachers. This creates suspicion, and shakes all confidence, as regards the truth of its principles. The remedy for this evil will be considered when treating on the National Institutions for the support of religion and education, which contribute to form Element III. It is, moreover, of the very highest importance for the influence and interest of religion, that its professors should not only evince sincerity in their minds, but should be also correct and consistent in the conduct of their lives.

In order to promote and advance the due and legitimate influence which religion ought to possess

in every state,—and in doing which the authority of the state may doubtless be constitutionally employed,—care should be taken that, on the one hand, religion be rendered as little repulsive, and that on the other hand it be rendered as attractive, as possible ; and this both as regards the explanation of its general principles, and the celebration of its outward ordinances. Thus, all unnecessary austerity and severity in its doctrines, and all needless prolixity and repulsiveness in its services, ought alike to be avoided. On the contrary, these should be made as impressive and as agreeable as can be contrived, without, on the one hand, sacrificing anything to truth, or on the other hand, doing anything that may tend to lower its dignity and importance, so as to lessen its influence upon the national mind. In the public services of religion, whatever is needlessly irksome should be carefully excluded, inasmuch as this tends to weaken its influence, both by deterring people from attending them, and by exciting a feeling of aversion or apathy in the minds of those who do attend. On the other hand, by rendering them attractive, you both increase the attendance, and render that attendance a matter of delight ; and whatever is pleasing is necessarily, and indeed naturally, influential. Sermons, tedious and commonplace, are, especially on this account, to be avoided ; while music, conducted with due dignity and devotion, is peculiarly suitable as an aid and



accompaniment. The style of the sacred Scriptures affords, indeed, the most perfect model, for the regulation of sacred services. Here the loftiest strains of poetry and the finest passages of eloquence are interspersed with examples of the noblest nature, and accompanied by precepts of the purest kind. Information of the highest interest is contained in its pages, and the sublimest notions are instilled into the mind concerning both religion itself and its Divine Author. Hence arises the impression produced upon those who duly study its Divine revelations, with which the National Influence of Religion, resulting conjointly from its appointed services and its efficient teaching, should closely correspond.

---

### III.—NATIONAL INSTRUCTORY INSTITUTIONS.

The important Elements in the promotion of Civilization, which fall under the denomination of "Education," and "Religious Influence," having now been examined; it will be proper, next in order, to consider as the third Element of Civilization, those peculiar Institutions belonging to a nation, which are requisite for the support and furtherance, more especially, of the foregoing elements, as also of certain others of a corresponding tendency, and which constitute of themselves quite

a distinct Element of civilization, wholly independent of the two already considered, with which they are connected. Both Education and Religious Influence may, indeed, be inculcated, and be extensively existent in any country, in the absence of the Institutions most efficient to promote them; besides which, these Institutions serve to promote Civilization in many other ways beyond those in which they are directly intended to effect it.

It is very desirable, but, at the same, very difficult to decide, precisely and satisfactorily, what Institutions of this class ought to be considered as national, and which of them should be left to private patronage. Some of them are, doubtless, best adapted for, and thrive the most under public, and some under private patronage; while certain of them may require a share of this support of both kinds. As regards the general principle which ought mainly to determine whether an Institution for the purposes here mentioned should be supported by the state, or left to private patronage; it may be laid down as a rule that, when an Institution is of public national importance, affecting the whole body of the community, and where its proper regulation is of that general consequence to the country that it calls for state interference, such an Institution ought to be placed under the control of the state, and ought to be supported by the nation. When, however, Institutions, although

directly conducive to civilization, have for their immediate object some mere private undertaking only, they have no claim to such benefit, nor is there any occasion for placing them under such restraint.

National Institutions should, moreover, be so far national as that the nation at large is benefited by their existence, although each individual in the state may not directly participate in that benefit. He profits nevertheless, indirectly, by the advantage derived therefrom by the state of which he is a member. Conferring a national benefit entitles an Institution of right to national protection and national support. And receiving national protection and support, subjects an Institution to the control and regulation of the state.

A perfect state should by its Institutions aim rightly to influence the mind, and disposition, and conduct of its members; and here the concerns of eternity are surely entitled to an equal consideration with those of time. But it may be said that the concerns of eternity affect not the state, which is merely a temporal establishment for temporal purposes. This is, however, an erroneous view, inasmuch as those who are the best men make the best citizens; and the best men are those whose actions are guided by religion. Not only, indeed, are men in the aggregate, as well as man individually, guided by religion; but, as regards its ex-



ternal effect and operation, religion is probably even more influential upon men than it is upon man.

Some doubt may, perhaps, be suggested whether in Institutions which are established and maintained for the general benefit of the nation at large, the existence of exclusive privileges to certain individuals only ought to be allowed, either on account of their place of birth, parentage, family connection, theological creed, or other circumstances. But, unless these exclusive privileges actually affect the enjoyment of their rights by the ordinary members of such an Institution, there does not seem to be any reason for their prohibition. They were, moreover, conferred, in many cases, by the founders of them, not for the general benefit, but for the exclusive advantage of certain particular persons only. There is, in reality, nothing more unreasonable in restricting a donation of this kind to the objects of it, than there is in restricting a gift of property to those members only of a particular family to whom it is given, to the exclusion of all the rest.

Two grand principles ought, however, to be kept constantly in view with regard both to the constitution and the operation of National Institutions of the class here described. The one is, to render them as efficient as possible for the promotion of civilization. The other is, to render them also as generally available, and as extensively useful as possible, to the community at large. In the ma-

nagement of Institutions of this character, we must, moreover, be careful to direct their adaptation, lest, as in the case of some medicines administered for the cure of certain bodily ailments, while they cure one malady, they create another in its place. So with regard to National Institutions of different kinds, certain of these, while they promote learning, they also produce pedantry; while they preserve the correct rules of art, they also prevent original effort; while they encourage talent to a considerable extent, they also damp real genius. The provision of an efficient counteracting remedy in these cases, is sometimes as important as the carrying out of the original design of the Institution; and without the former, the operation of the latter will fail to be satisfactory. In addition to this, the change in the character of the times necessarily caused by the growth of a nation, and more especially its advancement in civilization, must render necessary many changes both in the constitution and management of its Instructorial Institutions. As well might we consider the regulations adopted for the government of a child proper to guide the conduct of a grown-up man, as the laws and regulations of a barbarous age, fitted for one of an advanced period in civilization. At the same time, in reforming these Institutions, the object should be, not to alter their original constitution, but in reality to prevent its being altered through cir-



cumstances, by adapting it as perfectly to the new state of things as it was to the old.

The most important element, therefore, in the civilization of a state, next to the education of its members, and the promotion of religious influence among them, is the establishment of National Institutions of the class here described, the object of which is to inculcate instruction of different kinds. These Institutions, correspondingly with education itself, are in their nature and objects, either mental, moral, or manual. Mental, are those whose object is to promote the intellectual cultivation and advancement of the persons who are connected with them. Moral, those whose object is to further the moral and religious instruction of their members. Manual, such as are adapted to afford manual or professional employment to those belonging to them. Of the different National Institutions which conduce directly either to produce or to promote civilization, some may, accordingly, be classed as entirely and solely mental, or which contribute to promote learning and intellectual pursuits among the people, such as Museums, and Royal Academies of Art. Others may be classed as entirely and solely moral, such as Church Establishments, and Religious Societies. Many institutions are, however, partly mental and partly moral, and some of them partly manual also, such as Universities, Libraries, and Schools. All these Institutions conduce more



or less, either directly or indirectly, in some way or other, to the production or promotion of civilization; and although those which may be termed mental contribute most directly to this end, yet those also which are moral have an important effect here, and operate largely upon the national feeling and the national mind.

The National Institutions of a country connected with civilization, may be comprised under the four following heads: — 1. A Church Establishment, which is entirely moral in its direct object. 2. Universities, Libraries, and Scholastic Institutions, which are partly mental, partly moral, and to some extent manual also. 3. Galleries of Art, and Museums, which are entirely mental. 4. National Spectacular and Theatrical Institutions, which are both mental and moral.

I. If education, especially of a moral kind, is entitled to be considered a matter of national importance; an Institution, such as the Church, which is peculiarly adapted to promote it, and to inculcate that branch of moral education which is the most efficient, must surely be deemed to be of the highest benefit, independent of the divine origin of such an institution, the consideration of which is necessarily without the province of the present work. Its most direct and important object, however, is to aid and support the furtherance of religious influence, which has already been considered

as a separate element of civilization. Viewed, nevertheless, merely as a National Institution for the advancement of civilization, the Church is one of the most efficient that could have been devised for this end. Its influence is not only extended throughout the land, but in every parish it is planted; and in its ministers, men of learning, virtue, and energy are diffused through each district, whose lives are devoted to promote its ends, and who, both by their education and their example, exercise an influence alike powerful and beneficent, in favour of civilization. On the other hand, as each member or officer of this Institution is under the control of some superior, and the whole body under one head, it acts with vigour and unanimity. Being established and recognized as a National Institution, it acquires a due importance as such, and testifies the national respect paid to religion by the state.

Nor are the indirect influences exercised by the establishment of this Institution less beneficial or extensive than those which are direct. The important moral effects which are produced by the inhabitants of each place assembling weekly together for the purpose of public worship, independent of the religious duty of such an observance, ought not to be lost sight of. The public and national recognition of a Supreme Being, a moral Governor of the universe, to whom everything is

owing, and who rules over all, is moreover most influential in its moral results. The solemn nature of the services which are celebrated in these temples to the Creator; the example afforded to join in those services, and the lessons inculcated on such occasions, are all highly adapted to produce effects of the utmost importance as regards the moral improvement and civilization of a nation.

Indeed, the very congregating together for sacred purposes, on solemn days set apart, of the whole inhabitants of a district, whereby opportunities are afforded of reminding them not only of their immortality but of their mortality, by observing the increasing decay of nature, and the sure progress of death among their contemporaries; where each successive assembly presents to us the grey hairs and gradually enfeebling form of the aged, until laid within the precincts of the edifice, rendered yet more sacred as containing the remains of those who for successive generations preceded us in assembling here, whose mementoes surround us, and whom we soon must follow to their last home; the constant changes in nature from youth to age, from health to sickness, from old-age and from youth alike to death; the religious services connected with those changes; and the associations recalled by each of these events; are calculated to produce effects on the minds of each, and on the people at large, which are at once highly moral and extensively civilizing.



But although it is desirable that our youth should be instructed in the principles of the Church, and although it is essential that they should be taught the doctrines of religion ; yet the elements of Education, of Religious Influence, and of National Institutions, ought to be kept distinct and independent, each of these elements being allowed to exercise its proper influence, but being at the same time restrained to exerting itself within its legitimate sphere. Each of these elements should also be corrective of, but without creating any confusion with regard to the other. And it is more especially as a corrective authority that the efforts of the Church are most valuable in repressing error, and in conflicting heretical opinions.

All institutions are, however, alike liable to become corrupt and to decay, or to be perverted as to their end and object, the origin of which may be traced to the constitution of human nature, rather than to any particular defect or bias in the institutions themselves. Thus, fanaticism, intolerance, and superstition are clearly not confined to either Papists or Protestants ; nor are bigotry, corruption, or tyranny the exclusive vices of one political party beyond another. But as each religious or political party supplants the other, and obtains the opportunity for displaying its inherent failings in this manner, it hesitates not to do so, however loudly it had inveighed against that which it has overcome,

for so acting, and by exposing whose misdoings in this respect its triumph over it may have been mainly accomplished.

Hence has arisen the necessity for, and the introduction of certain strict rules and specific forms and observances in the Church, by which its ministers and members are alike required to be bound, and by which alone abuses and corruptions of the nature referred to, can be avoided ; and its officers are thus not only prevented from being affected by the changing spirit of the day, but all belonging to the establishment are also secured against this evil.

The articles and formularies of the Church of England are, doubtless, in many respects, admirably adapted to preserve it from fanaticism and superstition on the one hand, and from formalism and rationalism on the other ; as our constitutional code is in like manner efficient to protect the subject on the one hand against tyranny and arbitrary power, and on the other hand to protect the state when in danger of lawless attack or restless innovation.

It would be very erroneous, and wholly contrary to experience, to assert that the benefits of such an institution as the National Church, so far as regards the promotion of civilization, have been confined solely to those individuals who are actual members of the establishment. Although the latter alone may appear to be directly benefited, yet all persons in the state, more or less, indirectly, reap advantage,

and that to an extensive degree, both by the benefits which it confers on the state in the promotion of civilization, and from the manner in which, also, many individuals with whom they are closely connected, and who are members of it, are immediately benefited, and by whose advancement in civilization the former gain. How different, indeed, would be the general condition of civilization in this country, supposing that no such institution as the Church existed!

Considering, however, the Church as a grand National Institution, the object of which is to benefit all classes and parties alike, it does appear most desirable in every way to extend to the utmost its sphere of utility and operations, by enlarging the basis upon which it is founded, and remodelling the distribution of its revenues, and thereby, instead of endangering its existence, securing its permanence. However necessary may be the introduction of certain specific forms and articles of belief and doctrine in an institution of this kind, yet the inutility, nay, absolute futility of strict tests, embracing a wide range of minute and abstruse doctrinal points, and of matters of credence and opinion, has long been evinced by the clergy themselves, many of whom hesitate not to break through these trammels, whenever they possess a predilection for any particular tenets to which these tests are opposed. Thus, the members of one party not only



omit portions of the liturgy which appear at variance with their sentiments, but in the use of certain forms, and modes of worship, and assemblies, closely imitate the dissenters, who are excluded from the church mainly on account of these very differences, wherein certain churchmen nevertheless follow them. It appears, therefore, not only unreasonable, but unjust, to exclude the latter from the pale and benefits of the established church, considering more especially how many men among them there are of great piety and learning, and excellence, merely because they will not submit to take tests which, when taken, are unceremoniously broken through. Tests, indeed, are mainly efficient to serve as scarecrows to men of tender conscience. The bold and unscrupulous soon learn to pass them unheeded, and to treat them with familiarity and derision. Tests are like fetters made of flowers, which, though quite strong enough to bind the willing captive, are wholly unavailing to chain those who desire liberty. Thus, while the virtuous are kept out of office by them, the bad obtain a ready admission. Most desirable on every account is it that persons of the energy, and power, and devotion of such men as Baxter, and Watts, and Doddridge, and many other eminent and excellent Nonconformist ministers, should be included in the pale of the Church, and instead of being looked upon as opponents, be regarded as fellow-workmen with the

ministers of that establishment. It requires only a proper and legitimate field for such earnest labourers to be opened in connection with the Church, in order at once both to extend their usefulness, and to render their zealous ministrations supplemental to the efforts of the clergy.

Not unreasonably, therefore, might a new and much more liberal criterion of churchmanship be adopted, consisting merely of a declaration of unequivocal and full belief in the entirety of the inspired Scriptures according to the general interpretation put upon them by the articles and liturgy of the Church, together with a promise to submit to the rules and government of the Church. I would also suggest that, though the present church services should be retained in the parochial churches by ordained ministers as at present ; yet that chapels in connection with them should be also used and endowed, to be filled by an inferior order called Deacons, who would be composed of the present dissenting ministers, ordained for the purpose, among whom less strictness should be observed than among the superior clergy, extemporary prayer to some extent allowed, though certain forms should be also used, and a certain amount of Scripture be always read at their services. As teachers of religion and inculcators of instruction, few persons could object to employ the dissenting ministers, even if they could not all at once recognize them as pastors of

the Church. For these purposes they are in many ways peculiarly qualified, especially as regards their thorough acquaintance with the habits and feelings of the poorer classes, and their capacity to address them in a language fully adapted to their minds, in which respect it cannot be doubted that several of the ordained regular clergy are greatly deficient. This, indeed, appears to be the only efficient and practical mode of, on the one hand rendering the national church applicable to the requirements of the nation at large; and, on the other hand, of bringing within the pale of the establishment all those who have wandered, or rather been driven from it, by conscientious scruples which they are too high-minded to disregard; or from not being able to obtain that teaching from the Church which was suited to their capacities. Indeed, but a very small portion of those among the poorer classes who dissent from the Church, do so from any feeling of hostility, or are opposed on principle to such an institution. They have forsaken it because they have failed to find in it that supply for their spiritual necessities of which they stand in need. If it was made suitable to their wants in the way pointed out, the great majority of them would at once return to its fold. It is surely the duty alike of the state and of the Church, as a National Institution, to do all that can be effected towards the accomplishment of so desirable a consummation.



If, however, it be urged, that we ought not to apply to any besides their original object the revenues of the church, which were given for the maintenance of those only who hold her doctrines and unite in supporting her principles; I may reply, that no diversion to other than strictly church purposes is implied in the plan here proposed, inasmuch as the maintenance of the church, and the security of her authority, could be the only ends for which her revenues would still be used. And as her only essential and legitimate object is the spread of true religion in the land, so the more directly and extensively this is attained, the more efficiently is her end promoted.

I must in justice also beg that it be especially borne in mind that by the plan here proposed, no sacrifice whatever of one iota of church principles, or any violation of the rule of church government, is intended or demanded; but these essential principles would be maintained inviolate, in all their integrity and purity, whilst the fold of that church would by this means be opened to all who may be disposed there to enter, and to obtain that nourishment and protection which they can nowhere else gain. Nor, on the other hand, is any abridgment of real liberty, or invasion of the freedom of action of any religious bodies, contemplated. The proposal here made for liberalizing our church institutions, for limiting to the utmost the use of tests, and for a

general fusion of different religious communions, is the principle, moreover, to which the feeling and the reason of men of all parties at the present day directly tend, and which is strictly in accordance with the religious spirit of the age, generated by the experience of the inutility of tests and declarations of that nature in general, and the consideration of the petty quality of those barriers which divide into opposing parties the various persons who ought all to constitute but one fold.

The church visible and established, in this and every civilized country, ought to be co-extensive with the church universal, embracing, in the truly catholic language of the English church, "all who profess and call themselves Christians;"—all who receive and believe fully the inspired Scriptures. Our efforts and our ingenuity should be directed not to narrow to the utmost, but to extend as widely as possible, the limits of our church; and we should ever seek not to discover differences of opinion and causes of separation, but points of agreement and bonds of union. The church, indeed, ought to bear the same relation to the state, and to the country generally, as well as to the government, that a pastor does to his flock; should be its counsellor and teacher in cases of difficulty, to which appeal may be had in questions of moment and intricacy, which the common order of men have not either the learning, the leisure, or

the ability to unravel. It is a sort of theological supreme court of justice, by whose decrees important matters of doubt are to be determined.

Singular, indeed, it is that, not only Christianity, which ought to be the bond of union among all Christians, and whose principles so exhort and so conduce to union, should peculiarly provoke discord; but that the church of Christ, which was ordained as a focus for union, should be regarded as a main barrier of separation: that the fold which was made to hold all, should be converted into an exclusive privileged circle, which but few are permitted to enter.

Another great advantage which would be obtained by a general fusion of all the different religious communions into one, is that by this means each would in time lose its asperity and peculiarity, which are extensively invigorated and developed by its conflict with other sects. And in addition to this, the energy and activity which are expended in these encounters, and against each other, would then be spent in the service of religion generally, and in opposing error and infidelity.

A revision of the Liturgy of the Church of England, might, perhaps, be advantageously adopted, by which those services, now too long, would be abridged. The present repetitions in the morning and evening services, which are greater still when there is both an afternoon and an evening service,



should be avoided, and which might easily be effected by a re-arrangement and condensation of those services. A further improvement might be made by having the sermon at a separate time from the regular service, appointing in its place two additional lessons or chapters from the Bible, so as always to secure one from the historical, and one from the prophetic books of the Old Testament; and also one from the Gospels or Acts, and one from the Epistles, in the New Testament. A selection only from the Psalms is perhaps best fitted for general congregational worship, however well adapted and advantageous the whole of them are for private study and contemplation. Preaching is, in many respects, more suited for weekly instruction than for strictly religious services, and belongs in reality rather to public teaching than to public worship.

From whatever cause, sermons seem certainly to fail in producing their desired effect. Nor is this to be wondered at when we consider the course that is pursued with regard to them. In the first place, the faculty of preaching is as much a peculiar gift as is that of producing poetry; and consequently, those only who possess it should be appointed to this department of ministration, which is, nevertheless, now discharged by all alike, whether capacited for it or not; and to which laymen, who are duly qualified, might, on certain occasions,

be advantageously admitted. On the other hand, many who are well qualified to preach, are not well adapted for other equally important ministrations in the church. In the profession of the Bar, where success is dependent on the capacity of the individual for the avocation which he pursues, a division has been made into different departments, by means of which each person may adopt the particular line for which he is qualified, and need not necessarily engage in undertakings for which he is not naturally fitted. Thus, one gifted with high oratorical powers takes the lead in a case, and addresses the court. Another, who is not so qualified, examines the witnesses. And those who are not calculated to excel in public efforts of this kind, confine themselves to advising upon evidence, getting up the case ready for trial, or drawing legal instruments. How desirable it appears that a corresponding division of labour, in accordance with their individual capacities, should be made by the clergy, instead of each person alike undertaking duties of every kind, whether adapted for them or not.

Probably, however, one great contributing cause to the commonplaceness of sermons, so generally complained of, is the custom of making them all of nearly the same length, so that whether the preacher has much or little to say, and whatever be the subject on which he treats, he must extend

or limit his discourse to a certain period, in either case necessarily much to its detriment; while an extemporary speaker, or the writer of a letter or essay, takes the space requisite for his purpose, and ends at once when he has said all that he thought necessary or proper.

A concise and simple explanatory and applicatory comment preceding each of the portions of Scripture appointed to be read, and varying in duration, as the occasion required, from five to ten minutes, would probably be far more useful than a regular sermon, would command more attention, and would be more deeply impressed upon the minds of the hearers.

If, moreover, a proper distribution was effected of the revenues of the church, enough would be obtained for the decent maintenance of the clergy generally, even when the establishment was so enlarged, and allowing also for a considerable increase in the episcopate, which would be expedient as well, but whose revenues must necessarily be individually less as their number was extended.

A veto on the appointment of a bishop should be given to the clergy of his diocese, and to the communicants of a church on the appointment of an incumbent; the objecting parties being required definitely to state the grounds of their objection, the validity of which might be determined by the archbishop and bishops of the province, in the one



case, and by the bishop of the diocese in the other. Acts or avowed opinions, clearly and directly at variance with the settled principles and doctrines of the church, refusal to submit to its discipline, direct dereliction of moral duty, or decided and definite deficiency in ability or acquirements, should alone form the ground for refusing to confirm the appointment. The nomination, in the first instance, to bishoprics by the crown, and to advowsons by the patrons of them, it appears, however, desirable on many accounts still to retain. The evils of popular election and disunion, are effectually prevented by this means; while the check given to the election of the candidate would prevent improper and unqualified persons from being obtruded. The adoption of the suggestions here made would contribute much to do away with that disunion among us, which is so fatal to the influence of religion; and also to extend the efficiency of the Church as a National Institution.

Closely connected with, and perhaps, indeed, originating in the church establishment of a nation, are the different subordinate and voluntary institutions and societies in relation to education and religion which are maintained in a country. These have an important influence in furthering the promotion and progress of civilization, both as regards their direct operation, and the extensive moral effect produced by their existence and action.

Charitable institutions for the aid of the sick and poor, though not directly of the class here comprised, have also a humanizing social influence. Societies for the support of religion and education, whether at home or in foreign countries, have a civilizing effect in three ways:—1. They have a direct influence in civilizing those towards whom their energies are directed. 2. They have an indirect influence of no mean importance, as regards the civilizing effect which they produce on the minds of those who support them, who become necessarily interested in the subjects for which they are formed. 3. They promote civilization, generally, by uniting different bodies of people, and also different nations together by the mighty bond of Christianity and social community. This, indeed, is a catholicity which no difference of opinion ought ever to disturb. By this means, moreover, aid is afforded to the operation of Elements IX. and X. In these cases, even though we may doubt as to the efficiency in some instances of the religious conversions effected, there can be none as to the benefits conferred by the spread of civilization, and the dispersion of barbarism which is thus achieved. The contributions, moreover, for charitable ends which are collected by benevolent societies, are as morally beneficial to the donors, as they are physically advantageous to the recipients of them.

On the other hand, the moral effect of public

charitable institutions, which are supported by voluntary subscriptions, is undoubtedly injurious so far as they lead different persons to contribute to them, for the purpose of ostentation, what they ought to bestow in a private manner; and as inducing them to give what they can spare, for the support of these public institutions, to the neglect of domestic demands upon them, which must be allowed to possess a prior claim. This is, perhaps, a defect inseparable from these institutions, and is a necessary part of their constitution. Indeed few, if any terrestrial institutions, however good, are without some alloy of evil in their nature.

Whatever, moreover, tends to generate a spirit or a feeling of dependence in any one class towards another, is necessarily vitiating to that society in which it is introduced, even though, as in the case of the rich helping the poor, it is actually based on the duty of the former towards the latter. But in helping them, they should aim to benefit without injuring them. And as the best help of all is that which enables them to do for themselves; so the worst of all is that which contributes to establish, or to confirm them in their own helplessness. Charities and institutions to aid the poor should, therefore, be so constituted as that while they render to the poor that assistance which without them they could not obtain, and which it is the duty of the rich, or of such institutions to afford; they also



stimulate them to help themselves in the way in which it is both their duty and for their benefit to do. They should thus serve to develope, instead of tending paralyze their powers. Bestowing charity on the poor should be somewhat analogous to watering a plant, which we do not do to enable it to thrive without soil and air, but by this means it is revived and invigorated so as to be qualified to avail itself of its own resources and energies.

II. The National Institutions of a country which rank next in importance to the Church, as regards its civilization, are the Universities and scholastic institutions or seminaries for education which it contains. These comprise alike the institutions for the instruction of the people generally, and those also for each profession in particular, in which a full knowledge of it may be acquired. In every country, Universities have a double use and aim as National Institutions of the nature now under consideration, both of which are of high importance in the promotion of civilization, and both of which it behoves the state to see fully and fairly carried out.

1. The first of these objects is to serve as institutions for the education of those who from their station are likely to fill places and positions of trust, and authority, and influence in the state, and also of those who intend to become instructors of the people generally of each class ; and who should

be able to obtain at the national universities the most perfect elementary education that the times can afford.

2. The second use of universities, is for the maintenance of men of learning, ability, and high acquirements, who are thus brought together, and both reap important advantages from each other's society, and are best able to instruct those who are students at such an institution. It is the peculiar result of universities, not only that a number of such men are brought together, but that a number of them are placed upon an equality, whereby the utmost freedom as regards social, moral, and intellectual intercourse is afforded, and the largest amount of influence from such society is accordingly produced. In a metropolis, the assemblage of distinguished men is probably ordinarily greater than it is in a university; but the union between them, and consequently the influence exerted, is not the same.

Those who are placed at the head of universities, should be men of that eminence as not only to be qualified to instruct others and to command their reverence; but, from their acquirements and their success, they ought to serve as examples and as stimulants to those whom they teach, to follow in their course. They should not themselves be aspirants to distinction, but persons who have already attained it to the full.

The Professors of the different arts and sciences, and branches of learning, in our universities, must of course consist of the men who are most eminent in those particular departments, and who will be regarded as the leading authorities on the subjects which they teach. But, in order to ensure this, university professorships, both as regards their rank and their emolument, should be raised to a position equal to that of any of the judicial or political state dignitaries in the nation. Unless this is the case, we cannot expect that these professorships will be always worthily filled, though in some instances, it may so happen that individuals will be found to occupy them who, from their peculiar circumstances, are independent of such inducements. That the professorial chairs should in every case be occupied by persons duly qualified for such important offices, and by such persons alone, is of the utmost consequence, not only to the universities which they adorn, but to the whole nation, whose instructors they are, or ought to be regarded.

A university should also be a receptacle for all the most learned and valuable works of the age, to which those who belong to this institution may at once have ready access, and be at all times able to refer.

The necessity, therefore, of maintaining such institutions as these is obvious. They are essential not only that education may be diffused, but that



it may be inculcated correctly and on regular systematic principles, instead of being left to the caprice of individuals, or the fashion of the times. Nor ought we to express disappointment that these institutions do not of themselves produce men of genius. Their object is not to originate but to nurture talent. They are to a nation what a garden is to a mansion, where the choicest fruit and flowers are cultivated, and with great care brought to perfection, but it is not expected that they should grow there spontaneously. We look to various foreign climes or distant districts for their discovery, and only expect to bring them to perfection by transplanting them to a congenial soil. As plants young and tender are trained, and pruned, and watered, and nourished, and protected in a nursery garden ; so young minds are cultivated, and disciplined, and stored, and strengthened, and fortified in a university. Like young trees too, our youth by this means are fitted for planting out, and to be ornaments to the neighbourhood where they are placed. Many men of genius have developed their powers to the full without having recourse to an institution of this kind, as many fruits and flowers in a wild state have reached perfection ; but this does not prove, either in the one case or the other, that the artificial means resorted to are not generally advantageous. These institutions are also valuable as the store-houses of learning ;

and, especially, to effect the preservation and cultivation of many departments of knowledge which, though of great importance, are not of sufficient practical utility to promote their study. They serve to keep alive, as it were, each branch of education which might otherwise in time be forgotten or neglected as it grew out of fashion. And they ought also to ensure a proportionate deference and due share of attention, according to their relative real value, being given to each pursuit.

It appears, however, to be a great desideratum in educational institutions of this nature, that they should define and establish a mode of education which would comprehend a complete system of knowledge and teaching, so as to bring each faculty of the mind properly into cultivation, and efficiently to train the dispositions and the feelings. And though the object of these institutions ought to be rather the preparation of the mind for study, than the storing it with learning; yet surely a proper chart should be afforded as to the road most desirable to be followed, so that chance or prejudice may not be left to point out the way. Foundations by private munificence for the promotion of particular studies, will, in some institutions, more or less interfere with this design, and perhaps give an undue preponderance to pursuits of a particular kind, and thus lead to the disregard of certain others, or to the neglect of a due distribution of the whole.

This to some extent undoubtedly detracts from the great benefits which they otherwise confer.

The different schools existent in a nation should, of course, correspond both with the different kinds of education that are to be inculcated, and with the several classes of persons to be instructed, more especially as regards their respective stations in society, and their various general occupations.

The invention of printing, already referred to,\* has, in many respects, affected the character of some of our educational institutions, especially as regards certain of their foundations. Our universities are no longer the only receptacles for libraries, as books are now generally circulated; nor is verbal communication the chief means of diffusing knowledge. This may also occasion a change as regards the residence necessary at these institutions, during the period of pupillage, to acquire actual instruction; although, on the other hand, there are many collateral advantages resulting from such a residence, in the discipline enforced, the strict moral training pursued, the influence exercised by contemporaries, access to libraries, the presence of and reference to tutors and experienced authorities, and also attendance on lectures.

Lectures, indeed, seem now mainly useful where experiments in illustration of them have to be exhibited, or plans or pictures shown, which could not

\* *Vide ante*, p. 41.



be obtained for each reader of a book ; but where these are not required, the latter mode of study appears the most efficient. Lectures are also very serviceable in affording a general comprehensive view of certain branches of knowledge, the details of which may be afterwards pursued as opportunities offer. They are of advantage, too, in showing the relative importance of different subjects, and in preventing us from setting too high a value on any one department alone. Instruction by lecture is, moreover, so far more influential than that by books, as it is more lively, and is also more personal. You are brought into immediate contact with the mind of the author ; and the effect of his voice, and gesture, and appearance, serves to enforce the sentiments that he utters. On the other hand, instruction by books affords more freedom of thought concerning, and more opportunity of research into the subject before us. In the one case the feelings are enlisted in the cause of the teacher. In the other, the reason, being freed from all exterior influence, pursues more directly and energetically its proper functions.

Public lectures, as well as public libraries, on subjects of information generally useful, might advantageously be supplied by the state. They are, or ought to be, in fact, mental- and also manual-educational sermons, as those from the pulpit are moral-educational.

Near akin to the plan of instructing the people by public lectures, is the one recently set on foot by some friends to the cause of education, of giving "Public Readings" from popular authors, for the benefit of the working classes, by which a large number at once are enabled to obtain an extensive amount of information and entertainment, at little trouble, and in an interesting manner. By this means, moreover, the essence of the best works extant may be brought within the reach of all.

Although the same studies and pursuits may not be suitable for all, yet discipline, both mental and moral, is essential in each case to be pursued, and is of equal advantage with the knowledge given. The examinations required of the students at these institutions, serve as important and efficient stimulants to exertion; and it appears that they should in general be adapted to prove rather the industry and acquirements, than the natural talents of those who are subjected to them. But, perhaps, examinations at all educational institutions might also be advantageously established, of such a nature as would serve as a test of the real and natural ability of the examinant, and thus ascertain his capacity for any particular pursuit or object in life. For this purpose, each faculty of the mind should be acted upon and proved. Not only memory, for strength of which success in general examinations now mainly depends, but reason, and

taste, and originality, should also be put to the test. Nevertheless, as already observed in a previous part of this work,\* examinations are by no means in every case either the sole or the best proof of proficiency that can be resorted to. A mixed mode of testing the acquirements of the person to be examined, appears the most efficient, and the most fair.

The whole, however, that can actually be demanded of a university or other instructory institution, so far as regards the fulfilment of the object expected from it as such, is that, on the one hand, it should require from every member who passes through it, that he should possess at least a certain amount of intellectual acquirement as the minimum of his qualifications: and, on the other hand, that it should afford to all, and to every one disposed to avail himself of it, the highest amount of instruction that can be obtained, through the ablest teachers and the best treatises, on the most important educational subjects. If such an institution supplies these two requisites, it has fulfilled its own part. What more is required, the members themselves must supply by its means.

Lord Bacon remarks, in his ‘Advancement of Learning,’ that the proficiency of learning would be more advanced “if there were more mutual intelligence between the universities of Europe

\* *Vide ante*, Element I., p. 86.



than now there is." Intercourse and interchange of thought and ideas between bodies, especially learned institutions, corresponds with intercourse and interchange of the same nature between individuals; and in both cases is not only useful, but essential to the cultivation, and advancement, and improvement of both the corresponding parties. Each not only derives wisdom from the other, but gains warning also.

A question may also be raised as to the most desirable local position for universities in any kingdom, whether in the metropolis, in the principal commercial towns, or in some retired rural districts remote from turmoil and excitement. Each of these situations, it must be admitted, possesses its peculiar advantages and disadvantages. If retired districts are most favourable to study, and, perhaps, to abstract speculation also; metropolitan and commercial districts are best calculated to develope energy, and to convert into active practical results the acquirements that have been conferred. The civilizing effect of such institutions upon metropolitan, commercial, and other large towns, must not, moreover, be lost sight of. Like art, they directly and extensively counteract the sordid effects of commerce and gain, and tend to refine and even ennoble pursuits of this kind. At all events, the metropolis of every kingdom should possess its university, not only for the reasons already mentioned,

but also on account of its accessibility to a large number, when so placed. The most desirable plan is, no doubt, to establish several universities, so as to have some in each of these positions, by which not merely will the combined advantages alluded to be in some way, to some extent, at all events, secured; but from the different character and turn of mind possessed by these different institutions, so variously located and acted upon, a wholesome rivalry will be created between them, as well as a beneficial intercommunion, very important and very efficient for the general furtherance of civilization.

As in the case of the National Church, so in the case of National Universities, those not actually belonging to them are extensively though but indirectly benefited by them, through the advantage which they confer on the nation generally, and also on particular members of society with whom they are connected. Considering, moreover, that universities are not only the springs but the wells of knowledge in every civilized country, it is the duty of the state to provide alike for their adequate maintenance and for their efficient regulation.

The establishment of public libraries in different districts throughout the kingdom, and to which ready access should be afforded for the people at large, would be a measure of essential importance for the promotion of civilization. Public libraries, to which the poorer classes of both sexes can

be admitted, either at a very low rate or absolutely free, should be set on foot not only in every town, but in every parish, and to which books ought to be supplied at the expense of the nation by the reprint of a selection of our most valuable standard works in each department of literature, including philosophy, theology, history, biography, zoology, poetry, and romance, excluding, of course, all works of an immoral or objectionable tendency. The series in question might be entitled the "Parochial Library Edition," and should be presented gratuitously to those institutions only, and not allowed to be sold, so as to interfere with the regular circulation and sale of these works. Such an effort as this would do much to promote and stimulate the progress of education throughout the country, while its cost would form but a small item in the sums annually but ineffectually dispensed out of the state coffers for the furtherance of this good cause. Books should be allowed to be taken out of these institutions for reading at home; and they ought to be of such a character as not only to be really useful, but so as to excite an actual interest in those for whose perusal they are intended. Allusion has already been made to the necessity of furnishing intellectual food of this nature to those who have received the rudiments of education, and to the duty of the government to supply works to libraries of this class. Such institutions, being in



reality for the general benefit of the state, should, as regards the establishment of them, be supported at the national expense, without relying on the chance liberality of particular districts; though, when they are once set on foot, it may fairly be left to those directly interested in them to further their progress.

Institutions of this kind are required, not, indeed, as a means of education, but in order to supply mental and moral food to those minds whose powers have been developed and brought into play, and by which they may be taught how to use the faculties they possess. The vine may be set in good soil, and may be watered with abundant care; but unless it be also properly trained and pruned after it has sprung up, it will run wild and produce but few grapes. So is it also with respect to the mind of man, both as an individual and as regards men in the aggregate. You must not only excite a wholesome appetite, but provide wholesome food. If proper study and diversion are not afforded to the awakened understanding, it will waste itself in vain and desultory pursuits, following not what is best adapted for it, but whatever may be accomplished with the least trouble; or it will be led to engage itself in vicious and deteriorating employments. The establishment, however, of institutions capable of supplying proper mental food, and by which that only of a healthful and advantageous

nature will be presented, affords at once ample and nutritious aliment to the developing intellect, and an encouragement to progress forward in the course of improvement.

III. Museums, containing specimens of natural productions of different kinds, are very valuable, not only as sources of instruction, but more especially as aids to libraries in communicating knowledge, and as contributing to illustrate and to explain much that books without them can but very imperfectly and tediously serve to teach. To some extent they supply the want of pictorial designs in books; and they also stimulate men to the use of libraries, as both libraries and museums stimulate persons to resort to education.

Galleries of works of art, containing choice and judiciously selected specimens in painting and sculpture, both ancient and modern, being models of their kind, should also be established, to which the public may have gratuitous access at all times, and which may both form and correct the national taste, and serve as studies for those whose genius leads them to the pursuit of these arts. But this is a subject which falls properly within the province of the next element appointed for our consideration, and which relates especially to art and science. Nevertheless, independent institutions for instruction in art and in science of different kinds, can hardly claim to be regarded as national esta-

blishments, so far as to entitle them to the support of the state, as, however beneficial they may be to those who resort to them, but comparatively few do so, and those for the purpose of learning a professional or practical calling, instruction in which each individual ought to provide for himself; though to a certain extent, so far as is necessary for the general instruction of the people, this will be supplied by the ordinary institutions for education. The National Academy, which is the art university of the nation, must, however, to some extent, form an exception to this rule, as serving to guide and correct the national taste in matters of this kind.

IV. Both on a nation and on an individual, the amusements in which they are wont to indulge as recreations, exercise nearly as much influence, both mentally and morally, as the studies or pursuits in which they are regularly engaged; more especially as the former, from their pleasurable nature, are ever ready to seize on and occupy the mind. National Institutions, therefore, for their promotion and regulation, are essential to every civilized state. The consideration of the civilizing effect of these amusements themselves, belongs more especially to another element of civilization, where their nature is particularly inquired into.\* We have here only to deal with the National Institutions established for their promotion.

These recreative occupations, indeed, both in-

\* Element VI.



fluence the regular pursuits of life, and are influenced by them. Public spectacles, more especially, which in every nation contribute more or less to the relaxation of the people, are always calculated to exercise a particular sway either for good or for bad. Even the assemblies for the purpose of business of great public bodies, produce a powerful effect in this respect. Of the various institutions, which both in ancient and modern times have been invented for the recreative entertainment of the people, those termed spectacular and theatrical exhibitions form the most comprehensive class, and are in their nature the most important. Under the head of the theatre may, however, be ranked the various kinds of public performances, in which art of each branch is availed of, to produce a spectacle for the instruction and amusement of the people. The theatre itself, indeed, if properly conducted, is one of the most influential and useful engines for public instruction, both intellectual and moral, and for promoting the civilization of a nation, that has ever been devised. Each of the arts is here not only availed of, but each in harmony together. Rhetoric, poetry, and music, lend their aid to give effect to one another; and sculpture and architecture also find place, and contribute to the entertainment. Refinement, history, morality, are all taught at once, and in a manner the most agreeable and the most forcible. Indeed, I know of no institution which under

proper regulations might be made so extensively influential and beneficial as the theatre. Surely, therefore, so great a moral engine as this, ought to be availed of as a National Institution ; and should be adopted by the state, and supported and controlled by the government of the country. The nature of its exhibitions might then be strictly regulated, and adapted to promote great moral ends, and the utmost rigour exercised in purging it of all obscene representations. Thus only can the “national drama” be fully and efficiently restored and supported.

A national theatre should of course be proportioned, as regards its size, to the extensiveness of the objects it aims to promote. The Greek and Roman theatres were capacious enough to accommodate the entire population of a city at each performance. Now, although it is on many accounts impossible for modern theatres to vie in this respect with those of old,—nor could any modern play be efficiently acted, either as regards seeing or hearing, in so large a building ;—yet if a deep impression on the mind of the people is to be created by theatrical performances, accommodation must necessarily be afforded for the generality of the people to witness them. And the greater is the concourse assembled on those occasions, the greater is the effect produced. The admission to the national theatre, though not actually gratuitous, should be so low as

to enable all to visit it who feel any real interest in such exhibitions, and who may be thus drawn away from entertainments of this nature where performances of a low and demoralizing tendency take place. The building itself appropriated for a national theatre, should of course be situate in the metropolis of the empire, and its size must to a certain extent correspond with the population of that city; forming a grand amphitheatre for the exhibition of dramatic art, and where musical festivals and public meetings might also be held.

The stage serves, probably, to reflect pretty generally and accurately, the character not only of the nation, but of the age of that nation from time to time, as whether frivolous or grave, romantic or dull, licentious or virtuous. The stage ought, however, instead of merely reflecting, to be corrective of the national character, and should lead and exalt, instead of following and often debasing the taste of the people. And this should be the grand purpose and aim, and the principle to be observed in the constitution of a national theatre.

The effect, indeed, that theatrical exhibitions will produce on the public mind, must, of course, necessarily depend on the nature and tendency of the particular performances exhibited, as whether mental or moral in their effect, or the reverse. Tragedy, and even comedy also, may be made extensively influential and beneficial. By them vice and crime



have been exposed and held up to odium in the most forcible manner ; and indeed, the most effective moral sermons emanate not from the pulpit, but from the stage. Popular absurdities and extravagancies are thus repressed, and abuses in the government forcibly exposed. The stage is, moreover, alike efficient in exalting virtue and in exposing vice ; in pointing out the qualities to be imitated, and those to be shunned. It is probably, also, really as useful in the former case as in the latter, although its operation there may not be so immediate or so apparent.

A great moral tragedy, such as are, indeed, the generality, if not the whole of Shakspeare's, and many others besides, is a sort of living sermon, which inculcates principles by example rather than by argument, and deters us from the commission of evil by portraying in the most forcible manner the consequences of crime. And if we admit that persons are much more apt to be influenced by pursuits which are agreeable to them, than by the dull career of business or duty ; and that precepts are far more readily imbibed from our own inferences, than from the stern and suspicious teaching of books of morality,—which is a truth of which every accurate and calm observer of human nature must be convinced ;—we shall at once allow the immense, and, indeed, unbounded influence of theatrical representations upon the national mind and morals.

Of all the institutions which conduce to the civilization of a nation, the theatre the most completely combines instruction with amusement, and cultivation with relaxation. To men of business, and to those harassed by abstruse or laborious pursuits, and who are little disposed or adapted for study, it affords a light, and agreeable, and exhilarating diversion, in a high degree tending to their refinement, and at the same time rendering them information. Of all the paths that lead to knowledge, this is the most alluring. The tree of knowledge is here seen to blossom and to bear fruit simultaneously. To some extent, indeed, though not for the purposes here alluded to, the theatre, as a public moral censor, has in modern times been almost superseded by the press. This, however, is as much owing to the retrogression of the theatre as to the advancement of the press. On the other hand, all representations of a cruel and debasing kind, whether on the stage or in other exhibitions, and of obscene characters and transactions, are in every way demoralizing and pernicious, and ought to be discouraged. They give a dignity to crime, and render the perpetrators of it objects rather of interest than of execration.

Theatrical exhibitions, therefore, exercise a far more powerful influence on the mind and morals, and civilization of a nation, than would at first be imagined. The feelings of the people are actively excited while witnessing these spectacles, and the

remembrance of them is long and vividly retained, and becomes the subject of constant reflection and conversation, by which their influence is disseminated yet further.

The genius of the English nation in particular, is essentially, and to a large extent, of a theatrical tendency. The greatest tragical writer who ever lived, was a native of this country; and though the theatre, from certain causes, does not now flourish among us as might be expected, yet we see the theatrical taste and turn of the national mind constantly displaying itself in the popular theatrical style of its oratory, not only in its public assemblies but in the pulpit, as also in the senate, and at the bar. This romantic theatrical bias of the national mind is yet further evinced in the literature of the day, of which novels and imaginative stories form so large a proportion. The real spirit and taste of a people are indeed exhibited much more correctly by the spontaneous development of character in this form, than even by the zealous support of the proper and appointed exhibitions for theatrical display. Nevertheless, it is most desirable on every account that a legitimate channel should be afforded in which the strong current of national genius may run freely. If theatrical taste and talent are not permitted to develope themselves in their proper sphere, on the stage, they will exhibit their powers in places where their very appearance is not



only out of place, but pernicious. Natural and national genius, though you may repress, you cannot extinguish them. If inflammation in the human body be subdued in the limbs, it will fly to the vitals; and in the latter it will prove fatal, where in the former it might have been harmless, if not even ultimately beneficial.

Unfortunately, indeed, for the character of the theatre, and its popularity as a national institution, it is placed as it were between three several fires or opposing interests. Certain religiously disposed persons condemn it unsparingly, on account of the immoral practices with which it has been associated, and which are very unfairly looked upon not as the abuse of, but as necessarily connected with the institution itself. The violators of morality and decorum, on the other hand, abhor it because in its exhibitions it exposes and denounces the vices which they pursue. Those great enemies to true religion and morality, the fanatics and hypocrites, are ever forward in condemning it, and are its natural persecutors, because their absurdities and inconsistencies afford abundant and legitimate matter for choice satire in its exhibitions. Each of these three parties, although differing on almost every other subject, coalesce here for the purpose of destroying an institution whose legitimate object is to uphold religion and to protect morality.

If, indeed, hypocrisy and false pretence are the

offences which most directly tend to the subversion of true religion, it cannot be denied that one of the most valuable results of the theatre has been the exposing, in an efficient and forcible manner, these detestable vices. But, as the participators in these delinquencies are apt to be both more numerous, and also more noisy, than the sincere followers of religion, who are ordinarily unostentatious and unobtrusive; so, from the former, have the principal invectives against the stage proceeded, to whom it is, doubtless, a natural, an implacable, and, perhaps, the only efficient foe. But these are a moral vermin, infesting religion, which it is essential to exterminate, both for the sake of religion itself, and for that of the nation in which it is professed.

Nothing can be more unfair or more unreasonable, than to condemn either the theatre, or any other institution, on account of abuses which have crept into its management, but which have no necessary connection whatever with its constitution. If licentious performances, or licentious performers, have been tolerated in them, the sooner that these are expelled, the better; but do not on this account destroy the institution itself, which may have been to some extent, though only temporarily, polluted by their presence. Persons of loose character, or from improper motives, may be attracted to a theatre, as to any other place of amusement, or of business, or even of public worship. Their appearance,

however, does not, necessarily, destroy, or even affect the general character of the assembly. The absolute and extreme injustice, moreover, of stigmatizing the theatre as that institution which alone is liable to promote an improper intercourse between the sexes, from the circumstance of its entertainments taking place after sunset, and those of both sexes being there brought together in a large concourse ; has of late years been very strikingly exposed by showing that in churches and chapels where divine service is celebrated in an evening, exactly the same evil consequences are found to ensue. If, therefore, the theatre is to be condemned on this account, public worship must also, necessarily, be condemned along with it. But if, on the other hand, the celebration of public worship suffers nothing on this account, it is surely unjust and unreasonable to censure the theatre from the same cause.

It sometimes happens, especially with regard to institutions and subjects of a high moral order, that the greater is the value of the proper use of a thing, in an equal proportion is the extent of the evil produced by its abuse. Thus has it been with many religious institutions, and thus has it been also with the theatre. The latter, indeed, was in its origin a religious institution, and was devoted to religious purposes, though now regarded by some as that peculiarly from whence religion is especially excluded, and which mainly contributes to minister



to vice. How great are the mutations occasioned in civil as well as physical bodies by their corruption ! The most useful and salutary become the most pernicious and offensive. But surely the abuse of any institution can afford no substantial argument for its disuse ; more especially when a remedy is at hand for restoring it to its originally beneficent and pure condition. Indeed, one very bad consequence which must necessarily ensue from people of high moral feeling and intellectual cultivation, abandoning the theatre, and leaving it to the support and patronage of those who are of an opposite character in both respects ; is that the tone of the theatre itself will become lowered to suit the taste of its patrons of the latter class ; and thus, instead of being one of the main elements which conduce to the cultivation and moral advancement and civilization of the nation, it will be made the engine so far, by being perverted, for its debasement. What would be the result, if, because some books are of an evil tendency, those of enlightened minds and pure morals were to refuse to purchase all books whatsoever. Our literature must, in such a case, in time become speedily depraved, and would adopt eventually the degenerate tone and taste of that class of persons who alone remain its patrons. The capacity of the theatre, on the one hand, to promote those great and beneficent ends which have already been alluded to, and its present low con-

dition so unworthy of it, on the other, alike conduce to prove the expediency of restoring and reforming it, which can only be done fully and effectually by adopting, and recognizing, and controlling it as a National Institution. How extensively and how beneficially this may be effected, the efforts in this direction which during the last few years have been made by some noble-minded individuals connected with certain of our theatres, sufficiently attest.

---

## II.—NATIONAL CULTIVATION OF ART AND SCIENCE.

The element of Civilization most immediately connected with those which have already been discussed, and which seems to follow in natural order after that of "Instructory Institutions," is the "National Cultivation of Art and Science" in any country, to which therefore our consideration must now be directed.

The arts of each kind exercise a direct and an extensive influence both on individuals and on nations; and are essential to each for the perfect attainment of civilization, and the elevation and refinement of the mind. Science is not less important for the advancement of civilization, though the operation and effect of the two in this respect are very different. Art is mainly mental and moral.

as regards the influence which it exercises. Science, on the other hand, is in its nature principally manual, inasmuch as it supplies professional or manual employment both to those who cultivate it, and to those engaged in various undertakings, who are aided by its operations, which is more or less, either directly or indirectly, the case with the followers of nearly every trade and profession carried on in a civilized country. Science is, nevertheless, also mental as well as manual, so far as regards the important exercise and aid that it affords to the intellectual faculties of all those by whom it is studied.

The influence of both art and science in relation to their effect on the mind of the nation, is reciprocated by the effect of the mind of the nation upon them. They influence in an important manner the tastes, and feelings, and opinions of the people; and the tastes, and feelings, and opinions of the people in turn influence and modulate the former. In most instances, indeed, the condition of art and science is largely affected, if not mainly produced, by the condition of the public mind, and springs principally from this source; though in its turn it correspondingly influences the public mind. Thus is it also with regard to legislation, which is more frequently directed by the state of public feeling and the character of a nation, than it is able to direct them. The character of the public mind is,



moreover, reflected by the pursuits which engross the attention of the people, which appear to be striving here to take the lead, while in reality they only follow.

Some difficulty may occasionally be experienced in the correct and distinct classification of particular pursuits; and it may be doubtful whether some studies belong to art or to science, and whether certain others can be properly considered as appertaining to either class. In many branches of manufacture, both art and science are employed. Language belongs as much to art as to science, and is equally regulated by, and applicable to both alike.

It might perhaps be contended that language forms a distinct and independent element of civilization, and that it ought to be so considered. Language, however, is not of itself an element of civilization, but only a constituent in one of its elements. It can do nothing independently, to promote civilization; but as a vehicle in the exercise of art, both as regards poetry and eloquence, and as aiding the elements of intercourse both between those of the same country, and between different nations, it is most important.

Under the term Art, is here comprehended not only the fine arts of painting, poetry, sculpture, rhetoric, music, and architecture, but whatever else contributes to the refinement and convenience

of life, and is ornamental, as distinguished from actual necessities.

By the term science, is here meant not only experimental philosophy, but all knowledge whereby we are enabled to deal with physical subjects, and to render them applicable to the uses of life. Considered in this light, medicine, and the pursuits which are adjunctive and auxiliary to it, must, among the sciences which are necessary to the well-being of society, and also to the civilization of a nation, be ranked very high. Science is, moreover, in a great measure the foundation of commerce. By science we are enabled to avail ourselves to the utmost of the resources of the country; and according to our extent in the possession of this knowledge, we are in reality nationally richer. Science also unites with art in adding to the conveniences as well as to the necessities of life, as in the case of dress, which is indebted as much to the one as to the other for ornament. In this respect, the costume of a country is to a large extent a test of its condition in civilization; though on the other hand this may exist in considerable splendour, as in Persia and China, where civilization is at a low ebb; because, though art and science are essential to the civilization of a country, they are not the only elements for this purpose. Nevertheless, of all the arts, that of dress or costume, if not the most influential in itself, is probably that

whose influence is the most felt, and which operates more directly upon the people at large, who all more or less pay attention to it, however they neglect or may be indifferent to the higher and nobler branches of art. On dress or costume, too, the other arts exercise an important influence, and it, in its turn, extensively influences them.

Science further indirectly aids the cause of civilization, by supplying mechanical power for use in manufactures, in the case of machinery and other efforts requiring great force for setting them in operation. In two distinct and independent modes, this conduces to civilization. It aids the production of various articles of commerce, and in many cases it also adds to the superiority of their quality. On the other hand, in all the varieties of manufacture, art should not only minister to their adornment and improvement, but should serve to carry refinement, taste, and elegance into each department of practical life. Science also aids the cause of civilization by preventing the necessity for employing human power in the most servile works. The ancients used their slaves for the latter purpose, who supplied the want of mechanical power. The moral effect of employing human labour, whether free or slave, is necessarily debasing. To some extent even compelling animals to perform it, where this is attended with pain or great labour, is brutalizing to the mind from its barbarity. Science



happily has extensively relieved us from the necessity of resorting to such means.

Both art and science, therefore, being so important and so influential, are worthy of national patronage and support, not so much to preserve them from neglect, as to secure the cultivation and application of them being carried on in the most efficient and advantageous manner. This is a matter of too much consequence to be trusted to mere chance or individual caprice ; while the state, being mainly interested in its due performance, is the most proper patron of art and science.

The arts, more especially those of music, poetry, and painting, as regards their effect and power in the refinement and elevation of the mind, seem to impart a kind of natural inspiration. They are adapted essentially to aid the operation of religion, and, in conjunction with it, to exalt the intellectual powers over the sensual and animal feelings and propensities, and to afford to the soul the most pure and ecstatic enjoyments. Nor are their effects less extensive or important on a nation than on an individual, as regards its cultivation and civilization. In one respect more particularly, the arts of painting and poetry especially, are capable of exercising a deep-felt influence, in the opportunities which they offer of duly representing, celebrating, and commemorating those characters and events which are of the greatest worth and dignity, and which

have contributed most to the glory of the nation. The general condition, and also the peculiar character of the arts pursued in any country, affords, moreover, the surest indication of those of the state, especially as regards its mental and moral advancement. The arts both reflect with the utmost precision and clearness the mental condition, and tastes, and feelings, and habits, and tone of thought of the nation, and these qualities are in turn reflected by and influence the arts. The most barbarous tribes have hardly ever, if in any case, been found entirely destitute of all knowledge of art, especially of the rudiments of poetry, music, painting, and sculpture, and also costume and architecture. Many of these arts have indeed been to a certain extent connected with, and have both influenced and been influenced by religion. To the study of the arts of painting and sculpture, so attractive in itself, the attention of the people will be naturally turned; and the establishment of public galleries containing choice specimens of works of this nature, affords them an opportunity of cultivating their taste in this respect, and both promotes a love of art, and refines and improves the national mind and taste.

An acquaintance with the rudiments of pictorial art is, indeed, generally advantageous. A knowledge of drawing, especially, is useful to every one. One very powerful, though perhaps indirect, mode, in which this art contributes to the refinement of

each individual, as also to the general civilization of mankind, is by the effect that it produces in leading those who are imbued with its principles to the observation and admiration of nature, to love whatever is pure, and beautiful, and ennobling in her, and to engage and delight in the pleasures of taste, which draw off the mind from all sensual pursuits, and exalt it to the sublimest contemplations. An occupation of this kind not only creates a new source of enjoyment and recreation in the capacity for admiring nature that it affords, but is practically useful also, as already pointed out, in many manual operations and commercial enterprises. The value of the art of design in pictorial illustration is, moreover, every day exhibited.

Aristotle, in the fifth book of his *Politics*, refers to the efficacy of music in moral discipline, and its important use to "promote moral improvement, refine the sentiments, and exalt the character." This is an art, moreover, which may be cultivated by all classes alike, and by which all alike are influenced.

The general effect of music, both upon an individual and upon a nation, is to raise and refine the mind and taste, and to purify the pursuits, in all these respects directly and powerfully contributing to their civilization. Nevertheless, the character of the influence which music in any case exercises, whether upon a people or upon a person, must,



necessarily, to a large extent correspond with that of the music itself. Such music should, therefore, be provided for the general entertainment of the public as will most tend at once to refine and ennoble their minds, and as is best adapted to suit both their tastes and their capacities. Of all music, sacred music is doubtless by far the most ennobling and the most influential.

Whether, on Sunday evenings, concerts of sacred music, to which the public of all classes should be admitted gratuitously, might not with great advantage be opened, and which could be held in some of our large public buildings, may reasonably be demanded. By this means many would not only be drawn away from places of licentious amusement, but religious impressions could not fail to be inculcated, independent of the ennobling, and refining, and civilizing effect of such performances.

The national poetry of a country is ever of the greatest importance as regards its civilization. The influence of this is exercised in two distinct modes, quite independent of each other:—1. With regard to the sentiments and principles which it serves to inculcate, as in the case of the noble spirit of nationality induced by the Jewish poetry, and the ancient national traditions preserved by the Scotch. 2. As leading to the popular cultivation of one of the most important branches of the arts. If, however, poetry in general is influential in this

respect, most especially so is religious poetry, which has the strongest hold on the feelings, aspires so high, and in every country forms the most important and most sublime branch of this art. But of all religious poetry, that which is of most extensive consequence as regards its popular diffusion and influence, and which is calculated to produce the greatest effects in relation to the civilization of a people, is the devotional poetry which is adapted for congregational melody, and which will be in the mouths, and animate the feelings of all. The Common Prayer-book of the Church of England, exhibits an extraordinary union of the most eloquent prose, with the most prosaic verse,—the most elegant of unrhymed compositions, with the most unpoetical rhymes. Thus, while the prayers are composed in language of the highest and purest rhetorical, as well as devotional excellence; and the Psalms and appointed portions of Scripture which are translated into prose seem to show how little real poetry is dependent for its beauty on measured rhyme;—the authorized version of the same Psalms appear as though almost designed to prove incontestably how possible it is for rhyme of every variety, and on the loftiest topics, to be composed without possessing any other element of poetry than its form, and the noble themes to which it is devoted;—an inert body without the spirit of life; the shape of the intellectual man, but devoid of the soul which

mainly distinguishes him. The extreme poverty of our authorized devotional poetry, cannot but be regarded as a great bar to the refinement and civilization of the lower classes, whose notions of what poetry is and ought to be, are principally derived from the productions of Tate and Brady, and Sternhold and Hopkins. This, moreover, has given a low and degenerate tone to congregational melody in general. Sternhold and Hopkins might, in the minds of reasonable and moderate men, be supposed to have reached the lowest point attainable in the degradation of the sacred muse. But unhappy and later experience has proved that there was yet a profounder depth in the abyss which modern rhymers have successfully attempted to reach. In the older versions alluded to, there are, indeed, choice passages here and there of real poetry and genius, which serve to redeem the mass from absolute imbecility. In the modern effusions, however, one monotonous style of insipidity and poverty pervades the whole performance. It would almost seem, indeed, as though in the composition of these unattractive rhymes, a minute calculation had first been made as to what are the essential elements and characteristics of the sublime productions of the sweet psalmist of Israel, and of other corresponding poetic devotional pieces in Holy Scripture; and that, when this was effected, a deliberate and strenuous effort had been made to compose something as opposite



to them as possible, particular care being taken to exclude every merit and beauty in the way of either feeling or poetry, by which they are distinguished. It appears, in fact, to be an established canon with some people, the orthodoxy of which it is heresy to dispute, that poetry, in order to be truly devotional, must be thoroughly doggrel.

Most unfortunate is it that the only samples of religious poetry possessed by the bulk of the people of this country, should be of this low and mean character, which are not calculated to produce any of the grand, and powerful, and ennobling results for which poetry of a genuine order is peculiarly capacitated. It is only from the existence of these authorized barbarities, that the apparent confusion in the minds of many rational people of education can be accounted for, as to there being no distinction between mere versification and poetry. On the other hand, the hymns and versions of the psalms by Addison, Pope, Heber, Keble, Cowper, Burns, and certain other of our genuine poets, afford full proof how capable sacred poetry in our language is of attaining the sweetest and the sublimest strains. How desirable does it appear that an authorized version of the Psalms, selected from these and other productions of sterling merit, should be prepared, and should be adopted for uniform use!

The erection of national monuments to the memory of individuals, who by their works or their

virtues have conferred benefit or honour on their country, or on mankind, or in order to commemorate important public events, are means by which the arts of sculpture and architecture produce the most influential moral effects. These mementoes excite a laudable admiration for the good deeds which they celebrate, and testify the national respect entertained for the performers. Public monuments, moreover, give a character to a nation, and record the existence of what are in reality its noblest treasure,—the great men who have adorned it. They much influence the genius of a people, and in their turn exhibit the national feeling and genius. Indeed, the moral effect of these erections, both in ancient and modern times, has been made obvious; nor is this the less certain because, in our day, the shallow, utilitarian, and unphilosophical spirit of some, has led them to despise this mode of honouring the names of the illustrious great; and instead of raising a statue to perpetuate at once the remembrance both of the person and the performances of the individual who has entitled himself to our gratitude, his actions are sought to be commemorated by the establishment of an institution which may be wholly unconnected with the subject of his labours, and the influence of which is not national, but confined only to a limited number; and whose advantages, if real,—instead of imaginary, as is but too often the case,—are applicable to the phy-

sical wants of a few, instead of influencing the mental and moral condition of all. A monument, on the other hand, when efficiently executed, not only best perpetuates the memory of the person represented, and publicly records his good deeds; but appeals continually to the national mind, and animates all posterity to walk in his steps. In this country, indeed, it must be acknowledged that national monuments have not been raised with any regard to the merits or eminence of the persons so honoured; and that while some have been duly thus celebrated, others of equal or less renown have been wholly neglected. Thus, to neither Bacon, Newton, Locke, nor Milton, four of our greatest names, have any national monuments been erected. Burghley, Walpole, and Burke,\* so eminent among statesmen; Somers and Hardwicke, so great among lawyers; Chaucer, Spenser, Pope, and Wordsworth, such distinguished poets; Harvey and Hunter, who did so much to advance medical science; are all similarly neglected. Nor is it any excuse to say that these great men by their deeds have raised monuments more imperishable than those of brass or marble; for if the moral effects of

\* Since these pages were originally written, a partial atonement has, indeed, been made for this neglect by placing the statues of some of these great men in the vestibule leading to the Houses of Parliament. This is, however, but a very small instalment of the heavy national debt of justice due to our departed worthies of each class.



national monuments are to be acknowledged at all, the neglect to erect them in such cases as these must be correspondingly felt. On the other hand, the number and profusion of public monuments, the large proportion of them to individuals of little note or merit, greatly destroy the effect, and mar the object of these tokens. Not to chance, nor to individual favour or caprice, but to the declared opinion of the nation, it should be left to decide when and to whom these trophies should be rendered: and the design and aim of which should be, not to raise out of their natural and appropriate insignificance those who were obscure while living; but to maintain among us in all their fame and glory, the memory of those of genius and worth when they are departed.

Monuments are, as it were, the shadows of the great men whom they are intended to commemorate. By their means we retain the remembrance, although we have lost the presence, of the departed; and we preserve something of their influence, though they themselves have long since left us.

The essential advantage in regard to civilization, arising from the national veneration paid to heroes and great men, results from the stimulus which it excites to emulate their virtues, and to shun all those vices which are opposed to the latter, and by which lustre like theirs would be tarnished. The use of monuments in this respect is twofold:—1. To

preserve the memory of those great men to whom they are erected, and of their virtues also. 2. To testify the regard of the nation for those great men, and for the virtues which they displayed. In both these respects, they are extensively and directly conducive to civilization; and are calculated to carry it to the highest point.

Our great poet Wordsworth, in two of his letters,\* expresses his opinion that eminent poets, less than any other persons, stand in need of such marks of distinction, inasmuch as their works serve to raise more imperishable monuments to their memories than could be effected by any statues of brass or marble. He also objects to tributes to genius of this nature, as calculated to draw off attention from its claims of a more solid kind. Poets who have been cut off in early youth, before they had the opportunity of achieving for themselves lasting fame, ought, however, he considers, to be commemorated by a monument. And heroes who perished in battle should be honoured with these mementoes, because "their noble actions cannot speak for themselves as the writings of men of genius are able to do." Gratitude towards them, he thinks, ought to be publicly manifested. For statesmen, lawyers, and divines, and those who have devoted themselves to abstruse science, he deems

\* Life of William Wordsworth, by Rev. Dr. Wordsworth, vol. ii. pp. 88, 91.

monuments to be apt tributes, but not for men of genius, especially poets.

Here, however, it appears to me that our excellent poet has fallen into a double error ; in the first place, as regarding monuments to be of a memorial nature only, as calculated merely to keep alive the memory of the departed : whereas their real object is not so much to perpetuate his memory, which he himself has already rendered imperishable, as to perpetuate the remembrance of the homage paid to him by his contemporaries. And, in the next place, the object of the monument is not so much to benefit, or even to add to the glory of him to whom it is raised, as it is to benefit the public at large, by the moral effect which it may produce upon them, by evincing the national homage which is paid to virtue, to genius, and to enterprise. At all events, in each case, the keeping alive the memory of the departed, is but one object only out of several, in raising a monument ; and of these several objects, it is that which is the least valuable, and the least important. In addition to this, it may be observed, that it will generally happen that the more deserving any particular person is of having a monument erected to his memory, if the perpetuation of his remembrance and fame only are aimed at, by so much the less will he stand in need of it. On the other hand, just in proportion as the erection of a monument



is but little needed by himself for securing this object, the more desirable is its erection on account of the moral effects, already alluded to, which such a tribute is capable of producing.

That renowned emperor, and really great man, Napoleon I., who was the highest authority on such a subject, observed with regard to monuments, that "it should be left to after-ages to construct them, when the good opinion conceived of the heroes is confirmed."\* But here I must be permitted to remark, that those whose fame is so great and so extensive in after-ages as to secure a monument being raised to them by posterity, least of all stand in need of a monument, their own good deeds alone sufficing to secure their honourable remembrance. There are, however, many persons of considerable worth and merit, for whom posterity may care but little, but who well deserve a monument to their memory, and whose achievements are especially of that nature to require to be so recorded, and to render it desirable that they should be thus kept in remembrance. A monument should moreover serve, not only as a memorial of the dead, but as a record of the respect entertained for him while living, by those who were contemporary with him, and which posterity is unable to afford. The opinion of posterity, as being the most impartial, is the most valuable respecting the merits of a great man,

\* Au Conseil de la Seine.

concerning whom his contemporaries may, and generally do, entertain prejudices in one direction or another. But it is rather as a tribunal of appeal than as an original court of judicature, that the sentence of posterity is mainly to be regarded. Posterity, moreover, are seldom sufficiently connected with, or interested about a man, to care to raise a monument to his memory.

Some persons have even gone so far as to contend that a national monument ought not to be capable of practical utility in any way, on the ground that it should be a sacrifice of so much in value as it costs, by the public, as a tribute to the individual so honoured. But without either adopting or repudiating the principle referred to, I would observe that, even here, what the public loses in money it gains in moral effect. The results produced by a striking monument, suitably placed, are far more efficient than any which could be caused by the most serviceable substitute for it of a practical nature that might be found.

The erection of national monuments has, however, no necessary connection with or dependence upon art, inasmuch as memorials of this description, in all respects perfectly efficient, may be raised, which are quite devoid of all pretensions to artistical merit, and of all claims to belong to works of that class; as in the case of a plain pillar or column, which may have been put up to com-

memorate either a particular event or a particular person. Indeed, many monuments of this kind, instead of being ornaments, are gross disfigurements to the neighbourhood in which they stand, and of which it would not be difficult to cite some striking examples. It ought, however, to be so arranged that the merit of the monument as a work of art shall add lustre to the object for which it was raised; while, on the other hand, the dignity of its object adds to its importance as an artistical performance.

Memorials to perpetuate the remembrance of great men may also be obtained, as already observed, by the establishment of a particular institution, or charitable, or literary fund, to which the name of the departed may be attached. But this, for the reasons already assigned, appears to be a less legitimate and less efficient mode of recording their memory than the erection of suitable statues.

One very ready, economical, and impressive mode of honouring the memories of great men, is by calling streets and different parts of a town after their names, by which an importance is given to them, and their remembrance is respected and cherished. In choosing names for new streets, it does, indeed, seem to be an omission, and is a loss of opportunity, not always to give them designations which are either commemorative of some contemporary event, or memorial of some of the great men of the time.



The public national edifices in every country, not only admit of being, but should be properly, in each case, raised and decorated according to the correct principles of art. Indeed, they should not merely be erected with becoming dignity and grandeur, but should have a distinct individual and appropriate form and character of their own, according to the purposes they are intended to serve; and they should be adapted duly to influence and to be prized by the people whose property they are.

Both art and science are, however, applicable not only to public but to private buildings; and when generally cultivated, and blended together, as they ever ought to be, they are calculated to promote the improvement of the dwellings of all classes, both as regards ornament and convenience. Art, indeed, is capable of contributing directly and extensively to the promotion of civilization, through the opportunity which it affords to the people for erecting and decorating their habitations, both externally and internally, with due regard to taste and beauty, so as to combine comfort with convenience, and refinement with utility. Hence the whole design of the building is so formed as to render it an object of pleasure as well as of use, and the furniture and domestic articles are constructed upon the same principle. From the mind being constantly accustomed to the contemplation of beauty, and order, and regularity in each object

around it, even in those for the commonest domestic purposes,—which is but strictly according to the economy that nature has arranged, where beauty in each case is combined with utility,—it becomes habituated not only to delight in such objects, but it learns to abhor and shun whatever is rude, and barbarous, and distasteful. Art and science may here mutually aid the efforts of each other, and may also mutually correct the deficiencies to which the other conduces.

Even in the construction of edifices intended only for commercial purposes, due attention should be paid to their being erected with the taste, and with the regard to architectural propriety, that the nature of the building allows. The sordid spirit which is apt to be generated here, ought not to be harmonized with,—as appears to be the object in our day of mercantile edifices,—but to be corrected and counteracted. Napoleon, whose great mind well understood the requirements of a nation, magnanimously declared,—“The market-place is the Louvre of the common people.” They should enjoy in such a place, not only the conveniences of commerce, but the social refinements of civilization.

It seems also to be both just and politic to require of all persons who erect buildings in conspicuous situations, especially those of a national description, as for instance bridges, viaducts, and public offices of any kind, that they should be of

such form and appearance as not to disfigure the country, or prove unsightly and displeasing to those who pass by them. The nation ought, surely, to be fully protected in its enjoyment of the gifts of Nature, among which the beauties of scenery are the most delightful, elevating, and refining. And if we rigidly enact laws against any offence of the organs of smelling, or hearing, or feeling; why should we not equally guard against the annoyance of the far higher sense of sight, the disagreeable affection of which is as injurious to our intellectual and moral, as that of the others is to our material being?

Of all the arts for popular cultivation in a nation, especially in its rural districts, that of ornamental gardening is one which is particularly adapted for the working classes, and which, as an occupation, is at once physically healthful, and mentally and even morally refining. The contemplation of nature has ever a civilizing effect; and the study of flowers, where her beauties and tasteful charms are peculiarly exhibited, is at once purifying to the feelings and improving to the mind. To those employed in artistical manufactures, such delightful studies are directly manually useful. Public walks and gardens to which the people may have free resort, and which are tastefully laid out according to the principles of this art, have also a powerfully civilizing influence upon the people of every nation, and that in a variety of ways.



It is essential, therefore, as already observed, that some provision should be made by the state for the due encouragement and support of the arts of each kind, as also of literature in general. The extensive cultivation and high perfection of art is, moreover, not only no contributor to, much less a proof of luxury, or of the decline of civilization in any country ; but, on the contrary, luxury is as inimical to art in its highest state, as it is to civilization ; and the decline of art is invariably contemporary with, if not in every instance the cause of the decline of the latter. But the object of state patronage should not be to supply the place of private munificence, or of public encouragement of the arts, on which they must mainly rely, and by which alone is the influence of the arts shown to be felt and valued by the nation ; but the patronage, and, indeed, the interference in any case of the state, is chiefly required here for two purposes :—

1. To correct the public taste, and to direct it in that channel which is nationally most improving and valuable.
2. To afford encouragement to those works, both in art and literature, which are of real importance to the public, but which private patronage may be insufficient to secure.

These performances deserve, therefore, to be nationally encouraged. Not only, however, should the state render its support here, but its rulers individually ought to exert themselves to promote, and patronize, and

encourage men of genius and of learning, which they should do, not merely as private persons, but as public men. This system ought, moreover, not only to be followed in the dispensation of patronage, but to be incorporated with it.

The state should, however, not merely promote the cultivation of art as regards the higher branches of this pursuit, but should make exertions to induce the people generally to pay attention to it, by which alone can civilization through this means be extensively advanced among them. If the government would undertake the expense, which would be but trifling, of issuing engravings, either plain or coloured, suitably executed, of works of art of high merit, illustrative both of scriptural and of profane history, which might serve for distribution by the clergy, or other persons, among the people generally, or be supplied to them at a very cheap rate, and which they could hang up in their houses; a vast deal would be at once effected, not only towards the popular cultivation of art, but in the promotion also of popular Education, and the extension of Religious Influence.

Considering also the importance, and the extensively beneficial and civilizing influence of music, upon the population of any nation; it is equally the duty of the state to supply this, on certain occasions, for the general benefit of the people, as also to furnish them with other sources of desi-

rable and improving recreation. This, too, may be done at a very small expense in comparison with the good resulting from it. On festive days, more especially, should musical performances be introduced. There is this great advantage, moreover, in the state thus aiding in the dissemination of art of different kinds; that thereby not only is the civilization of the nation promoted through the influence of art, but it is still further advanced by the aid and patronage which the art in question thus receives.

Nevertheless, the arts, like the various elements of civilization, and like civilization itself, are liable to degenerate and decay. They require to be united with other pursuits, and especially with the different elements of civilization. They are too refining and enervating when followed alone, not only on their devotees, but on themselves. It is therefore desirable that they should be blended with other occupations, both for the sake of themselves and for the sake of civilization, in the promotion and perfection of which they form so important an element. Followed exclusively, they are calculated too much not only to render effeminate a nation, but to call off attention from more invigorating pursuits.

That pursuit with which the arts are best adapted to be blended, is science. In every nation, genius of each kind has displayed itself about the same



time, in arts, in science, and in arms.\* Art is corrective of science, refines its followers, and renders tasteful its operations; and so far from being superseded by, it is at the present period more than ever essential for these ends. Science, on the other hand, improves art, and renders it applicable for all the purposes of life.

Science being in most cases manually practical, is less dependent on state patronage than is art. Yet this is requisite, especially for two objects:—  
 1. To aid the originators of new inventions in science, which may be of great ultimate value to the public, but which the discoverers may not be able to afford, or which it may not be worth their while to perfect. 2. To encourage experiments in science, which those practically engaged in them may not have the means, or ability, or leisure to carry out; but which it may be of the highest and most essential importance to the state to complete.

---

#### V.—LIBERTY OF THE PRESS, AND TOLERATION.

That element of civilization which I have designated by the general name of “Liberty of the Press, and Toleration,” in which is included the right of free thought and speech upon all questions, whether political, moral, or religious; demands next

\* Gibbon's ‘Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire.’

to be considered, both on account of its connection alike with the preceding elements of Religious Influence and Instructorial Institutions, as also because the principles which regulate it have reference to a portion of the subject-matter in those elements which are to follow, and require, consequently, to be laid down and determined before entering upon the discussion of the latter.

The element now under consideration, is as essential for the complete civilization of a state as, and in a manner corresponding with that in which the free exercise of his judgment is essential for the perfect education of the man.

There is, however, this difference observable in the nature of the element now before us, as distinguished from those which have already been considered, and those which follow; that it is entirely of a negative kind, consisting not in the provision of certain aids or institutions necessary to civilization, but in the prohibition of certain acts or proceedings to which the people in each country, of whatever party or opinion, are naturally prone, and from which they require to be restrained, in order that that entire freedom of thought, and of intellectual and moral action, may be preserved, which is so essentially conducive to a perfect, and, indeed, to a high condition of civilization. Restraint of liberty of one kind, is here resorted to, only in order to ensure the possession and exercise of liberty of another kind, in a manner the most complete.

Liberty and restraint are, indeed, hardly ever found in an entirely pure condition, the one, although it is its exact converse, being generally more or less mixed with the other, and in many cases the admixture greatly contributing, if not actually essential to its complete vigour. Liberty unchecked by any restraint, often ends in tyranny. Restraints on liberty are somewhat like rudders to ships: they may in certain instances impede the rapidity of their progress, but in all cases they promote the safety of the passage. Those restraints only which are in no respect either directly or indirectly conducive to liberty, are absolutely intolerable, and ought ever to be resisted as entirely opposed to freedom.

Civil liberty, which is the right that every individual possesses of acting as he thinks proper, except so far only as by so doing he may inflict an injury or wrong on some other member of the society to which he belongs, is of two kinds:—1. Physical liberty, or the right of performing such corporeal actions as the individual wills, subject to the foregoing restraint, which is imposed by the state for the benefit and protection of all the other members of the community. 2. Intellectual liberty, or the right of exercising his mental powers, and of applying them in such manner and for such purposes as he chooses, subject also to the restraint already described.



Physical slavery produces results of two opposite natures, both as regards those who exercise it towards others, and those who suffer from it themselves. Thus, while the domination over inferiors is of itself directly debasing to the mind, the compelling them to do the drudgery of life both relieves those who are thus freed from it from all occupations of this kind, and allows them full leisure for refining and civilizing pursuits; so that some persons have even supposed that the existence of slavery in a state is actually essential to its citizens attaining any very high or perfect condition, either of liberty or of civilization. On the other hand, those who endure slavery, are debased in mind by this degradation, and by the servile services which they have to undergo; though, at the same time, this very hardship itself tends to soften and moderate many of those passions and feelings which are most opposed to civilization; and the condition itself is often one of less barbarity and ignorance than that in which the subjects of it were before their captivity. On the whole, however, it cannot be doubted that physical, as well as intellectual and moral liberty, in every nation, is highly conducive to civilization. Intellectual and moral slavery, when the mind is subjected to arbitrary rule, and is no longer free to exercise itself at its will, is the most grievous of all states; and to guard against this is the

main object of the element of civilization before us. It is consequently with intellectual and moral liberty, which is the opposite, and the antidote to this condition, that we have alone here to do, as immediately connected with the subject of civilization. This is, indeed, the most valuable kind of liberty, and it is principally of two kinds:—1. Liberty of thinking, speaking, and writing concerning matters of state, and of discussing freely the laws and institutions of the country. 2. Liberty of thinking, speaking, and writing concerning matters of religion, and of discussing freely its doctrines and tenets. The two grand civil regulations which in every free and civilized state mainly conduce to establish these high privileges, are those that come under the general terms of Liberty of the Press, and Toleration.

There can be no doubt, indeed, that liberty, even in the abstract, considered by itself independently, operates as a great stimulus to education and to civilization generally; as a state of servility is, on the other hand, a severe check upon their advancement. Nor can it be denied that liberty is more extensive, and certainly more varied, in a condition of civilization than in one of barbarism. For although in the former state many restraints are imposed, yet these are imposed only for the sake of securing still greater liberty as the price of them, and as the final result. Restraint is thus made the

parent of liberty, and out of every curtailment of our freedom, fresh freedom springs. Moreover, unless a people possess liberty of action, they will not properly qualify themselves to act. Of all the different kinds of freedom, freedom of thought and speech are not only the most precious, but these both lay the foundation for, and promote the security of every other sort of freedom. Consequently, when this liberty is restricted, education is deprived of half the incentives to its progress. If, indeed, there is any right which may be strictly termed a natural one, it is surely that of Liberty of Conscience, which was given us by God, and the exercise of which is a positive and a required duty. And, doubtless, if any right is inalienable, it is this. A free government, moreover, induces the people to study the laws and institutions under which they live, inasmuch as they feel that they have both an interest in their maintenance, and an influence in their promotion.

Some of our ancient statutes appear to aspire not only at checking the expression of sentiments, but the very thought of them. And in truth, perhaps, difficult and even impossible as this may seem, it is of little use restraining the former if we cannot also repress the latter.

I. The establishment of a free and popular organ or representative of opinion in a state, is of the utmost importance and benefit, to afford vent to the



public feeling, and to guard against abuses and unconstitutional acts of the government. The free press of a nation corresponds with the organ and power of speech in an individual. Being allowed through this vehicle to give full expression to its sentiments, all danger of resorting to physical force, in order to remedy each grievance, in the case of the former, is removed.

Corresponding, therefore, with the general freedom of discussion which is allowed upon all matters, both of principle and of practice, should be the freedom alike of inquiry and of animadversion which is permitted to the press, especially upon political topics. Here, moreover, while all direct attacks upon the authority of the government, and all question as to the right to put in force actually existing laws, must be strictly prohibited; the fullest discussion should be granted as to the expediency of continuing or altering the laws, admitting at the same time the undeniable duty of obeying them so long as they continue to be the laws.

*Magna est veritas, et prævalebit*,—is not only a great axiom in politics as well as ethics, but a sure guarantee in controversy that if the discussion be fairly as well as freely conducted, truth will in the end prove triumphant. And, indeed, if any tenets are unable to stand the test of truth, they ought not to stand at all.

There are two especial advantages possessed by

the press as the protector of the public against oppression, and which the voice of the people declared in their assemblies would fail to obtain. The first of these is that, from the sentiments which are put forth being uttered anonymously, the utmost boldness and independence are exhibited in their expression. And, in the next place, the services of the greatest talent of which the nation can boast among those who are skilled in literary composition, are secured to the public. The sentiments so expressed are, in reality, to be considered not those of the writer who pens them, but as those of the nation which are here reflected, and by whom they are re-echoed. And it is this consideration alone which gives them their force.

Although the press, invested as it is with so much power as a public censor, has no means of directly punishing those whom it condemns; yet it may prove very efficient in the prevention of misdemeanours, especially those of a moral and political nature, by deterring people from them, through the fear of detection and exposure which it creates. Punishment, indeed, indirectly, it may and does inflict, though of a moral kind only, by holding up to obloquy the objects of its just censure.

As already observed in a previous Element, the Press has to a great extent superseded the Theatre, as it was availed of at Athens as a moral censor.

And it is, doubtless, far better adapted for this purpose, as appealing rather to deliberate reason than to passion, and to the information of the people, instead of aiming merely at satirical effect. Though less striking and effective than a theatrical representation to ridicule a foible, its efforts produce a more permanent result. To expose an abuse, or to point out an inconsistency, satire may not only be resorted to with fairness, but such an application of it is in reality its legitimate aim and object.

The Parliament and the Press together, through which is afforded the amplest vent for the ebullition of the national feeling, and by means of which it is expressed with the utmost freedom, fully supply the place both of the orators and the comic satirists of the days of Greece. The main difference as regards the weapons employed is, that in ancient times, eloquence and satire were principally resorted to; in the present day, reason is that which is most used, and which is better adapted for the service of a state in a high condition of civilization; as, though all persons can be more or less moved by declamation and ridicule, those only who have received at least a moderate share of cultivation, can be acted upon by the appeals of reason. Moreover, what the orator and actor gain in force and momentary effect, the press more than makes up for by the vast number to whom it at once addresses itself, and by the permanence of the impressions which it creates.



The press, especially through the newspaper, which is one of the most extraordinary and striking features in modern civilization, and which forms a new element of it wholly wanting in that of any ancient times and states, is also of immense use as a public instructor, both in diffusing knowledge, and in inculcating correct principles; though perhaps it is more efficient to expose those which are wrong, than to teach those which are right. In the latter respect, if not in the former, it is like a church establishment, and ought to aid the operations of that institution by pointing out error and denouncing vice. Following too in the track of the church, it assists in extending information through every part of the nation.

As regards the use of the press in aiding the communication of knowledge, and of intercourse, both between communities in different parts of the same country, and between different states, it is here extensively auxiliary to Elements IX. and X.

The real power of the press is founded on truth and on public opinion. Armed with the former, and supported by the latter, its strength is immense, if not irresistible. Possessing the former, it ought also to obtain the latter. But unless it is endowed with the former, its power is more specious than solid, and in the end it must give way, however zealously the latter influence may for a time uphold it. It is, however, highly favourable to the

expression of truth, and advantageous, too, for the development of public opinion, that the different organs of the press should espouse different principles on the various political questions that are advocated, by which each topic obtains the fairest and freest discussion, and truth is most completely maintained; and by which also the most ample opportunity is afforded to the public of judging fully and fairly on the various measures put before them. By this means also, a proper balance is preserved between the different parties and opinions in the state, and consequently no interest or institution is in danger of being overwhelmed by the press.

Such an institution, so important to the interests of each branch and party in the state, ought to be wholly free. The public are entitled to the possession of such an organ as this, for the declaration of their opinion. It is only by expressing their exigencies and requirements with freedom, that they can be well and adequately governed, and which they have a right as far as possible to secure as the very end of civil society itself.

But although the free and unrestrained discussion of state questions and general topics in this manner is most desirable, and is highly beneficial to the public; the conversion of that noble moral engine the press into a vehicle of slander, not for the public good, but for private gain, or employing it for the propagation of immorality or profaneness,

ought ever to be prohibited by the strictest laws. Even liberty in the discussion of public questions must have its bounds. The settled foundations of an established government, ought not to be constantly disturbed without some adequate cause. For the fundamental principles of religion, which form the hope of the nation, exposed to doubt and contumely, merely to gratify individual vanity and pride. These topics are too sacred, and too much bound up with the private interests and feelings of each individual, to allow of their being used in this manner. A vast distinction, indeed, is drawn between discussion as to fundamental principles either in politics or religion, and minor considerations of practice or theory arising out of them. The former must be, to a certain extent, held inviolable, so long as a large majority of the people not only acquiesce in them, but rely on their being upheld, and on which the safety and peace of the nation depend. To be ever questioning their propriety or soundness, would so much bring them into disrepute and contempt, and would occasion general perplexity and distrust, as to be a worse evil than even the prohibition of discussion altogether. The real and true principle to be adopted in this case, appears, however, to be not to prohibit such discussion, even as to the fundamental principles of religion or government, altogether; but to require this, when followed, so that



conducted as not to obtrude on the public mind, and to be pursued by its votaries in private. Hence, even the questioning of fundamental principles, need not be forbidden beyond the requisite bounds, when the reasons for restraining it no longer exist. All abridgment of liberty is justified only by necessity. Liberty exercised by one, ought not, moreover, to be allowed to infringe on that of another. It is essential, indeed, to obviate as far as possible the necessity for discussions of this kind; which can only be done by maintaining in their integrity the true principles of the government, and the purity of the religion established. Even if then attacked, the people, instead of joining in, will be led to repel the assaults. But in all cases, minor matters of practice and detail connected with laws and religion, such as contemplated changes in legislation, or the points in difference between sects, cannot be too freely investigated. A man in business discusses unreservedly with his friends in private, as to the particular course he shall pursue, according to special circumstances, and is glad of their advice in each case; but to be every day openly debating whether he should renounce his business altogether, or change his profession, would be unsettling to his habits and ruinous to his prospects.

If it be said, however, that Truth ought always not only to be permitted, but encouraged, and that it is for the general good of society that it should

prevail; it may be replied, that though it ought undoubtedly to be advanced and supported, yet this should be done at proper times and seasons only, as in some instances the urging forward truth on an unsuitable occasion, when the consequences of doing so would be directly and extensively injurious, is likely to be more pernicious than the promulgation of even gross falsehood. In addition to this, it is always difficult to determine, on its first utterance, whether a new doctrine be really true, or only pretending to truth. And, lastly, it is to be borne in mind that the only correct principle on which restraints can be imposed on the liberty of the press, is, that truth is already established, and is predominant, and that it ought to be protected from assault.

The licentiousness of the press is altogether distinct from its liberty. An individual may have entire physical liberty, although he is not allowed to molest his neighbours; or ample intellectual liberty, though he is prohibited from throwing off all moral restraint. These rational impediments do not, indeed, at all affect or diminish the real perfection of his liberty. The liberty of the press is not like that of a madman or a drunkard, but resembles the freedom of a reasonable being. Its liberty is not even promoted by its licentiousness, which is only its perversion, and is a kind of disease to which it is liable. The public, indeed, who are

its patrons and protectors, will never submit to be the victims individually of its slanders; nor will they tamely allow their legitimate organ for the national good to be made a vehicle for private malice, or corrupt purposes. This, indeed, must eventually lead, not to the extension, but to the extinguishment of its liberty.

It is due, however, to the press, especially to that portion of it which is established in our own country, to observe that the influence of the newspaper is on the whole unquestionably and extensively beneficial, and favourable to civilization, and this in several ways. It not only diffuses knowledge of various kinds, but the standard of its style, and perhaps of its morality too, is, at the least, on an average with, and probably much above that of the generality of its readers, and therefore advantageous both to their mental and moral progress. The precepts which it enforces are for the most part favourable to both religion and virtue, as no public instructor, whatever he might think or feel, would venture to avow sentiments in opposition to established fundamental truths, and thus expose himself at once both to the criticism and the censure of rival journals, and of discerning readers. Heterodoxy is mainly taught, not in public assemblies, but in private conferences. With very few and perhaps unimportant exceptions, the newspaper is also on the side of order and good govern-



ment; although an extensive latitude must be, and ought to be, allowed to it in the discussion of different questions, and as the organ of various parties, who all alike profess to be animated only by a desire for the public weal.

II. The free discussion of questions relating to the different points in religious doctrine and practice, not affecting the existence of religion itself, is of the utmost importance for securing the establishment of religion in a pure form. Man has his reason given to him by his Maker, both to guide him correctly in the choice of a religion, and to guard him against errors in religion in general. And it is only by the free and unfettered exercise of that reason, that he can be expected to decide right in the one case, or to be directed aright in the other. To this free and right exercise of reason, we owe it that Christianity has supplanted paganism in this land; and by stifling it it is that error, and idolatry, and superstition, seek to retain their dominion over the minds of their votaries. In order also to preserve the purity and the credit of the best of all religions, it is essential that a full and free right of discussion should be allowed to all parties, and which the erroneous and bigoted of all parties alike will be found to agree in endeavouring to stifle. Toleration, which permits, and indeed leads to inquiry and reformation, constantly acts as a purifier of religion; while on the other hand, nothing so much tends to

its deterioration as the forbidding its tenets to be canvassed, and subjected to the test of reason, which operates like fire in purging away the dross, and in correcting abuses. Stagnation of opinion, equally with stagnation of water, tends to breed corruption of its kind.

Toleration, nevertheless, springs as much, or indeed more, from the largeness and real liberality of the mind of the person exercising it, than from the particular creed which he professes, or the code of laws under which he may be living. Certain noble-minded Roman Catholics are full of the spirit of toleration, while some Protestants are as intolerant and persecuting as the Inquisition in Spain. Moreover, as a general, if not invariable rule, those will be found the most intolerant towards others, who are themselves the least entitled to be treated with toleration.

The two grand principles on which toleration is founded, and the soundness of which few of well-disciplined reason and extensive cultivation will be disposed to doubt, are that every man has a right to the full and free exercise of his reason in the investigation of truth; and that there are hardly any subjects of a practical nature so certain as regards their rules and application, as not to admit of controversy. The ground on which the support of toleration rests, is that it is desirable to arrive at and to preserve truth, and that this is best promoted and en-

sured by free discussion. Where positive truth has been attained, as in the case of the received veracity of the Holy Scriptures, it is consequently not essential or expedient to extend toleration to its investigation. But any point short of this, even to the free questioning of the best form of religion, and, indeed, every topic of this kind which is open to doubt and debate, should be within the scope of toleration, and be allowed to be argued freely. Correspondingly, indeed, with the preservation of the balance of power among states, the rivalry and opposition to each other, and the competition without restraint or interruption, of different contending political and religious sects, has the beneficial effect of securing each party and doctrine from being put down or overwhelmed by a powerful and persecuting opponent; and prevents the suppression of truth, and of whatever opinions may be advantageously promulgated for the well-being of mankind.

The real basis of toleration is consequently this;—that as every man is answerable to God and his own conscience alone for all his acts, and as the aid or intervention of no other man can save him or even relieve him from this obligation; so ought each individual to be allowed, to the fullest extent, and in the freest manner, to perform his duty as his conscience dictates to him, and without the interference of any other person. While, however, on the one hand, the greatest amount of toleration



and political liberty to which any one can reasonably desire to attain, is to be entirely free to act according to the dictates of his conscience ; yet on the other hand, the severest restraint under which all alike are placed, results from the allegiance which they owe to that most absolute of despots, who of all rulers is the most arbitrary, and whose decrees far exceed in severity and rigour those of any state, either ecclesiastical or civil. Conscience, indeed, is like a demagogue tyrant, who exclaims against all authority except his own, while he uses his power with a despotic sway, far exceeding that of the tyrannies against which he declaims. Ought we then, it may be asked, in the regulation of the discipline of a state, to be more tolerant towards each other, than is our own nature, or God working through it, to ourselves ?

Here, however, I would observe that it must necessarily follow that the more strictly are we bound, and the more extensively are we influenced by the laws of conscience ; in an equal ratio do we the less stand in need of legislative or other civil enactments to bind us. According as each individual is guided by conscience, may he be allowed a larger amount of civil toleration, and of religious liberty. Thus, toleration not only conduces to civilization, but the greater is the amount of civilization enjoyed by any people, (more especially as regards the moral discipline and cultivation which

they have received), the greater is the amount of toleration which they are fitted to possess. Hence, that which toleration should not only allow but absolutely secure to us, is liberty of conscience, especially in matters of religion. If its limits do not extend to and fully embrace this object, such toleration is incomplete. If they exceed this bound, they are superfluous, and tend rather to licentiousness than to real liberty.

The resort to coercive measures, and to penal enactments of any kind, in order to change or enforce religious opinions, must in almost every case be not only absolutely unjust, but wholly inefficacious; as if any effect is produced, this is the result not of the persuasion of the reason by such means, but of the dread of persecution which prevails over the mind of the person so oppressed. Whatever his external conduct may exhibit, no internal conviction will have been wrought, but which alone is the aim of those who coerce him. And so far from intolerance being a test of the truth of any particular tenet, it will ever be found that those who are in the wrong are the most likely to resort to such a mode of enforcing their doctrines, which recourse to fair argument has failed to effect. Besides which, oppression and cruelty are always more eagerly availed of by the bad than by the good, and are the legitimate weapons only of the former.

Toleration, as has already been observed, is rather

negative than positive as regards its essential nature. It consists, in reality, more in the absence of intoleration than in the presence of any actual system or code of laws; just as liberty itself consists, not in the presence of any particular privilege, but in the mere absence of restraint. In its active effects, too, as well as in its actual essence, toleration is rather negative than positive. Thus, though the existence of toleration may not produce good feeling among rival religious bodies, the existence of intoleration is quite certain to excite animosity and ill feeling. In many cases, and as regards several of the elements of civilization, all that we can reasonably hope to attain is achieved, if we do but securely banish deleferious influences, and leave a free course open to those that are beneficial. As regards the management of our own physical frames, although we are unable to render them vigorous and healthy, we may nevertheless do much to protect them against infection, and cold, and laceration.

The leading principles of toleration may, therefore, be determined to be as follows:—Every one ought to be allowed freely to hold and to profess whatever religious opinions he pleases, and thinks right; and no one should be allowed to interfere with or annoy another on account of, or in regard to his religious opinions and observances. Each individual should be permitted to worship God as he



deems best, although no person should be suffered openly to disseminate doctrines actually revolting to the religious feelings and opinions of others. Consequently, to a certain extent, even toleration itself is restrictive, as well as affording protection from restraint.

It is, moreover, of the essence of toleration not only that every one shall be permitted to hold what religious opinions he pleases, and to serve God in the mode which he deems best; but that no one shall be liable to any civil injury or disqualification, on account of his religious opinions or form of worship, provided of course that he be a real believer in the truth of Christianity, which is essential in order to constitute a member of a civil Christian community. Here, however, it is of great importance to keep in view the wide and essential distinction between any opinion or doctrine being actually and diametrically contrary to Scripture, and its being merely contrary to the strained and false interpretation which ignorant, or fanatical, or superstitious zealots may have presumed to put upon it. Although public teaching contrary to the former may fairly be prohibited by the state, teaching contrary to the latter not only ought not to be prohibited, but is deserving of direct encouragement.

There is, nevertheless, in certain cases, considerable difficulty in defining and determining what particular theological works or sentiments are fairly

controversial, and what are actually blasphemous, or unfit for general discussion. If it be laid down that direct attacks on the Divine authority of Scripture come within the latter class, it is still difficult to specify exactly what constitute attacks of this kind. For instance, the crime of Galileo in asserting that the world moved round the sun, was considered and punished as a direct attack upon Scripture, although in reality it was only putting a different construction upon certain passages to that which had been popularly adopted. And yet if we allow full and free latitude of construction, unless we cautiously guard the line of discussion by the strictest limits, how can we prevent even distinct denials of the authority of the Bible itself, however they may be construed? Probably, therefore, the only correct and certain principle to establish in these cases is that, while all direct attacks upon religion itself, or upon the truth of the Bible, ought to be strictly and absolutely prohibited; all controversy respecting, or arising out of the construction of the Bible, and which does not either directly or indirectly deny or call in question the truth or inspiration of the Bible itself, ought to be permitted to the full. This is necessary for free discussion, and it is all that is necessary. The test of, and the free resort to and exercise of reason, form the only sure safeguard for the security of religion.

Toleration, however, like every other principle

both in government and in morals, must have its defined and reasonable limits, beyond which it is neither necessary nor expedient that it should be carried, and by extending it beyond which its objects are not really promoted, but are abridged, and even defeated.

Toleration, as regards its limits, commences at that point where any question liable to dispute can arise upon any theological tenet or doctrine, open to doubt or difference of opinion, and of which it should allow and secure full and free and unrestricted discussion and controversy to the utmost. But it terminates at that point where the discussion extends to question the truth and reality of religion itself, or of the Bible as its foundation, to the permission of which it ought not to reach, and which forms no part of the liberty essential for discovering and arriving at truth, which should be the sole aim and object of all controversy, and towards the attainment of which no impediments should be offered. Any system of toleration that falls short of this, is imperfect, and is insufficient for securing the end desired. Any system that goes beyond this, tends to promote licentiousness and scepticism, and will defeat the main object that ought to be kept in view.

In two especial instances, moreover, may limits be fairly and equitably placed to the bounds of toleration. And that is where any form of religion



inculcates doctrines inimical to the due regulation of the state, or to the general or moral well-being of the community. Thus, to maintain that the authority of the sovereign is not legitimate and binding on the subjects of the realm, or that morality is no part of the duty of a Christian people, may be regarded as doctrines of this kind. But even in this case, the particular tenets only that are complained of ought to be prohibited, and not the whole code of that form of religious teaching, except where the former constitute an essential part of the latter, and are inseparable from it, in which case it of course becomes necessary to prohibit entirely the opinions in question.

But it may be said that toleration nurtures disaffection and heresy, which in time grow more vigorous, until at length they are strong enough to subvert not only religion, but every other principle of truth as well. It is surely, however, incorrect to say that toleration itself aids the growth of any opinion, which must spring up quite independent of it, and rely entirely on its own merits ; although, on the other hand, intolerance may serve to check not its growth but its manifestation, which latter is really all that the civil power can effect. Right reason and truth are the only reliable weapons by which to resist the progress of wrong opinions ; and by these it is doubtless better to combat them than to suppress, not their growth, (which we cannot

affect,) but their publication, by intolerant laws; and which, by forbidding discussion, forbid also their refutation and exposure, which is not merely the only legitimate, but is also the only sure way to extirpate them.

If it be urged that as we properly punish children for imbibing erroneous opinions, and by this means gradually lead them to the correct course; so ought the state to act with regard to its ignorant and deluded members, who are as it were its civil children: it may be replied, that the state does right to instruct, but has no right to coerce its citizens; that they are free and capable agents, which is not the case with children, who are uninformed, and of immature minds; and that, even in the case of children, we do not punish erroneous opinions, but only erroneous and immoral conduct.

But it may, perhaps, be said that if punishment is inefficacious to prevent the spread of opinions which we ought to allow to be advanced; will it not be inefficacious also to repress those which according to the principles here maintained, must, be deemed to be dangerous, and detrimental to the state? To this I reply, that the promulgation of opinions that are actually dangerous, may be prohibited as a crime against the state, and rightly punished as such, which cannot reasonably be done in the case of the others. Here also, we may fairly expect that the voice and feeling of the na-

tion will second the efforts of the government, on which the efficiency of those efforts must mainly depend. Added to which, the general freedom of opinion, allowed as far as practical, prevents any violent repugnance to that restraint which is actually necessary.

Nor can intolerance ever be regarded as the mark, or taken as the test of a true church, inasmuch as it has not only been most fully practised in the most corrupt ages of the church; but it has also been the chief characteristic in the conduct of Heathens, and Pagans, and Mahomedans towards Christians. On the other hand, it may fairly be deemed to be a sure indication of error, which only resorts to and requires force to prop it up, from not being able to have recourse to reason for such a purpose.

The most plausible excuse for intolerance and coercion in religious matters, would be that it is for the actual benefit of the coerced; and that it is necessary in order to lead them from error to truth. But, in the first place, no one has authority in points of dispute on religious topics, to decide with absolute certainty which is the right, and which is the wrong path to pursue. And in the next place, those points about which toleration is mainly exercised, are seldom matters on which salvation is supposed to depend, but are rather forms and ceremonies which are deemed only indirectly conducive



to its attainment, so far as regards the open exercise of our religious duties. Persecution, moreover, very seldom convinces men of error, though it frequently hardens them against the truth. On the other hand, all that intolerance fruitlessly aims to achieve, in preserving men from error and bringing them to a knowledge of the truth, Education and proper National Institutions ought to be able amply to effect. At any rate, that which they fail in accomplishing, intolerance is utterly inefficient to supply.

The national religion of a country, or that which is recognized both by the state and its institutions, must necessarily be that which is adopted and followed by the people at large; and for them, as already shown in a previous Element, a national church establishment, for the maintenance and conduct with adequacy and decorum of that religion, is essential. It should, however, be a leading principle in the formation of such an institution, to allow the greatest latitude of opinion and discussion to its officers and members, that is consistent with the continuance of union in the body, and the preservation of order and regularity in its operations. To those who refuse to join such an institution from conscientious motives, it is due to the religion which they in common with its members profess, that they should be permitted, to the very utmost compatible with the safety and efficient working of the established institution, not only full liberty

of opinion and discussion, but also to exercise their own form of religious worship and observances as they desire. An institution for ages securely established not only by law but in the hearts of the people, and possessing property of its own for its maintenance, such as the English church, and whose laws were framed for the general well-being of the state, and at a period long prior to the existence of the various polemical parties now in vogue ; is much more likely to be tolerant towards those who dissent from it, than is a sectarian body which has but lately sprung up, which is in a constant state of mutation both as regards its principles and its position in relation to other bodies, and whose laws and regulations will be framed and varied according to circumstances, or adapted to suit individual cases. The existence, indeed, of rival religious communities, is in many respects beneficial to the church, in creating that spirit of competition so generally advantageous in a free country, but especially so as regards its institutions.

Different religious bodies and sects require, however, occasionally to be restrained, not only from persecuting and oppressing those who are opposed to them, but from persecuting and oppressing those of their own body who differ from them in opinion. In the Church of England, which is very tolerant towards all other bodies, many of its members are extremely intolerant as regards the sentiments of one another.

If merely considered as a matter of policy, the religious principles of a people are of the highest importance to the well-being of the nation, and as such demand the attention and care of the state. As already mentioned, it is pre-eminently by this means that their moral improvement is effected, and that the higher influences are raised above those which are lower, and the latter subjugated to them. In the consideration of the differences in religion between different parties in a state, wise rulers ought in minor points at least to search rather for coincidences than for variations ; especially among those whose religion is all based on the same fundamental doctrines, who all follow the same practice in the main, and who all profess to be seeking the same object.

It is, however, essential that care should be taken in the framing of a system which is intended to ensure full toleration to the minority among several religious parties, that this is not so far done as in turn to degenerate into intolerance towards the majority, who are thereby subjected to the petty annoyances and captious aggressions of the minority. There is probably, indeed, no subject, especially a practical one, respecting which there is so much inconsistency and contrariety as there is concerning this of toleration. Thus, men tolerant of one tenet or party, are most intolerant of all others ; and to secure toleration itself, there is no flagrancy in the



way of intoleration that will not eagerly be perpetrated. Few, indeed, if any persons, of any age, nation, or sect, are uniformly and consistently tolerant to those of all creeds and parties alike.

But even the superstitions which religion engenders, may be sometimes turned to good account by the rulers of a state. Among a rude and barbarous people, superstition has to some extent stood in the place of real religion; so far at least as it has restrained the passions, checked the lawless outrages, and tamed the fury of the multitude. Superstition is, indeed, a kind of wild religion, possessing but few of its fruits, and those for the most part rank and poisonous. Here and there, however, on congenial soils, a certain resemblance to the legitimate production has been discovered. Nevertheless, even where superstition has sprung out of genuine religion, as is sometimes the case, it is but the corruption of it, and that occasionally of the worst and most dangerous kind. Superstition, whatever comparatively good results may be obtained therefrom, is therefore never to be encouraged; but where it is impossible to extirpate, it may be allowable to divert it. If the current cannot be stopped, it should be turned into a more desirable course.

Probably, those systems of religion, and those religious individuals who possess the firmest belief that their principles are right, and the strongest feeling

and the deepest concern on the subject, are the most liable to be intolerant towards others. Many, doubtless, are tolerant from mere indifference about religion. On the other hand, several of those religious persons, who have been the most convinced of the truth of what they followed, and the most anxious to fulfil its duties, have been the most tolerant. The mental and moral condition chiefly conducive to Toleration, consists in the possession of rational opinions, deliberately embraced, and warmly cherished on the one hand ; and the desire for strict justice, and an enlarged and comprehensive consideration of what those who differ from them, may entertain and feel on the same subject, which generates due allowance for them, on the other. This is, indeed, as genuine a mark of true mental and moral greatness in a nation as it is in a man.

Every individual being solely accountable for his own opinions and acts, has a right, and is indeed bound to exercise and to be guided by his own judgment. But this is not inconsistent with his being directed by other persons on topics on which they are more informed than he is, and on which he may not have the same leisure or ability to qualify himself as they possess. In many matters of the highest importance, such as the care of our health and the management of our property, we voluntarily and unreservedly place implicit reliance upon those whom we believe to be better skilled and instructed

than we are ourselves. In other instances, where we are not so assisted, and act only of our own accord, not reason but fashion and prejudice order our course, and lead us wrong. Indeed, the examples are but rare where reason alone is our rule and guide. In the case therefore of religion, which so few consider that they have leisure to study amply, which is a matter of so much complexity and difficulty, and one moreover which it is all-important to follow aright; why should we not rely on the direction of men expressly trained for and devoted to this purpose, and whose only interest it is to guide us properly?

The true line to be followed as to the exercise of our own judgment, or the resigning our opinion to that of others, appears, therefore, simply to be this: that we should rely upon ourselves, where our information on the subject is adequate, and we have exercised our reason sufficiently to enable us to act aright. Where this has not been done, we may advantageously resort to those who have thus peculiarly qualified themselves to be our guides.

It should further be borne in mind, in reference to free discussion on religious topics, that a change made in the religious opinions or tenets of a people, may be ruinous to the influence of religion generally, independent of the character of the two religions, as they may be led by this means to follow the doctrines of a new faith diametrically at variance



with the institutions, and feelings, and manners of such a people, and which consequently may never be able to obtain any firm hold upon them. This principle is, however, to be maintained, not for the purpose of opposing all changes in religion whatsoever, but to evince the inexpediency of change as a general rule, and where this is not necessary from the nature of the case, or so beneficial as to counteract the weight of all these considerations together.

On the whole, it must be concluded that the benefits to a state, of Toleration, are very extensive, exclusive indeed of its direct religious advantages, in promoting, by means of free inquiry and discussion being allowed, activity of mind, and independence of thought, and liberty of expression on all subjects, through which truth at last comes out triumphant, and error is exterminated. As God has made men so to differ in their nature, and dispositions, and capacities, from each other; so it is by no means impossible or improbable that He may have purposely originated different forms of religion peculiarly adapted to their several exigencies and endowments, instead of intending that all should worship Him precisely in the same mode. Or it may even be a part of His express economy, that a certain degree of emulation and rivalry should exist between various religious bodies, sufficient to produce activity and inquiry, as has been expressly

instituted as regards the different races and nations of the earth.

If it be urged that the multitude at large are too ignorant and too simple to be allowed to choose their own faith, and that as it is for their own good as well as for that of the state that they should determine correctly, the state has a right so to influence, and even to coerce them ; it may be replied that it is the duty of the state to relieve them from a condition of ignorance which places them in so humiliating a position, but no part of its duty to take advantage of the latter, (which must have been more or less occasioned by the neglect of the state,) in order to compel them to adopt any particular line of conduct. If they are not capacitated to discern right from wrong, they ought even then to be allowed to follow such of the authorized teachers as they may prefer, who, as remarked in a previous Element, should all be under strict state regulation as to the sufficiency of the endowments they possess ; and when instructed by them, their own reason and conscience must decide on their ultimate course.

Although it is no part of the duty of the state to interfere with the opinions and actions of any persons as regards their religious observances ; yet, on the other hand, it is the undoubted and positive duty of the state to provide institutions, and officers, and means for the instruction of the people, and

for the due celebration of religion, though without coercing any individuals to conform to this or that creed. Indeed, the greater is the Toleration in this respect allowed, the greater is the necessity for such institutions and means of instruction.

Intolerance, if it is not a proof of weakness in a party or a church, is at any rate a token of fear. As the body natural assumes a defensive or constrained attitude only when disorder or danger is present, so bodies ecclesiastic and politic are only induced to oppression when excited by the apprehension of some attack.

The true principle of Toleration appears, therefore, to be this: that every person in the state should be allowed to the full to adopt such religious opinions, and to exercise such form of religious worship, as his conscience dictates to him to be most correct, and that no one should be allowed to oppress or molest him on this account. At the same time, the latitude of Toleration so granted must on no pretence be suffered to enable individuals of one creed or persuasion to give offence to those of different tenets, more especially in cases where this can be avoided without any abridgment of the essential forms in the celebration of such religion. The greater the measure of Toleration that is allowed to each body, the more tolerant should that body be towards every other. It is essential, moreover, that Toleration should be exercised in each



direction, not only by the authoritative powers towards the subordinate, but by the subordinate towards the authoritative. And that different sects and parties should be as tolerant towards each other, as the predominant party is towards them.

As Toleration was observed at the commencement of the present Element to be negative in its nature, so probably the most conclusive argument against intoleration is negative also, being that of its entire inefficiency. So far from its result being to make people think alike, it tends only to confirm them in their opposition. Opinions originating merely in prejudice, obtain through the sufferings endured on their account, the support of passion. Tenets which were once objected to only from their being misunderstood, are now zealously denounced as being associated with the infliction of persecution.

---

## VI. NATIONAL COMMEMORATIONS AND FESTIVALS.

The Element of civilization which next in order demands our consideration, is that which I have designated by the term of "National Commemorations and Festivals." The establishment of certain appointed days for general national relaxation and recreation, has a direct tendency to promote civilization, and to improve and advance the intellectual and moral condition of the people, in three

distinct and independent modes. Such institutions are mentally improving, as affording opportunity for study and intellectual culture by cessation from the ordinary occupations of life. They are morally beneficial from the social feelings which they have the effect of engendering. And they are extensively serviceable as regards both the rest from manual labour, and also the mental relaxation which they are the means of securing to all classes of the people. Consequently, the institution of National Commemorations and Festivals for the celebration of particular events of general importance and interest, and by which recreation is offered to the people of whatever rank or occupation, is an Element of essential influence and advantage in the civilization of a nation. The relaxation thus allowed, if proper opportunities for applying it are afforded, which should be done contemporaneously with the institution of these days of leisure, and as a necessary adjunct to their establishment, is alike important and beneficial to those of each class. In this respect, the Element now under consideration contributes extensively to aid the operation and efficiency of several which have already been discussed, more especially those of "National Education of the People," "National Instructorial Institutions," and "National Cultivation of Art and Science;" while each of these elements in their turn also contributes more or less to aid the operation of that immediately before us.

The direct and extensive tendency of the Christian religion, and of its various institutions, to promote civilization, has been already remarked. Among the customs that it enjoins, the observance of a Sabbath, by which one day in seven is set apart, and ordinary unnecessary manual occupation is excluded from it, is highly conducive to civilization, independent altogether of the religious advantages that it possesses. Mental and moral improvement among all classes is eminently furthered by this institution. The poorest person has once a week secured to him a day of leisure to devote to the cultivation of his mind and his morals, as well as to his religious duties, which directly tends to the improvement of the former. Such an institution is also greatly refining in its results. Each poor man with his family for that day moves in the rank of gentility, appears in his best clothes, and enjoys a period of leisure. Not only should the Sabbath be a day of freedom from toil, but of freedom also from worldly care and anxiety. And it should supply a foretaste of Heaven, not merely as regards the religious exercises which are followed upon it, but as regards the high mental pursuits for which it affords the opportunity, the benevolent social feelings which it calls forth, and the good deeds which are done on that day. To each person, whether rich or poor, the Sabbath should be, moreover, not only the holiest but the happiest day throughout the week.



The direct object of the Sabbath is, however, not mental or even moral improvement, but religious duty. The direct object in the institution of National Commemorations and Festivals, is to promote the two first of these desirable ends. Both objects are of essential importance, and both deserve the attention of the state. It is obvious, therefore, that while the Sabbath ought still to be observed as a day of religious duty, other days also ought to be provided for the purposes above detailed. By omitting to keep the two distinct, and attempting to make one day serve for both, as is at present done with regard to Sunday in France, and in other countries on the Continent, you entirely fail to obtain the observance of the day either as one of solemn worship, or of improving recreation; but both these objects are alike neglected, and it degenerates into simply a day of idleness. Hence, instead of being morally or physically beneficial, it is directly prejudicial in both these respects.

Many good and conscientious people, moreover, in this country, in their eagerness to avoid making Sunday a day of work, make it a day of idleness. In order to escape the guilt of turning the precious hours, for the proper use of which they are specially accountable to the Almighty, to any purpose in the way of occupation, however harmless or improving, they resolutely insist on wasting them altogether.

As regards the question as to the propriety or expediency of making a legislative provision for the due national observance of the Sabbath, it is here necessary to appeal to the principle of toleration and religious liberty, in order to determine to what extent this observance may reasonably and rightly be enforced. That it is desirable that the Sabbath be nationally observed, may at once be admitted. But, unless the nation generally consent thereto, it cannot be efficiently carried out. And yet, even where the majority of the nation agree to this, it is unreasonable to coerce those to observe it who object to do so. On the other hand, their non-observance of it should not be permitted to interfere with the observance of it by those who desire to keep it strictly, especially when the former constitute a decided majority of the nation. The true and correct principle in this case appears, therefore, to be that every one should have the full opportunity of observing and keeping the Sabbath in the way that he thinks best. And that although no one should be compelled to join with him in this observance of it, or to the same extent, or in the same mode; yet that no one should be permitted to interfere with this observance, by either doing himself, or requiring to be done by others, acts which are inconsistent with it. Every person should be free to neglect the observance of the Sabbath if he determines to do so, but so that his

liberty in this respect does not tend to abridge the liberty of others in an opposite direction. The aim of state interference here, should, in fact, be, not to coerce any, but to allow and to secure the greatest amount of liberty to all. The same principle appears equally applicable with regard to the national observance of days of general relaxation and festival.

The progress in building in all large towns, which has been effected during the last few years, especially in the Metropolis, renders it absolutely necessary that some means should be adopted for the recreation and amusement of the working classes. And the progress in education which has been made, renders it both desirable and practicable that such holidays as proposed should be availed of for their mental and moral cultivation. They are at present, moreover, deprived of many recreations and amusements which their ancestors enjoyed; while from the increase in their numbers, and the arduous nature of their duties, there is the greater necessity both for training them aright, and for affording them relaxation. In addition to this, they are now more than ever in danger of being led astray, from the many haunts of dissipation which have sprung up, to allure those who have no proper legitimate source of recreative employment and enjoyment, such as it is imperative on those who rule in the state, and who desire to promote the civilization and best interests of the people, to provide. It is, moreover,



from the want of suitable games and sources of amusement for the people generally, that so many of them are driven during their hours of leisure to resort to those of a demoralizing or degenerating tendency, such as betting and gambling. The moral effects of games are very extensive, perhaps equally so with the more important avocations of life, corresponding of course with the character of such games.

The establishment of national holidays is not even a new principle in our constitution. It is only the revival of an old custom, which the mercenary spirit of modern days has endeavoured to exterminate, but which the exigencies of the present times more than ever require to be restored. Before the era of the Commonwealth, these holidays were regularly established and observed. The Puritans, in 1647, after abolishing them, directed the second Tuesday in every month to be kept in their place. The rebellion which swept away the throne, swallowed up also the rights of the poor. Both in Greece and in Rome, and in their best days, holidays were duly commemorated, and made national institutions; and amusements were provided for the people on those occasions. The principle of securing recreation from labour, and of celebrating certain days by the observance of holidays, has moreover long been established in our public schools, as also in the public offices, where regularity and

strict economy in the management of time are duly regarded. If such a system is correct and expedient, and has been found to work well there, why should it not be adopted also in the state, the active members of which need it as much, and to whom it would be quite as beneficial, both mentally and morally, and also as respects their physical well-being.

The appointment of some special days for recreation of this nature appears, therefore, not only reasonable, but essential; and is supported not merely by the example of other great civilized nations, but ample precedents for it are afforded by the institutions of our own country. It is necessary that these days should be generally observed, in order that the full effect of them may be obtained. It is also advisable that particular days of note should be fixed upon for the purpose, instead of some being merely taken at specific intervals, so as to make them not only recreative but commemorative. Amusements should moreover be provided on these occasions, such as will be both improving and agreeable to all. These festivals should also be made national, so as to be uniformly kept throughout the nation, and sanctioned by the state as national institutions.

The most direct and efficient mode in which the authority of the state may be exercised to promote the general observance of national holidays,

is by rendering them inoperative, as is already done in the case of Sunday, Christmas Day, and Good Friday, for the transaction of professional and commercial business, and by declaring invalid all such negotiations effected on those days.

On the whole, however, it appears desirable to leave to the church the celebration of holy-days, set apart for the commemoration of great events in the history of religion ; and to have these continued as days, not of recreation, but of religious observance. And, indeed, it is in every way expedient to keep distinct the two kinds of festivals ; to observe them differently, as they are appointed for different reasons, and with different objects in view. Thus, both the recreative and the religious interests of the nation will be promoted. The establishment of periods for the due observance of holy-days, will enable the people to devote their days of festivity more entirely to the mental and moral and recreative pursuits appointed for them. The establishment of holidays, or days of recreation, will leave the people to devote holy-days, as they ought, mainly to religious observance.

But some may contend that the observance and object of these festivals of different kinds should be blended together, and religion and relaxation, and mental and moral improvement, ever united and followed in conjunction. However this may be to a certain extent expedient, yet still a leading cha-



racter should be given to each festival, whether devoted to commemorate some religious event, or one in our national history. Thus also Sunday, which it is most desirable to observe as a holy-day, is now kept by many as a holiday merely, owing to its being their only day of recreation. This, indeed, serves to evince how much holidays are needed in this country, and in others no less, both on their own account, and to ensure the due observance of holy-days as well.

It is, however, not only important that in every nation a number of holidays should be appointed as days of recreation and relaxation from toil, and to afford opportunities for mental and moral improvement; but, as already observed, these should be so selected as that they may also produce their due effect as commemorative of the anniversaries of great occurrences in our national history, and which, like national monumental tributes, may be the means of recalling to the attention and the remembrance of the people at large, the achievements or persons so celebrated; or correspondingly with the pictorial illustrations to a book, serve to impress particular events more forcibly on the national mind. The days for commemoration thus chosen, should be of a mixed character. They should consist, in part, of days famous from the occurrence of leading transactions in our national career; in part, of those renowned as being the anniversaries of some

remarkable productions in art, science, or literature ; and the natal days of those who have proved the chief ornaments of our country, may be well observed in this manner. On the other hand, all commemorations and fêtes that tend to keep alive animosities and jealousies either between different sects and parties in a nation, or between different nations, ought to be abolished and prohibited as inimical to civilization. The observance of victories and revolutions should on this account be discouraged ; and the celebration of the discovery of the Gunpowder Plot on the 5th of November, might with propriety be changed into a commemoration of the discovery of gunpowder, and honoured by a display of fireworks and other exhibitions of this class, in which gunpowder mainly aids. So also the victory at Waterloo might be merged into the celebration of the concession of Magna Charta, the anniversary of which is on the day after.

As regards the selection of appointed periods for commemoration, it is of importance, on many accounts, that these days should recur at stated intervals during the year, and that the number of them should be moderate. The following catalogue of renowned events, with the dates of their occurrence annexed, (some of which are of course only imaginary, as all traces of the real date have been long since obliterated), may serve to show what might be done

as regards the choice of days for national commemoration in the manner proposed:—

|                    |   |                                                                                          |                 |
|--------------------|---|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------|
| Great Men.         | { | Birthday of Bacon . . . . .                                                              | 22nd January.   |
|                    |   | Birthday of Shakspeare . . . . .                                                         | 23rd April.     |
|                    |   | Birthday of Newton; (date of the publication of his 'Principia') . . . . .               | 8th May.        |
|                    |   | Birthday of Milton . . . . .                                                             | 9th December.   |
| Great Events.      | { | Establishment of the English Kingdom and Monarchy; (death of Alfred the Great) . . . . . | 27th October.   |
|                    |   | Concession of Magna Charta . . . . .                                                     | 19th June.      |
|                    |   | Union with Scotland . . . . .                                                            | 6th March.      |
|                    |   | Union with Ireland . . . . .                                                             | 2nd August.     |
| Great Discoveries. | { | Invention of the Compass; (death of Captain Cook) . . . . .                              | 14th February.  |
|                    |   | Invention of Printing . . . . .                                                          | 6th July.       |
|                    |   | Invention of Steam; (opening of the London and Birmingham Railway) . . . . .             | 17th September. |
|                    |   | Invention of Gunpowder; (Gunpowder Plot) . . . . .                                       | 5th November.   |

In addition to these, the birthday of the Sovereign and of the leading members of the Royal Family, will, in every nation where a monarchy is existent, be commemorated as state holidays, and kept accordingly. When any of these holidays falls upon a Sunday, the Saturday previous or the Monday following should be substituted for its observance.

Thus, twelve events of the greatest consequence in our national history, or in that of the world, would be duly celebrated, and the importance and nature of each event explained and enforced. Were there no other use for them, these holidays



would be of considerable value as national acknowledgments that the acquisition of wealth is not the sole end of man's existence, and that something is due to his intellectual being, as well as to his material benefit. Different classes are also by this means brought together, and for a time placed more on an equality.

Nor do the bodies less than the minds of the people need such a relaxation, which, especially in large and crowded towns, is essential for their physical growth and development.

But, as already stated, these festivals cannot be expected to be completely effective, unless they are not only made recreative, but proper amusements are provided for the entertainment of those who are to enjoy them. On days set apart for the commemoration of particular events, it appears also fitting that the amusements appointed for those days should in their nature more or less correspond with the character of the events commemorated.

During the discussion of a former Element of Civilization, was considered the establishment of certain National Institutions for the promotion of popular recreation and instruction. We have in this place to consider the nature of those amusements themselves, and of the leading principles by which they should be severally regulated, and how far they are available in conjunction with these Institutions.

The amusements of every country, especially those of a national order, should be, as already stated, improving and refining. They should also be adapted to the genius and the character of the people; should be corrective of its particular national errors, and should vary according to its condition in civilization, and the influences which require to be promoted. Thus, in a warlike nation and age, while these amusements ought on the one hand to encourage the inhabitants in the pursuit of an art upon which they are dependent for their preservation and security; they ought, on the other hand, to refine and humanize them, and to correct the savage propensities in which, from the temper of the times, they may be too apt to indulge. In an age of civilization, on the other hand, when art and science are flourishing, while the recreations of the people should lead them to understand and to cultivate those pursuits; they should also serve to protect them from becoming too effeminate and refined. The amusements of a country have ever been found to exercise a great and perceptible influence on the national mind. As a corrective or counteracting agent, they may be made of the highest national importance; and it is perhaps more essentially for this purpose rather than for effecting any independent results, that they are mainly serviceable. Indeed, even the common domestic employments and enjoyments of the people of all ranks, are in this respect influential.

It might, however, be made a reproach against civilized nations in general, and particularly against our own, that so large a portion of their public and most attractive entertainments consists in feasting, which directly ministers to the animal appetites, and treats the latter as objects of paramount importance. These entertainments, nevertheless, must be allowed, although open to this charge, to be of a highly civilizing nature so far as they conduce to intellectual intercourse, and to the promotion of friendly social feeling; and according as the latter or the former is made the predominant feature in these proceedings, ought they generally to be characterized.

Both in ancient and modern times, it has been ever the custom, especially in entertainments of a public and national character, to combine sensual gratification with intellectual excitement and instruction; and the wine must be considered as contributing not so much to the palliation of the thirst, as to the stimulation of the wit and hilarity of those assembled. Among the Greeks, music and the song, followed occasionally by certain other amusements, enlivened their feasts; and among us harmony is thus resorted to, while interchange of ideas in conversation, and both instruction and the highest intellectual gratification from the oratory that is poured forth, cause us almost to forget the sensual pleasures offered, in the delights afforded to the mind.



The social benefits resulting from the assembling together, for the purpose of festive enjoyment, of people of the same community, cannot be doubted. And even the highest of Christian commemorations, and one which directly enjoins the promotion of mutual benevolence and good feeling among mankind, is celebrated, by Divine command, in the form of a feast. The turning water into wine to increase the supply for a convivial entertainment, was the first miracle wrought by our Lord. The multiplication of food to furnish a repast, was one of the few miracles which he ever repeated. Admitting, however, that feasting cannot of itself be considered to be in any way directly conducive to civilization, although indirectly it undoubtedly is, so far as it contributes to the promotion of intellectual and social intercourse; yet there is nothing which is so surely and so strikingly indicative of the condition of civilization in any country, as the mode in which its feasts are conducted. In nothing, moreover, do civilized people differ from barbarians more essentially, than in the regulation of their meals. The distinction here is far greater than that which exists either in their dress, their habitations, or their language.

As regards, however, the general order and course, and the class of rational amusements to be provided for persons of different pursuits; it should, as far as possible, be contrived that each of those engaged,

whether in mental or in manual occupations, be on these occasions supplied with those peculiar recreations which are best suited at once to afford them both the particular information or cultivation, and the particular physical or intellectual relaxation of which, from the nature and tendency of their general occupations, they may especially stand in need. Amusements for the people may have the effect of not only improving their material condition, but their intellectual and moral state also. For instance, many mental recreations, such as music and viewing galleries of works of art, may conduce to the health of the body as well as to that of the mind. The general character of these amusements should, consequently, as already observed, be regulated both by the character of the people and that of the times, and by the nature of the influences which require more especially to be counteracted. To these also, Education, and every other Element of civilization should have reference. Plato says that "even the measures of music are never altered without affecting the most important laws of the state."\* And as in the state, so in the man, it is very essential that intellectual and physical pursuits should proceed contemporaneously, and should co-operate together. The Grecian games consisted mainly in trials and exhibitions of physical skill. In the present advanced age of society and of civi-

\* Republic, book iv, c. 4.

lization, the triumphs of art and science, and exhibitions of intellectual skill, appear both more becoming to our character, and better adapted for national recreation. Games of skill are preferable to games of chance, and are in themselves directly conducive to civilization, as immediately tending to develop the powers and energies of the people, and are capable, if properly managed, of combining pleasure with instruction. Emulation in these cases, without occasioning jealousy or ill-will, excites a wholesome stimulus to exertion, without which excellence in any effort cannot be attained.

But it may perhaps be contended that there is a danger in the excitement of emulation, even in play and among friends, that it may in time, especially if keenly called forth, (when alone it is of any real value,) or by chance, create discord, and so prove inimical to, instead of conducive to civilization. In reply to this I may, however, remark that rival efforts in play among amicable social neighbours, if properly regulated, will tend to cement, not to break friendship; and that it is both the end and the duty of civilization so far to subdue the passions and lower endowments of our nature, as to prevent their being excited and provoked by causes such as those alluded to. Amicable contests of this kind are, therefore, in reality, very useful as tests whether civilization has completed her work here, and very serviceable to complete it, if not already done.



What, however, is the legitimate object of recreations in general, and the leading result at which they aim? The first object of a recreation, appears to me to be relaxation from severe labour, either mental or manual. The second object I should adjudge to be the supply of entertainment and agreeable occupation to the mind. Of course, the more useful in itself, and the less noxious in its consequences, any recreation can be rendered, the more desirable appears its adoption. Among the Romans, the contests of their amphitheatres were productive of a brutalizing effect, not only from their cruelty, but also as leading to the admiration of mere physical brute force; and a worse tendency still is produced through the bull-fights of Spain, by inuring the public mind to the use of the dagger, and to stabbing and bloodshed, and to which in some measure is no doubt to be traced the common occurrence of assassinations in that country. In this nation, too, the exhibition of bull-baiting and bear-baiting, and other cruel sports once so common, were found to have a barbarizing effect upon the popular mind. Indeed, many things which seem at first sight very remote from civilization, may nevertheless have an indirect influence upon it of great importance. Sir Thomas More, in his *Utopia*, does not allow the citizens to be slaughterers of their cattle, on account of the brutalizing tendency of such an occupation; nor is any filth

suffered to collect in their streets, the consequences of which are no doubt morally as well as physically noxious. Although in this country there are few if any public spectacles of a national character, the direct tendency of which is degenerating and inimical to civilization; yet there may be exhibitions which, though not of the class alluded to, are essentially injurious in their effects, however intended they may be to produce quite a contrary result. Such appears to be especially the case with regard to the public executions of criminals, which, though not meant to be spectacles to gratify the curiosity, or to call forth the morbid feelings of the public, have nevertheless a strong tendency in that direction, and are very baneful from their liability to harden and debase them. Here the agonies and death of a man, which should never be even contemplated without the most solemn feelings, are exhibited to the gaze of a rude mob, and are made the subject of indecent levity. Indeed, all spectacles which accustom the mind to view with indifference deeds of violence and horror, are barbarizing in their tendency, even when the exhibition is, and is felt to be, only fictitious. But where the deed itself is witnessed, the effect is more deleterious in proportion as it is more powerful, and as the impress of the reality necessarily far exceeds that of the representation. On this account, the public execution of criminals

is in every way most injurious and brutalizing to the public mind. Moreover, the general effect of public executions, instead of creating in the spectators an abhorrence of crime, is to familiarize them with it; and in the place of detestation of the criminal and horror at his offence, arises too frequently a morbid sympathy with the former, and a half-admiration of the latter. What ought to be considered as a painful, awful, and humiliating solemnity, is converted into an exciting tragedy; and the wretched subject of it is attempted to be raised from a malefactor to a martyr. Religious spectacles, on the other hand, whatever be the occasion for their celebration, when conducted with due dignity and solemnity, have a refining and ennobling tendency; are civilizing in themselves, and add extensively to the power of Religious Influence in this respect.

Field sports may be regarded as, and doubtless are, brutalizing, so far as they accustom the mind to receive pleasure from the pain and death of an animal. This, however, is by no means their direct and essential object, but is only an incidental circumstance connected with them; the main end being the physical exercise they produce, which is healthful and exhilarating, if not actually directly civilizing in its tendency, and the cultivation of that scientific skill which is required for their successful pursuit. Nor are the feelings that



such sports excite those of anger and revenge, which ordinarily accompany deeds of violence and bloodshed among mankind, and which directly tend to debase the mind.

It has already been observed\* that luxury tends as directly and as surely to the corruption and degeneration, as civilization does to the refinement and invigoration of a people. Whatever pursuits or amusements are calculated to produce idleness, to amuse simply without instructing or improving, are luxurious in their nature. Indeed, all pleasures have a tendency in one direction or other, either to enlarge and invigorate, or to weaken and degenerate the mind. Those games especially which do not contribute either to promote wholesome bodily exercise and recreation, or mental improvement, are almost always luxurious and pernicious. Of this class especially are those particular diversions which come under the general denomination of gambling, to which a morbid excitement is ordinarily attached, as though it were sought thereby to compensate for the wholesome stimulus which improving pursuits produce, in a manner analogous to the excitement of certain alcoholic liquors, by which they appear to atone for the want of the invigorating effects of those of a wholesome kind. Gambling, indeed, so far as it is to be considered as strictly such, consists in following games of chance, on the determination of which

\* *Essence of Civilization, ante, p. 49.*

money is staked, and in conducting which there is no exercise of skill whatever ; or where the happening of an uncertain event, and not the skill of the person engaged, is what mainly decides the issue. Where fraud is introduced, this cannot of course be considered as a part of the game, but is quite independent of it, and its only object is to defeat the proper aim of the latter, and to divert it from its legitimate purpose. Recreations generally which are of the gambling class, tend alike to debase and enervate both individuals and nations. In many cases, however, where gambling is followed, not for its own sake, but in the hope of bringing gain, it perhaps resolves itself rather into a degenerate commercial occupation than into an actual recreation.

As regards the general character of popular amusements, it is unnecessary, as being indeed superfluous, to state here that whatever recreations contribute immediately to promote vice, ought to be strictly prohibited, as alike inimical to civilization, and corruptive of good morals. And if their tendency is in this direction, such is sufficient to warrant the prohibition of the pursuit, as the tendency alone, where that is clearly shown, is that by which we are able to determine. Nor are recreations which induce to idleness any more to be encouraged than those which lead to vice. Amusements of themselves, when exercised in moderation

and conducted fairly, cannot be reasonably deemed to be of this character. On the contrary, they are not only necessary where severe labour is followed, but it is alone by taking occasional recreation that undertakings of great ardour can be accomplished, or a life of constant hard work endured. In addition to this, previous toil is as essential to the real enjoyment of recreation, as hunger is to that of appetite.

It is the unquestionable and imperative duty of the state, to provide for, and to a certain extent to regulate also the recreation of its members, both as regards their everyday diversions, and their amusements at appointed festivals. Unless this want is adequately supplied, its place will be filled by allurements of a pernicious and profligate tendency.

On the days selected for festivals and commemorations, museums and picture galleries, and places of recreation, ought to be thrown open to the public. The theatres too might be made free to all at the cost of the state, those plays only of a strictly moral and improving character being allowed to be performed. Thus, both the drama would be encouraged, and its character raised. Music should also be provided in all public resorts; and conveyance by steamboats and railways at a reasonable rate, at the national expense, supplied on those occasions. Indeed, another mode, which is very agreeable and very improving, both to mind and body, of passing



holidays and enjoying general recreation, is that of travelling or making excursions to places of interest, and for which the present accommodation offered by railways, especially by cheap excursion trains, affords full opportunity. By fixing upon holidays and days of commemoration for such expeditions, not only would the public be enabled, by being at liberty, to avail themselves of such means; but these holidays, on the other hand, would serve to ensure to the railways a sufficient number of passengers on such occasions, so as to induce and enable them to supply excursion trains. In large and crowded cities, both the recreation and improvement of the people are best and most directly effected by expeditions into the rural districts, where they may enjoy the beauties of nature; as, on the other hand, those who live in the country may most advantageously spend their holidays in visiting the large towns, and exploring the various monuments of art. Thus might health, and enjoyment, and improvement, physical, social, and intellectual, be simultaneously provided for all classes alike; and the state become at once the dispenser of these good gifts to its members, and reap in return the fullest benefit from the results of their increased civilization.

---

## VII. DIGNITIES AND HONORARY REWARDS.

The national acknowledgment and requital of the services of those individuals who by their achievements or their virtues have rendered extensive benefit to, or have commanded the admiration of their fellow-countrymen, or of mankind in general, which is effected by conferring upon them certain state Dignities, or public Honorary Rewards, of the nature here considered ; is another very important and very efficient Element in the promotion of civilization.

All men are, indeed, by nature, as much upon an equality as are the different days in the year. But this is no reason why some particular individuals, like some particular days, should not be distinguished and marked out as of more importance than the generality ; and in the case of both, the promotion of civilization may be effected by the maintenance of such distinctions in the manner already pointed out. The institution of different orders and degrees of honour in a stage, is, moreover, in reality, but carrying out the dictate of nature, expressed in the very earliest stage of society, which, whenever men are assembled together, induces them by mutual and voluntary consent to exalt some persons above others, according to their particular qualities conferring claim to such elevation. Indeed, almost every natural attribute and endowment common to man, contributes

more or less by the various proportions in which it is possessed by different persons, to promote this inequality of station and influence among the several members of the same society, and to raise certain individuals above the rest. According as these particular qualities are valued, will the possessor of them be exalted in rank corresponding with the degree in which he is endowed with them. And the relative estimation in which they are respectively held, will depend on the state of society at the time, and its peculiar tastes and exigencies. In the establishment, therefore, of civil Dignities, civilization in this, as in many other instances, merely directs the impulses of Nature in the right course, and demands that these Dignities and Rewards shall be obtained only by real merit, and be in their quality substantial and certain, instead of trivial and arbitrary.

It is, nevertheless, as impossible actually to add to a man's mental or moral, as it is to his material stature, by any artificial contrivance or institution. The differences formed by Nature are still the only essential varieties between them. The minutest natural distinction, whether of mind or body, either in educational resources, power of speech, physical strength, size, or agility, makes more real difference between men, than the widest variation in point of dignity or wealth. As riches can annex nothing to the person, so a title can add nothing to



the mind. The only solid claim to superiority arises from talent and worth. Dignities do not, moreover, of themselves create distinctions, but they serve merely to mark those already existent, and are symbolical of their acknowledgment by the state which confers the rank, and of the homage rendered to the achievements which occasioned its creation. A title changes not the nature or character, but only the civil position of the person to whom it is given. When, therefore, national honours of this kind are bestowed upon an individual, it is not the man, but his virtues or talents, to which the homage of the state is offered. And he is rewarded not for the worth which he possesses in himself, but for the benefits which he has conferred upon the nation.

The civilizing influence possessed by the present Element of civilization, consists in the admiration which it contributes to excite among all classes for those men who are eminent for their talents or their virtues. And admiration here leads at once to imitation. Hence, each person is induced to place before his view a model of this class as his guide. Even if he does not emulate, or copy as a whole, the object of his homage, he does so with respect to some of his great qualities, and endeavours here to follow, if not to equal him. And an admiration of virtue necessarily induces a corresponding hatred of vice.

There is also a great moral effect produced by

the institution of state dignities, in the establishment and inculcation of the principle, as a national axiom, that wisdom and worth, and not mere wealth, are what entitle a man to precedence, and really raise him to social and civil rank among his fellows. Wealth of itself can, indeed, no more make a man noble, than nobility can make him wealthy. Both, however, tend to make him influential; and when he possesses the two, his power is necessarily considerable. And as merit, and not money, constitutes the claim to state dignity, so actual desert alone should command the respect of the nation. If, therefore, it be objected to the principle of conferring national honours by titles as a reward for merit, that such an institution is fitted only for a barbarous age, when symbols alone are intelligible to the multitude, and the reality is not understood; I would reply that every age, however civilized, is sufficiently barbarous to render what is obvious and discernible of more influence and effect on the public mind, than what is discoverable only after severe scrutiny, and is uncertain and disputable. Public honours are, consequently, of equal influence in all ages. That which mainly savours of barbarism relative to these dignities is, that in a refined age they should be restricted to the achievements appreciated in a rude age, and denied altogether to the far higher triumphs of civilization.

In our instructorial institutions for the educa-

tion of youth, where the greatest care is taken to frame a proper and efficient system of mental and moral discipline, and to stimulate by wholesome emulation ; the principle of dispensing honours and rewards for good conduct, as also of inflicting punishment and degradation for the neglect of duty, has been long established, and with the desired effect. If, however, the system is recognized, and is successful in the latter case, why should it not be so also in the economy of a state, which is only an assembly of persons of maturer age and experience, but where the influences are the same, though of greater importance ?

The true object of all honorary distinctions and nobility, and the legitimate end of civilization, are alike the exaltation of the higher, and ennobling, and refining influences of ability and virtue, over the lower impulses of our nature. And the only legitimate foundation of civil titles, is the superiority, either intellectual or moral, of those who bear them, to the common herd of mankind. These artificial distinctions serve as representations or imitations of those real titles to admiration and respect which the superior talents, and achievements, or worth, of certain great men have won for themselves. Thus, some have acquired by their works, claims to immortality and to fame more lasting and more extensive than any civil honours that could be bestowed upon them. Artificial dignities are,



however, of great use and influence both as public testimonies to the merits and virtues which they reward, and as establishing in the men so ennobled, and in their descendants who succeed them in their titles, living monuments of those performances, which are by this means ever kept in remembrance in the national mind. The favours thus shown, and the encouragement thus afforded to those who have conferred honour on their country, or on mankind, testify the national approval of these good deeds.

A nobility is, moreover, of great importance, as an established body or order, to the civilization of a country. By its institution, patrons are supplied to learning, and art, and science, in men of superior rank, wealth, and education, who are diffused throughout the nation, and who take a lead in all its concerns. As in a barbarous age, the aristocracy are ever foremost in the field as the leaders and directors of martial exploits, and the protectors of the land; so in time of peace are they equally useful and influential in promoting the arts of peace, and the extension of civilization. And in addition to the directly civilizing influence exercised by a nobility in the encouragement of learning and the patronage of genius; their mansions in different parts of the country, are receptacles for treasures in science and literature, and exhibit productions of taste and refinement by which the popular

mind is affected. Although these possessions are the material property of but a few, they are open to the public at large, and intellectually benefit and civilize the whole nation.

The example, moreover, afforded by this body to their inferiors, who naturally look up to them for guidance, is very influential, and promotes the observance of the laws, and a respect for virtue.

But as a considerable portion of the civilizing influence of an aristocracy in a nation is derived from their wealth, which enables them to become patrons of art and learning, and to have ample leisure to devote to their own cultivation and improvement; and as it is, moreover, most desirable that such a body should possess a stake in the interests of the country; it appears essential that means should be adopted by the state to prevent so influential and important an institution belonging to it from becoming impoverished, and thus liable to corrupt influence, or to the suspicion of any such failing, in itself degrading and detrimental. This could be effected by annexing landed estates of a specified extent to each title conferred, so as to descend with it in perpetuity, and be unalienable altogether. Upon the grant of any new peerage, it might be made a condition that the recipient should permanently settle upon it a certain quantum of property, either in land or money, for its due maintenance. In favour of peerages insuffi-

ciently provided for, or where the estate annexed to them has become dilapidated, and indeed in favour of peerages generally, the law against perpetuities might also reasonably and advantageously be repealed, so far as to enable them to accumulate and to retain property to a certain fixed amount.\*

Dignities and honorary titles are not, however, by any means exclusively confined to peerages and other hereditary honours. Indeed, the grand division of the people in a civilized nation is into two main classes, consisting of the order of Gentility, and the vulgar order. And this division, which is established by custom and general consent, is far more arbitrary, and more strictly observed, than any artificial arrangement as to civil rank in society. Thus, the humblest gentleman and the sovereign may meet at table on terms of comparative equality; while the humblest gentleman and the highest below that station could not do so without a violation of what is considered as propriety and decorum. And yet this term Gentility, which is deemed so essential to determine the boundary between these different ranks, is of itself most difficult to define with certainty and accuracy. Nevertheless, that which on the whole, really in any individual constitutes his essential claim to gentility, is his civilization, considering this not merely as education,

\* See this question more fully discussed in 'The True Theory of Representation in a State,' pp. 71-73.



much less as wealth, but in the largest and most comprehensive sense in which the word can be understood ; implying his refinement in mind, and manners, and feeling, as well as mental cultivation.

Gentility, indeed, exercises a very extensive moral and civilizing influence throughout the nation. Honorary titles, too, are of many different degrees and orders ; and consist not only of dignities, but the various ranks in the several professions have their titles annexed to them. These honours, which are open to every one, are of immense use and influence in promoting a laudable emulation among all classes, and should be distributed so as directly and efficiently to stimulate talent, and exertion, and virtue, in each department. Honorary titles of various kinds, which have no political or direct social duties attached to them as in the case of a peerage, may well be conferred as the rewards of literary or scientific merit, especially in those pursuits where from time to time such distinctions appear most requisite. In an advanced age of civilization like our own, eminence in these important undertakings deserves as much to be encouraged as does skill in martial enterprise during a warlike era.

Dignities, indeed, even of the highest kind, were originally sometimes conferred as rewards for efforts in the cause of civilization. So far back as the comparatively barbarous Saxon era, peerages were given

on account of skill in navigation, and for exertion in making discoveries. How much greater, therefore, is the obligation of us, in the present age, when dexterity in martial exploits is happily so much less requisite, to render these honours conducive to the mental and moral improvement and civilization of the nation. Of such importance, indeed, did Aristotle deem the due distribution of honours in a state, that he considered the stability of the government to depend mainly on the three following circumstances:—1. The respect due to age and experience. 2. The distribution of honours and offices according to evident and approved method. 3. An education accurately adapted to the pattern of the commonwealth. In his *Politics*, this great philosopher and politician observes,—"In the contest therefore for civil pre-eminence, education and virtue seem fairly entitled to the first honours, because of all things education and virtue most contribute to the perfection of civil society."\* If, therefore, the due distribution of these honours is so important; surely it must be of correspondingly great importance that the objects to be encouraged by them should be rightly selected, and with a proper regard to the condition, and state of civilization, and mental and moral exigencies of the nation. If, in a martial age, titles, and estates, and pensions, are conferred on those who have success-

\* Book iii.

fully led the forces of the country against the enemy ; surely, in an age of peace and civilization, those who exert themselves for the extirpation of barbarism and ignorance, and effect mighty and splendid triumphs in works of genius and science, ought not to be neglected.

A hero, in the strict sense of the term, is an individual who, possessing both talents and endowments above the common order, has devoted them to the service of his fellow-creatures instead of for the benefit of himself, and who on this account deserves to be held up to general admiration, and to be pointed to as an example for imitation. Surely, therefore, a man who has achieved mighty conquests, or effected great discoveries, in art or science, where, although the perils to life are not so immediate as on the ocean or on the field of battle, the danger to bodily health is quite as imminent ; is as fully entitled as one who adventures in the latter, to have his services acknowledged by the nation, and to be honoured by those dignities which are bestowed as the peculiar marks of approval by the state. Nor does there seem to be any cause why the names of dignities and titles of honour should not as well be chosen from grand achievements in science, as from certain spots on the earth's surface ; or why an original invention should not as fairly be honoured in this manner, as the name of a city or a plain where a victory was won. More espe-



cially, if peerages were conferred as rewards for scientific or artistical distinction, instead of for success in physical enterprise, would such a mode of deriving their designation appear in every way reasonable. The most appropriate and honourable way of selecting a title for men eminent for their efforts or their attainments, would in that case be to take it from the name of the work which they have achieved, or from the branch of art or science in which they have effected any great enterprise, and which would at once denote the claim to the honour, as well as indicate the precise nature of the dignity. Indeed, in many cases even now, it seems palpably absurd in the bestowal of a peerage to assume a title from a place over which the ennobled person has not only no dominion, nor acquires any by his dignity, but with which it frequently happens that he has no connection of any kind. We ridicule the Emperor of China for styling himself the Brother of the Sun, and yet some of the titles of nobility conferred by our own Sovereign are as empty and as unmeaning.

Nevertheless, although the system upon which nobility is conferred may be to a certain extent exhausted and out of date, and even many of the direct objects of the institution itself no longer attainable; yet the results of the establishment of such an order, and the indirect advantages derived from it, which are in many cases far more impor-

tant and more influential than those which are direct, are of immense, and indeed incalculable value. The main question, however, at issue here is, whether by certain modifications in the system of creating peerages, the institution itself might not be made more entirely, more essentially, and more extensively serviceable to the requirements of society and of civilization in this country. And more especially whether an order which in a martial age was originated and intended mainly as the reward of martial exploits; in a civilized age ought not to be adapted and applied for the advancement of civilization.

The distribution of minor honours, such as knighthood, among persons of middle rank in the state, as was formerly the custom, is of great influence as regards the binding together the different orders of society, and strengthening the nobility by the buttresses thus planted around it. On this account it is to be regretted that they are not more generously dealt out, especially to those in civic offices, and in the provincial cities and towns in various parts of the country; and that in a commercial kingdom like ours, there is not a class of dignities expressly adapted and intended to be conferred on men engaged in commercial pursuits, and who are filling responsible corporate and other inferior civil posts. Knighthood, which was once the honour ordinarily bestowed upon persons of this class, is now

generally reserved for more special occasions. And yet it is in many respects of great consequence that people of the rank alluded to should share in, and should be thus directly influenced by the honorary dignities which the state has to award.

Whether a new order of dignities especially reserved for those who are distinguished in art, science, or letters, might not very advantageously be constituted, appears deserving of grave consideration; and thus an institution of "able"-men as well as "noble"-men, would be existent in the nation: a body, moreover, that might well be entrusted with the disposal of many important social, commercial, intellectual, and moral questions, which, though not strictly of a legislative character, it is of great consequence to the state to have fairly discussed and determined.

In an age so different as is the present, in all its leading characteristics, from that in which peerages were originated, it appears almost necessary to institute some new degrees more expressly adapted to serve as rewards for achievements in the arts of peace. Now, more than ever, such distinctions are influential, and now, more than ever are they requisite.

For the purpose of conferring dignities on those who have eminently distinguished themselves either in art or science, by great literary efforts, or by original inventions, and which they may be proud to



hand down to posterity ; might not the ancient titles of Thane and of Vavasour be advantageously revived, which living now only in the romance and literature of our country, and being so associated with the poetry of its history, would aptly be availed of to honour, in an age of civilization, its intellectual heroes, as in a rude and martial age they ennobled its warriors ? These dignities might give a seat in the Upper House of the Legislature to the holders of them, when such was desired ; or in other cases, like baronetcies, they might confer no exclusive privileges on the possessors, but would be marks of distinction only to them and their descendants ; the title of Thane serving as the honorary dignity for distinction in poetry and literature, and that of Vavasour for eminence in philosophy and science.

If objections be raised to rendering honorary titles for intellectual merit hereditary, on the ground that the talents and acquirements of the first possessors of them do not descend to their posterity with their rank ; I would reply that, by rendering these dignities hereditary, you keep alive the remembrance of the men thus distinguished, and preserve their representatives to remote ages, which contributes more than anything to excite a laudable stimulus in the public mind to emulate their good deeds. And even in cases where the memory of their fame does not require to be thus perpetuated, it is at any

rate advantageous, and conducive to civilization, to perpetuate the remembrance of the national homage which was rendered to it. In those instances, moreover, where a particular title of nobility has acquired great distinction on account of the splendid qualities of the bearer, but such title has afterwards become extinct; it seems most desirable that it should be revived by being selected as the title of some newly created peer of less renown personally, by means of which a representative of the individual so distinguished would always be preserved, and the remembrance of these great deeds kept continually alive.

It is, however, well worthy of consideration whether, in addition to the dignities already proposed, some new order of nobility, such as that of peerages for life, might not in some cases very advantageously be granted to men eminent for their intellectual acquirements, or for their achievements, and whose presence in the Upper House of the Legislature would both grace that assembly, and add much to the value of its deliberations, besides furnishing a suitable mode of encouraging and honouring such attainments; the possessors of which might not, however, be endowed with hereditary wealth, which is quite independent of their personal qualification for the dignity in question. This might be effected either by limiting the peerage to the life of the person ennobled, or by annexing peerages to

certain state offices, as in the case of Bishoprics, which the holders of them for the time might enjoy.\*

It is no proof against the extensive mental and moral influences which may be produced by the institution of titles and honorary degrees, whether by nobility or by minor distinctions, that the greatest names in each department of art and science, in martial enterprise and in the history of the nation, have acquired the highest fame, and have gained immortal honour, without any such rank, and far beyond what the latter could have procured. We may admit, indeed, that the peerage granted to the author of the '*Novum Organum*,' added nothing to his reputation, and that the name of Francis Bacon is nobler in our ears, and will endure longer than that of Viscount St. Alban's. Shakespeare, too, would have obtained no renown by the highest title that could have been bestowed upon him; and no coronet on the brow of Newton or of Milton could have added to the lustre of their glory. But all this is not because nobility and civil distinctions do not confer honour on those so exalted, but because there are some so dignified by nature as to be incapable of civil exaltation. The ornaments not only of their country but of their kind, the distinguishing lights not merely of the century in

\* See also on this subject, '*The True Theory of Representation in a State*,' pp. 73-76.



which they shone, but who will be the beacons of all successive ages; they require no aid from the institutions of man to make prominent and permanent illustrious names, which are as luminous as the planets in the heavens, and as durable as the elements of Nature. Talents such as theirs it is vain to emulate, and their wisdom it is hopeless to teach others to equal. Their virtue nevertheless may excite admiration, and by the praise of their good deeds, we may aspire to move others not only to applaud, but to follow. And it is in humble imitation of the great and noble dignities which they have thus earned, originated and conferred by Nature herself, and whose influence is so important and so beneficial, that the various civil dignities and honorary distinctions of the kind already alluded to, have been founded among states, by the sagacity of their rulers, for the civilization of the people.

Not only, however, ought the nation to take under its patronage, and to bestow honours on those who have successfully distinguished themselves either in art, science, or literature, or have otherwise conferred real benefit upon mankind; but even those also who have unsuccessfully pursued the same course may occasionally and even equally deserve state bounty and reward, provided that their productions are possessed of actual merit, and that their failure was owing not to deficiency in the latter,

but to circumstances wholly independent of any such considerations. As already remarked, the discoverers of new inventions of the utmost value frequently fail to reap the reward of their talents. And many whose genius was neglected and unacknowledged while they were alive, and who were consequently left to linger in obscurity, when the grave has closed over them have been duly honoured by posterity. It is also to be here borne in mind, that the highest efforts in art, and the most meritorious and useful discoveries in science, by no means necessarily ensure any adequate pecuniary recompense, or even protect the achievers of them from the cravings of poverty. As Milton's immortal 'Paradise Lost' decreases nothing in value as a product of genius, from the insignificance of the sum which was paid for the copyright; so poverty in purse is no proof of paucity in intellect of any person. Hence, those men of distinguished merit and acquirements, and whose talents have been devoted to the good of mankind, but who are wanting in the wealth of others engaged in the same honourable career, may be aptly and advantageously rewarded with pensions, or other pecuniary provision, by the state. They are, indeed, peculiarly fit objects for such endowments, as, without directly benefiting themselves, they have directly benefited their country, and they have sacrificed personal gain to enrich mankind at large. In-



deed, intellectual exertion, especially of the highest kind, but seldom leads to riches, and men of the noblest genius are least of all adapted to obtain them. The sordid acquirements produced by everyday occupations, they leave to others, for whom they provide treasures which no wealth can purchase. Not seldom, however, are they the means of ensuring to the rest of mankind, by the discoveries which they unfold, pecuniary as well as mental gain. Intellectual enterprises, moreover, although the pursuit of them may ensure the utmost satisfaction to their followers, as regards their enjoyments of that class, produce, frequently, also a large amount of misery, both from the injury to health which they occasion, and the neglect of worldly affairs to which they oftentimes lead.

A book is the fruit of the mind of the author, which he gives to the world, but which, as in the case of that springing from a tree, while it contains the essence of what is good in the latter, impoverishes its own being, though it enriches him who gathers it. An author's works constitute as it were the cream of his mind. In them are concentrated the choicest of his ideas; but they deteriorate the remainder of his stock of thoughts. Hence, great authors in ordinary society, are often observed to be very commonplace men. Works also, whether literary or scientific, which are of national importance, may reasonably not only be rewarded and pa-



tronized, but in certain cases should be undertaken at the national expense; and that not merely on account of their value to the country, but because they are too vast for individual enterprise. For the accomplishment of these, state pensions might not only fairly but advantageously be granted, and an annual sum out of the public revenues very properly devoted to so desirable a purpose.

In a nation where a perfect system for the extension of civilization is pursued, the rewards by the state which are conferred for intellectual efforts, should be the highest, and should far exceed those for mere manual labour, or where results of a physical kind only are attained. But it should at the same time be borne in mind that pecuniary rewards are neither so high nor so honourable as those of a titular class; and that where circumstances admit of it, intellectual enterprises should ever be requited by some donation more correspondent with their own quality than money, such as dignities adapted for the purpose. There is no reason, indeed, why, in cases deserving of and requiring them, both pension and dignity should not be granted to the same individual; the one being given to him as a recompense for the toil he has undergone for the good of the nation, the other as a mark of the respect and honour with which the nation regards him. Professional services, which are ordinarily of a laborious nature, though more or less demanding in-

tellectual effort of a certain amount, are very properly requited by money, as that forms the standard of all material recompense, although it would ill reward high intellectual exertion. Money serves very well to pay for the bestowal of medical or legal skill, which should strictly, as in ordinary services, be paid in kind, by rendering again services of the same nature. But as this would be always inconvenient, and often impossible, money is given, which in its value represents the return of services. Money, too, indirectly, to some extent, serves as a reward for intellectual labour, as it supplies the wants and necessities to which every man, however intellectual, is more or less subject. Beyond this, however, it is wholly unadapted for intellectual recompense; much less is it to be considered as the ultimate aim of intellectual efforts. Professional men are properly paid by money, as that, or what money represents or will procure, is their ultimate object in following their profession. But money is not the proper reward of philosophers and poets, as neither money, nor that which money represents, is their ultimate object. They prefer what they gain in honour and reputation to any pecuniary reward.

Nevertheless, as professional men more or less desire to derive some fame and reputation, as well as pecuniary recompense, from the skill which they exert; so ought men engaged in intellectual efforts to obtain, along with the reputation which they ac-

quire, some substantial pecuniary recompense, especially as this is essential for their ordinary comfort, and consequently for the due carrying on of their enterprises. But with them, this pecuniary recompense ought ever to be considered not as their main, but only as a collateral object. Professional men seek to benefit individuals only. Men of intellectual effort aim to benefit all mankind. The state is therefore the proper rewarder and patron of the latter, as their clients and patients are of the former.

Care should, however, be taken in the dispensation of rewards for literary efforts, lest, as has occasionally happened, the bestowal of the reward, which was intended for encouragement to future exertion, as well as a requital for past achievements, by satisfying the desire of the individual so remunerated, operate as a means of preventing all further endeavours, now that the coveted distinction is attained, or the pressure of want is withdrawn; so that, what was here meant as a stimulus to new enterprise, has the contrary effect of extinguishing it altogether. Pecuniary rewards are of course more open to this objection than are those of a purely honorary kind. But where real genius instigated the exertions of the individual in question, it is hardly to be apprehended that his ambition would be so easily quenched, or that his highest ulterior aim would be merely the procurement of a means of comfortable subsistence. Where



his efforts are carried on solely for the latter object, it is probable that the suspension of them would occasion but a trifling loss to the community.

It is much to be regretted, not only that literary pensions have not been established upon a more liberal scale than is at present the case, but that they have not been dispensed upon a more systematic and equitable plan. To some extent perhaps the insignificance of the sums appropriated, for this purpose, occasions a corresponding neglect as to the correct mode of their being apportioned. Nevertheless, the claims of literary and scientific men are, in reality, generally far more certain and defined, and more clearly distinguishable, than are those of rival candidates for advancement in the same profession, but whose deserts are, in ordinary cases, even as regards their promotion, much more equitably rewarded. To most of the professions, indeed, there are offices of dignity and emolument attached, to which eminent and successful practitioners in them may hope eventually to be raised. Literature and science, as such, having no preferment of this nature annexed to their pursuit, the state is bound to supply the omission, and to reward by pecuniary pension those whose wants and whose merits render them worthy of such a recompense.

In the distribution, moreover, of the professional preferment and other civil appointments belonging

to the state, its rulers should be ever careful to select the most deserving objects, as regards their ability and their eminence in their respective departments. As in each country there will be men of every variety in talent, and character, and age ; so it should be the especial aim of the government not only to enlist in its service the ablest and the best, but to employ each in the particular offices which they are peculiarly and best qualified to fill. This is, indeed, the real secret of securing success, not merely in any great undertaking, but in the general and ordinary conduct of affairs ; although perhaps, especially in the affairs of states where it is most needed, there is no principle more neglected. Men of each character and kind of talent may be made useful in their several ways if engaged in their proper departments, and the deficiencies of one may be corrected by the acquirements or virtues of others. And men of whatever talent may prove useless if employed in those departments for which they are the least qualified. By a strict attention to its duties as regards the distribution of its patronage, the state may accomplish much in the promotion of civilization, which is of course as essentially dependent on the skill and learning with which the various professions carried on in the nation are conducted ; as their skill and learning, if not actually dependent upon, are at any rate affected by the manner in which

the higher qualities of its professors receive encouragement from the state.

In addition, however, to the dignities conferred upon, and the pecuniary rewards given to men of distinguished literary and scientific merit, or who have rendered eminent services to their country; there ought to be established in every civilized state an order not only of dignities, but of rewards of a middle rank, corresponding with and applicable to the people of that degree, and which might be offered to, and would hold out a constant stimulus to persons of that class, as the return for signal acts, either of heroism or of virtue, or for extraordinary merit of any kind, either mental or moral. Sometimes even inferior virtues and qualities, especially orders, deserve and require peculiar encouragement in the lower by the state. Thus, physical courage, which is after all but an animal quality, and has no intellectual endowment about it, demands to be patronized, and developed, and rewarded; and indeed is so by all nations who engage much in war. This characteristic, it is most important for the army to possess as a body, which in the state represents the *brutum fulmen* of the man; depending for its head, and scientific direction, and energy, upon its generals, with whom wisdom and discretion, rather than valour, is mainly essential, although with them the latter as well is doubtless indispensable. Integrity, too, especially in a com-



mercial country, it is expedient thus publicly to encourage. Indeed, in each nation, that peculiar virtue or quality which, from whatever cause, most needs to be cultivated, should be countenanced and nurtured by the government. Such stimulants to good conduct as those referred to, are surely equally necessary for people in the middle, as for those in the higher ranks of society; and probably a great deal more so, as the mutual incitements to efforts of the class here mentioned, will be far less frequent among the former than among the latter. They are, indeed, generally and mainly requisite, not so much to excite to good deeds those who perform them, and who would be disposed thus to act wholly independent of such considerations; as to proclaim to the common herd of mankind, who require to be influenced in this mode, the merit of such achievements, and the respect paid to them by the nation.

---

#### VIII. MORAL JURISPRUDENCE.

Another very essential and very influential Element in the promotion of civilization, the consideration of some branches of which has been already embraced in certain of the preceding Elements,\* is that which may most aptly be included under the

\* *Vide ante*, Elements V. and VI.

term "Moral Jurisprudence," by which I mean the general regulation, framing, and administration of such laws and legislative acts as directly affect and influence the civilization and moral condition of the nation. All law, indeed, tends indirectly more or less to the promotion of civilization, as contributing to terminate anarchy, which is essentially inimical thereto; but Moral Jurisprudence alone directly promotes civilization. Moreover, the more advanced is the condition of civilization in any country, the more exalted will be the aim of its jurisprudential code. And the more exalted is the aim of its jurisprudential code, the more extensive will be the care which is devoted to that department of legislation which seeks to secure a high tone of morals, and of which Moral Jurisprudence forms the leading portion.

Laws of every kind, but more especially moral laws, must not only be adapted to the precise purposes they are intended to serve, but should aim only at ends which are within their legitimate scope. While some objects cannot be effected without the aid of law, others are entirely beyond its aid, and which moral influences alone can reach. Thus, the mere intentions of the mind, not carried into actual operation, which, however bad in themselves, have never become matured, are not within the scope of the law. So those acts which do not either affect society, nor are contrary to the laws of God,

nor are known to others besides the doer of them, or which are committed by persons out of the jurisdiction of the realm, are beyond the pale of jurisprudence. The state has nevertheless a right to declare certain acts to be unlawful and punishable as such, which, although not contrary to the principles of morality, or the laws of Nature, are, or are deemed to be, injurious to such society, or at variance with the established economy of the nation. Nothing, however, tends so much to destroy the general influence of the law, as its proved inefficiency in any particular case. It should never aim but where it has the power to strike. Threats which cannot be enforced, expose us to mockery, not only when we use them as bugbears, but also when we are in earnest. The state should, moreover, be both lenient and liberal as regards the framing of its laws ; but, when once enacted, their observance ought to be rigidly enforced. Their material should be such that though it will bend before the gentlest breeze, it will never break beneath the most violent storm.

Justice and right are principles which not only belong to a state of nature as well as to one of artificial society, but they form the foundation of all society. It is not the province of civilization to abolish or repudiate these principles, but only to render their application more perfect. And although the means for attaining this object may be



more complicated in a civilized than in a rude condition of society; in the former the end ought ever to be effected with more certainty, and more satisfactorily. If justice and right are in some special cases more perilled in a state of civilization than during barbarism, they at least have the opportunity, in the former case, of being practically carried out to a far higher degree of perfection. Nevertheless, as there are some topics quite beyond the reach of our knowledge, so there are some matters wholly beyond the sphere of legislation. These it may be difficult to define, or to point out the precise principle of demarcation by which they are limited. Matters of practice, and those which immediately concern the public weal, are ordinarily within the strict pale of the law; while those of opinion and speculation, or whose conduct does not affect society, are not adapted to be dealt with in this manner.

Moreover, if on any topic, precision and certainty of language are required, they are unquestionably essential in the framing of laws, where doubt or ambiguity may not only be of consequences the most pernicious, but even defeat the very aim and purpose of the law itself.\* Yet on no

\* The Parliament of this nation having, in its august wisdom, from time immemorial up to the present period, adopted an exactly opposite principle to the one here laid down; it is perhaps somewhat presumptuous, if not actually incurring a high breach of privilege, for me to question its soundness.

subject have these defects been suffered to prevail to so great an extent as in our legislative enactments; and, as might have been expected, all the evils to be calculated upon as the result, have ensued. In some instances, our laws have failed to attain the very objects which were specially intended to be brought within their scope. In others, they have been determined to apply to topics with which their framers had no intention of dealing. In nearly every case, doubt and uncertainty have marred the efficiency of our legal codes, upon whatever subject, owing to their having been so clumsily constructed.

There are certain distinct and independent branches of jurisprudence which may be with propriety especially comprehended under the term Moral Jurisprudence, as having reference more particularly to those matters which concern the mental and moral condition and civilization of a state. Such are the laws relating to and regulating all topics connected with education, religion, and the liberty of the press, which have already been considered here. In addition to these, the laws which determine the form of government and political institutions of a state, those relating to marriage and other social relations, those respecting crimes and their punishment, the administration of oaths, and the institution of disabilities from moral causes, together with other laws which are

either directly or indirectly of a moral nature in themselves, or as regards their influence on civilization, may be here included.

But the real and true essence of Moral Jurisprudence consists not so much in the enunciation or design of any particular code of laws, as in the quality of the leading principle by which all laws, of whatever nature, should be more or less directly or indirectly pervaded, and which should serve to give a high moral tone and spirit to legislation in general.

The grand principle to be kept in view as regards Moral Jurisprudence, is consequently as follows. That the moral as well as the material wants of a people ought to command the care, and to form the subject of legislation. That these moral wants are of superior importance to those which are material. That in every legislative measure, there is involved a moral as well as a material consideration. And that, important in its results and influences as is legislation, there are, nevertheless, moral causes ever in operation which are far more powerful, and which during the process of legislation ought always to be taken into calculation.

With respect to the particular principles of legislation to which I have already referred as more especially connected with Moral Jurisprudence, the subject may be considered in a twofold manner:—  
I. As regards the form of government established



in any particular country, and its peculiar adaptation for the promotion of civilization. II. As regards the particular laws which may be enacted in any country, bearing either directly or indirectly on civilization.

I. The object of a constitutional free form of government, is to ensure the establishment of such a code of laws as will secure the greatest amount of freedom to the generality, without encroaching on the liberty, safety, or enjoyment of individuals. Where the liberty of individuals is abridged for the former purpose, the gain to the state ought to be so great as fully to compensate for the loss thus sustained; and for this measure of freedom so subtracted from particular persons, should be returned to the members of the community, generally and individually, a portion at any rate as large as that of which the persons who suffer abridgment of their liberty for this end are deprived. The utmost extent of personal liberty which any man has a right to enjoy, amounts to this: that he be allowed to follow the dictates of his own will, so far as his doing so does not encroach upon, abridge, or interfere with the liberty or well-being of others.

Liberty consists, indeed, not in securing to each individual what is best for him, but what he wills and determines to be the best for himself. A man is not free who is compelled against his will to do what is most conducive to his own interest. But a

man is free who is allowed to do that which is injurious to himself; although in this case, from inability to use that freedom aright, it may prove a bane instead of a blessing. It is, nevertheless, and not a whit the less so, freedom still.

Moreover, liberty is not only the most perfect, but the most natural condition of man. It is not merely that state which affords the fullest opportunity for the complete display of all his powers and energies; but it is that in which he was originally placed, and in which he will always remain unless deprived of it by some external cause or agent. To keeping itself in this position, and to a restoration to it when deprived of it, the mind will also ever naturally tend. And this is the only condition in which the genius, and taste, and capacities of each individual in the nation can obtain ample development. Tyranny, on the other hand, consists in the exercise of authority by the stronger over the weaker, so as to prevent the latter from acting according to the impulse of his will or determination, or so as to cause him to act contrary to them.

There is, indeed, a great and essential difference between subjection to rule, and subjection to slavery. In the one case, a man obeys a fixed and reasonable law in common with his fellow-men, and in order to secure the common good, and the common liberty of all. In the other case, he obeys an uncertain and arbitrary rule, which exists only

for the good of the ruler, and to the injury and injustice of the person obliged to submit to it. Obedience to law is voluntary; to slavery it is compulsive. Every man subjects himself to legitimate rule in the discipline which he imposes on his own conduct, and over his own passions and appetites. Every one resists and abhors slavery, and recoils from it as injurious alike to society and to his own individual interests. In the one sense, therefore, every man is free. In the other, every man is in bonds.

Thus, too, there may be anarchy in an individual as well as in a nation, which results whenever a person throws off all rule, and all due moral discipline and restraint, and not only contends for entire liberty of action, but conducts himself without regard to order or decorum. This, however, is the condition and the course of action, not of a civilized or of a free man, or even of man in a state of nature, but of a maniac.

Civil governments of every description may be divided into two classes. Those where the supreme authority and influence in the state are vested in one person, as in the case of monarchical governments; and those where they are vested in several persons, as in the case of representative and republican governments.

A country which is ruled over, and whose affairs are directed by an absolute monarch, who follows



exactly the bent of his own genius in whatever he prescribes; has the most complete opportunity of reaping all the advantages which the wisdom and the goodness of such a person can confer, and which he has the amplest means of carrying out without being in any way thwarted or interfered with. But as the great majority of men, and even of monarchs, are not endowed either with capacities or with inclinations to adapt them to be rulers of this order, and as states suffer correspondingly as their rulers are wanting in perfection in this respect, and fall below this high standard; so, in a limited monarchy, an attempt is made to afford the opportunity for the exercise of such beneficial influence on the part of the sovereign, as regards his desire to benefit his subjects; and also to aid the monarch as regards his capacity so to act, by supplying apt statesmen and counsellors who may devise such measures and proceedings as the ability of the monarch may fail to originate.

One immense advantage possessed by a sovereign, and of which the nation reaps the full benefit, is that, from his high and commanding position, he is able to secure for the service of the state, all the ablest and sagest men in the land, and of whose counsel he is made the receptacle; so that if he be but a person of only ordinary capacity and judgment, he has the best possible means of arriving at a right conclusion on these very important

matters. From the probability of his succeeding to the throne, the amplest opportunities are also afforded for qualifying by education, in the most advantageous manner possible for those onerous duties, the heir who is next to fill that exalted post.

Nevertheless, the only government, of which we have any experience, that is at once perfectly absolute and perfectly good, is that of the Deity, as He alone can do all that He wills, and all that He wills and does is the best. His sway, moreover, exhibits and reflects everywhere, and in numerous ways, His complete and infinite perfection. All other absolute governments bear the impress of, and variously exhibit the manifold imperfections of their rulers.

The moral influence, and power to promote civilization in a state, possessed by the sovereign, is in every case very extensive, and much may be effected by his individual exertions in this respect. Our Alfred the Great is a noble instance of what a monarch may do here ; and sovereigns of the present age have been found to follow his illustrious example. The personal inclination of the sovereign directly animates the court ; and is, as it were, reflected from him on the nobility, who in like manner govern the circle within their sphere. From them it is communicated to the different ranks throughout the realm, each member of which, as the head of his little community or family, exercises in the same way, though in a less degree, the moral

sway of his superiors. Probably, in modern times at least, the real essence of a sovereign's power consists in this moral influence which he is enabled so extensively to exert, and which gives him more authority than the most absolute command over the persons of his subjects could confer. By this means, indeed, he controls not their bodies but their minds, and thus extends his rule over their very wills and desires.

What is vulgarly called fashion, is in reality but a species of the moral control which is effected by the example and personal influence of some individuals of high authority, such as that which the sovereign exercises in certain matters, on all ranks throughout his dominions. This is immediately experienced in trifling concerns, such as manners, and taste in dress, because these are the easiest to be affected, as a straw flung up into the air shows at once in what direction the wind is blowing. But the same influence is extended insensibly also to matters of far higher import; and ultimately topics of the gravest nature, subjects of deep importance in literature, science, morals, and religion, are brought under its control. Just as the same wind which agitates the dust at our feet, will in its course, and in those regions where the current has its full sway, lay prostrate the trees of the forest, animate the sails of stately men-of-war, and raise the ocean into a foam.



Each of the rulers in the kingdom, as well as its supreme governor, ought to be men of superior talent, education, and virtue ; and, as already observed, it is the predominance of persons of this class, that is essential to the civilization and the right constitution of a state. As in a nation the more highly cultivated portion of it should rule the lower ; so in those who are themselves appointed to rule, the higher endowments and powers should systematically prevail over the animal propensities and feelings.

The moral influence which the different rulers of a people possess over the nation, must necessarily be very extensive, both as regards the public measures they originate, and the example they afford ; inasmuch as the eyes of the multitude will be ever attentively directed to their movements, and their conduct will stimulate many. And although those in authority may not themselves be able to make laws, yet they may neglect the observance of them, and may neglect to punish such a breach in others. For good or for evil, therefore, their influence is most important. But after all, those of the middle class, as Aristotle observes,\* constitute the mainstay of a nation, as the ordinary powers and faculties of the mind are of the most general practical use, and best serve the common purposes of life.

\* *Ante*, p. 11.

It is in republican and representative governments, however, that the rulers of a state possess the most influence, as the whole power is vested in this body ; and springing from the people, they are accountable to them, and their actions are more closely watched as matters in which the people have a direct interest.

A government in which representation forms a leading part, is also extensively favourable to civilization, as each person having a voice in public affairs, is induced to study and make himself acquainted with them, and to exercise his mind in the principles and practice of government, which is a branch of education that is both very improving to each, and for which each is more or less well adapted. Representative governments are consequently best fitted for enlightened and advanced ages in the world, and in the history of each particular nation, and can only be efficiently carried out by a people in a comparatively high state of civilization. Dark and uncivilized times, when the people are blinded by ignorance or superstition, require a despotic ruler, not only to be their director, but to compel them to follow the right path.

In framing a representative government or body, especial care should be taken that the great and leading interests of the nation, its worth, and intelligence and property, and not the mere predominance of numbers, be the basis on which it is

formed.\* And as in a representative assembly, each member when elected, although returned by one particular district only, represents each district in the country, and the whole nation; so, by whatever interest he is delegated, he should consider himself the representative and protector of each of the great national interests alike. In every state moreover which is possessed of a representative assembly, the electoral body should comprise the essence or choicest part of the whole nation, the representative the essence of the electoral, and the ministerial the essence of the representative.† This essence should consist in, or be constituted by the best selection of men as regards their virtue, their ability, and their wealth. It is most important that this grand principle be kept in view in the formation of a representative system, whatever kind of government exists in the state; and in proportion as this principle is regarded and pursued, will that system be more or less perfect.

Governments which are either wholly or partially representative, so far as to possess an independent legislative body of their own, have, moreover, this great advantage as regards the moral influence of their laws in general; that the people consider that these laws are made by themselves, and that they

\* See this principle more fully explained and advocated in 'The True Theory of Representation in a State.'

† True Theory of Representation in a State.



are not only therefore the more strictly bound to obey them and to assent to all their provisions, but that it may reasonably be inferred they are expressly adapted to their particular exigencies.

Governments of a mixed form, like the British constitution, possess many of the advantages, as regards the extension and encouragement of civilization, both of a monarchy and of a representative state. The influence in favour of civilization of the aristocratic branch in the British constitution, has already been adverted to in the preceding Element. It may here be remarked in addition, that an important civilizing effect is produced by the co-existence in the nation of two independent legislative bodies, which are not only rival to each other, but are so differently constituted that by their joint operation every legislative question becomes thoroughly sifted, and is viewed in all its bearings according to the various points of observation from which it is surveyed. And even further than this, it may be observed that one of the characteristics of a mixed form of government,—highly favorable alike to civilization and to freedom,—is the extensive party feeling that it engenders; different interests springing up in opposition to each other, the real root of which is the rivalry existing between the various branches of the state. Thus, in our own country, the popular party originates in or takes root from the representative branch in the

government. The aristocratic party springs from the influence of the House of Lords. That which is most favourable to prerogative, may be traced to the influence of the Crown. These parties, however, in the progress of their growth intermingle one with the other, and vary in their principles according to circumstances. Each party, indeed, like an individual and like a state, has its different ages ; its youth, its manhood, and its decline. Certain diseases, too, are incident to each, and to each at particular periods. In the history of parties, both in politics and religion, this is observable.

II. The primary object of all laws may be said to be threefold. 1. The maintenance of order. 2. The maintenance of property. 3. The maintenance of liberty. The primary effect of moral laws should be, in conjunction with those already specified, to exalt the higher over the baser influences in a state ; and to encourage and reward ability and virtue, and to discourage and punish licentiousness and vice. Under moral laws are comprehended,—1. Rewards. 2. Restrictions. 3. Punishments. They concern,—1. Religion and morals. 2. Manners and customs. These laws, in common with others, fail mainly from three causes:—1. From being impracticable, as unfitted for the objects aimed at. 2. From being inefficient, as, though adapted for the objects in view, not reaching the end to be attained. 3. From being inoperative, as contrary to the spirit and feeling of the people.

In every nation, and in the same nation at different periods of its history, some main leading principle, according to circumstances, will, nevertheless, be referred to, to direct its general legislative economy. In rude nations, the love of liberty has been adopted as this principle. In such a country, the same principle may continue to predominate through the later ages of its history, but it will then be blended with other principles, such as the maintenance of order, and of justice, the promotion of commerce and science. Besides, liberty in itself is very different in one stage and condition of society to what it is in another; and becomes much more complex and extended as the wants and desires of society spring up. As a general rule, however, the freedom of the government, and the share of liberty which it allows to the people, especially as regards matters of opinion, and religion, and politics, at whatever period of its progress, have a considerable influence on the civilization of the nation. Some laws must be, moreover, adapted for some particular countries only, and have reference to their peculiar situation and condition. Those relating to a naval force, for instance, or to harbours, could not easily be made applicable to a country entirely inland, and destitute of either. Thus also was it with many of the laws prescribed to the Jews.

The aid of legislation to effect moral objects, is chiefly sought for in those instances where certain



express moral duties have to be prescribed, or the omission of certain acts is to be prohibited. Laws relating to religion and morality, which punish open breaches of them, are of this nature. Like medicine in the case of physical disease, they should be resorted to only to correct the evils and disorders arising out of an artificial state of society, and merely to aid reason and nature in resuming their legitimate sway. Thus, they should protect the weak against the strong, and the peace or liberty of the many from being encroached upon by the powerful or turbulent few. Such laws ought, however, never to aim at changing by compulsion or constraint, the natural and legitimate habits or pursuits in which the people of any country have been accustomed to engage.

The jurisprudential system of a state should work in silence, and be unseen and unfelt, like the mechanism of our own bodily frame when in a healthy condition. The true secret of our sovereign's power is its unobserved operation in this manner, its vast strength being founded on the feeling of the nation in its favour. While it appears so fragile, it is in reality invincible. Laws should, moreover, entrench as little as possible on the natural rights of the people, and should never tend to the deprivation of what is necessary either for their enjoyment or their use.

It has been laid down by some writers on Juris-

prudence, that no civil enactment which is directly contrary to the law of God, is binding on the members of a state. It may be presumed, however, that no Christian state would make such a law; or, at any rate, a law which it deemed and interpreted to be of this character. And as the interpretation, and the determination of the character of a law, rest entirely with the state; it is difficult to say how it is to be decided to be of this nefarious nature so as to absolve the people from its subjection. If any private individual might claim exemption from a law by merely expressing his own opinion of its contrariety to religion, there are few laws but what might stand in peril of becoming inoperative, and that probably as regards those who most need to be bound by them.

As regards the law of Nature also, no law directly contrary to this ought to be sanctioned. But here also the state, which makes the law, must determine as well the question of this contrariety or consistency. Sometimes, however, while the law apparently annuls what the higher laws alluded to have prescribed, it re-enacts them in another and more practical form. Thus, every man has a right by the law of Nature to support his existence by the food which the earth produces. By entering into society, although he gives up his claim to select his portion where he will, yet at the same time he acquires in return a right to support from the state; and to which

he has also an additional claim from his contributions towards its maintenance, which every one either directly or indirectly renders to some extent, in the taxes which he pays in the consumption even of the most ordinary article. On this principle, therefore, every member of the community has constitutionally an inherent, indisputable, and unalienable right to support from the nation, so far at least as extends to the providing him with the necessities of life, both as regards food and clothing, and to which he is absolutely entitled as a citizen of that state, and in return for the obedience which he renders to it, the aid he is ready to give, and the portion of taxation which, however humble, every individual, indirectly at least, daily pays.

As is the case with each of the other Elements of civilization, the laws of a state should, moreover, have immediate reference to the character of the people, as also to its condition in civilization, and the various causes by which it is affected.

The genius and character of a nation are, on the other hand, never more fully exhibited than in its laws. These show at once the turn of the national mind, its pursuits, its virtues, and its failings. The ability and the wisdom of its greatest men are also here exercised, and are exhibited in the results which they achieve. In one sense, indeed, the whole civilized world is cemented into one vast, legislative nation, all, alike, owning and being re-



gulated by the law of Nature, the same grand principles of liberty, and justice, and order, being acknowledged by each, and the general frame of society and the interests of mankind at large, being knit together by the mighty influences of civilization.

In every nation, and in every department of jurisprudence, it is also of the utmost importance that the law should be in strict accordance with reason, and that it should appear and be felt to be so. Nevertheless, it must necessarily sometimes happen that the general principle of the law may be in strict accordance with reason, while the application of the principle to particular cases may fail to be so; or, at any rate, (of itself an evil, however unavoidable,) may fail so to appear.

The laws relating to marriage are of the highest importance to the social and moral well-being of every state. Such laws embrace mainly three objects:—1. Declaring what marriages shall be valid as regards the contracting parties. 2. Declaring the ceremonies that shall be required to constitute a marriage. 3. Determining what acts shall operate to terminate this connection. The main principle to be kept in view in these cases is, to afford a due and adequate security for the proper observance and fulfilment of the rite, with the least possible restraint on the parties concerned, together with the proper maintenance of the relation thus constituted.

In addition, however, to the express legislative enactments regulating the forms, and restricting the celebration of marriage ; we must also here take into account the mode in which the usages of society operate as powerfully, or even more so than does the law, in the restraint of marriage according to the dictates of Nature, and the social and moral consequences which ensue from such unnatural restraint. Civilization here, as in other cases, should correct the evil in question, and should aim to restore to Nature that prerogative of which the barbarous innovations of society, at variance alike with Nature and with civilization, have contrived to rob her.

Connected with the laws relating to and regulating marriage, are those which are intended to discourage and punish breaches of chastity, and all other crimes of this class, which should at once be effectual to check the vice in the mode most desirable, and yet not too severe to deter other persons from putting them in force.

The influence of women in a state, is favourable to civilization in the earlier periods of it, but to a limited extent only. It has a tendency to polish the manners of a rude and warlike people, as the occupations and habits of the softer sex are more refined and civilizing than are those of the men. In a more advanced age of society, however, and for carrying civilization to its highest point,

the influence of women will be found less beneficial. But little has been done by them for the advancement of learning and science. Their influence, on the whole, has been more important in correcting and counteracting barbarism, than in directly aiding or extending civilization.

As regards the treatment of women in different nations, Aristotle gallantly observes, "If women are by barbarians reduced to the level of slaves, it is because barbarians themselves have never yet risen to the rank of men,—that is, of men fit to govern."\* As it is the characteristic of a barbarous age for the women to be the slaves of the men, and to be treated with brutality; so is it the characteristic of an age of luxury and voluptuousness for the men to be the slaves of the women, and for the superior wisdom and sagacity of the former to give way to the whims and frivolities of the feebler sex. In a rude state of society, the women are considered as mere cattle. In a luxurious age, the men degenerate into women. In a civilized age, each assume their proper place and sphere. And probably this affords one of the surest tests as to the real civilization of any particular country. Aristotle justly remarks, "Nothing proves more ruinous to a state than the defective education of the women."† To the women, indeed, is committed the early education of the men; and

\* Politics, book i.

† *Ibid.*, book ii.



their influence here is most beneficial, corresponding with that which they exercise in the early career of a state.

A very high state of civilization is, nevertheless, not always found favourable to female purity, as the luxuries which generally accompany it, often lead to immorality. Luxuries, however, belong strictly not to the perfection, but to the corruption of civilization.

Laws for the repression of luxury are very conducive to the growth, and still more so to the preservation of civilization, but are extremely difficult to enforce; and they seldom carry with them public opinion. Indeed, moral influences alone can both control this vice, and also regulate and restore the condition of society out of which it springs.

Considerable influence upon the morals of a country, is also produced by the laws relating to debtors and creditors, by which honesty and dishonesty are either encouraged and protected, or discouraged and punished, according to the scope, and spirit, and operation of these laws.

In certain respects, civilization has a tendency both to increase and to diminish crime. It affords facility for the commission of crime where skill is required in the perpetration, as in the case of those of forgery and poisoning; and it also induces and calls into existence particular crimes, which in a condition of barbarism can hardly exist. On the

other hand, civilization is directly preventive of crime by diffusing correct moral principles among all classes, as also through the sound rules of legislation, especially in regard to crime, which it inculcates; in addition to which it affords the fullest opportunity for the detection of crime of each kind.

The consideration of the laws relating to crimes, and providing for their punishment, forms an important branch of moral jurisprudence. This subject admits of a twofold division into the questions, —1. What crimes ought to be punished. 2. How they ought to be punished. Those crimes, however, and the result of punishments, so far only as they regard civilization, can be discussed here. The maintenance of good order and security is essential to civilization. Crimes in direct violation of religion and morality, nevertheless, are what mainly affect civilization in the way in which I have here considered it, as capacitated to exalt the higher over the lower influences in a state. But this is a topic which is at once too comprehensive to admit of being fully examined in this place, and too important not to have been amply treated of in the various dissertations on criminal law.

The moral effect of particular crimes deserves also attention, as many offences, comparatively trivial in themselves, may be of extensive injury to the morals and civilization of a state.

Crimes which are of the class most directly con-

trary and inimical to the civilization of any country, although, perhaps, not possessing the baneful moral influence of many others, are those of brutal violence, which at once set the law at defiance, and tend to outrage every institution of civilization. But of all vices of this kind, such as are in any way either sanctioned by authority, or calculated to excite any undue admiration on their behalf, are the most pernicious in this respect, alike from their demoralizing and their anti-civilizing tendency. On this account, duels and combats between different persons ought strictly to be prohibited and punished. At the present period, when proposals are made for submitting even the disputes of nations to arbitration, so as to put an end to war and bloodshed throughout the world; it seems especially imperative upon us to endeavour to devise some means to prevent questions of social and domestic relation being the subject of brute force. If chivalry,—whose particular province it was to take cognizance of all such topics, above all of those where the honour of the parties is involved, or called in question,—has fallen into disuse, surely some arrangement should be made for establishing a tribunal for the adjudication of these important matters. And for this, peculiarly, ought “Moral Jurisprudence” to provide. Courts of chivalry expressly constituted to arbitrate on points of honour, so as to supersede entirely all occasion to resort to duel-



ling as a means of satisfaction, are the more to be recommended, as it is the grand effect and aim of civilization to submit to the authority of rule and order, whatever in a natural state of society was decided by brute force, and to subject to reason what before was determined only by passion.

The general governing principle on which punishment for crime is based, is the opinion that thereby repentance for the wrongful act done is effected and ensured, through annexing a penalty to the commission of the crime as a certain consequence of such commission; and, indeed, thus making it an essential part of the crime itself. The penalty annexed should be so far painful as to outweigh every advantage that might result from the crime; and thus the sorrow for incurring the penalty becomes, in effect, transformed into sorrow for the commission of the crime.

Repentance is rightly, according to reason, held to amount to an atonement for transgression, inasmuch as, in the first place, it constitutes a direct and determined revocation of the decision of the will from which the offence itself originally sprang, and through which it was perpetrated; and, in the next place, the sorrow thus occasioned for the sinful act, which forms an essential part of repentance, may be accepted as a sort of set-off against the pleasure which was caused by the commission of the crime. Wherever practical, and in order to

complete the repentance, a return or compensation ought also to be made to the party injured, to the full extent of the wrong, both direct and indirect, which he has sustained from the act in question.

Some punishments are, nevertheless, entirely and solely preventative in their aim and scope, endeavouring merely to place such restraint on the criminal as will effectually hinder, by deterring him through whatever motive, from the perpetration of the particular crime in question. Of this nature are the special punishments adapted for and awarded to persons who are more or less insane, but who have sanity enough to distinguish what particular course will be directly beneficial or directly prejudicial for them to pursue ; consisting of some corporeal restraint or painful infliction, and which is the only kind of punishment to which they are rightly and equitably amenable. Insanity, indeed, altogether exonerates the person afflicted with it from every crime of which its existence may be supposed to be the immediate and the producing cause, and relieves him from the jurisdiction of the law so far as he would be otherwise amenable to punishment, except only as regards the protection from his acts, of society in general. Their deficiency in self-control, and their inability to fulfil the ordinary duties of life, are what both exempt lunatics from ordinary punishment, and prescribe the nature of

the particular punishment which they ought to suffer.

As regards punishments in general, and those adapted for ordinary individuals, they may be classed under two kinds, being either physical or moral: physical, where corporeal punishment is inflicted on the offender; moral, where correction of a moral nature only is imposed. The object of punishment is threefold,—1. To prevent crime, by deterring others from following the example of the criminal. 2. To effect a moral reformation of him. 2. To degrade the culprit from a position of influence to one of a lower rank.

The punishments inflicted by law, are of seven several kinds,—1. Death, or capital punishment. 2. Corporeal pain, such as flogging. 3. Corporeal restraint by deprivation of liberty, as imprisonment. 4. Penal servitude, or service in bondage to the state for a certain period. 5. Corporeal banishment, such as transportation. 6. Deprivation of property, as fine and forfeiture of each class. 7. Moral degradation, which is a consequence of punishment of every sort, but which may be, and sometimes is inflicted alone, as when a man of rank forfeits his honours, or a professional man is expelled from his profession. Each of these kinds of punishment may also be varied both as regards its nature and the mode of its application.

Punishments in their application may be directed,



as counteracting influences, either to the causes of crime ; or to their commission, that is, to the crime itself ; or to the character and position of the criminal. Certain punishments which would be light to one man, are grievous to another ; and what to one are overwhelming to another are trifles. Hence the punishments for infringements of the law inflicted upon the rich and on the poor, should in many cases be different : not that both ought not equally to be punished, but it should be borne in mind that what is efficient in the one instance may fail entirely in the other. For example, a pecuniary fine may be no punishment to the rich, but ruinous to a poor man. Imprisonment, on the other hand, may be an advantage rather than a punishment to the destitute and profligate ; while to a rich man of rank it may be an infliction of the severest kind. Where, however, the object of the punishment is limited to causing injury to the criminal without his reformation being also aimed at, as in the case of capital punishments, it is strictly perhaps rather vengeance than punishment that is dealt out. Vengeance is, in fact, the severest and ultimate penal proceeding to which the law resorts. Capital punishment nevertheless, in reality and strictness, consists not so much in the infliction of death, which must arrive sooner or later to every one ; as in abridging the period of life which would intervene between the present time and that appointed for

the death of the criminal in the ordinary course of nature.

The true theory of punishment as a preventive to crime, as already observed, is carried out by the artificial annexation to the pursuit from which we seek to deter, of some pain or discomfiture, that will in all likelihood be produced by the perpetration of the offence in question. In the case of children, for instance, we annex the fear of corporeal punishment, causing physical pain, to a breach of discipline. In the case of adults, we annex the fear of loss of liberty or property. In all cases, however, punishment should as far as possible be contrived not only to follow crime, but to be blended with it. It should also serve to strike the mind of the culprit, not merely as a consequence of his crime, but as an essential part of the act. The two should be looked upon as one and the same operation. In nature, indeed, we see this system very perfectly carried out; as in the instance of voluntary drowning, or taking poison, when the pain and death which ensue are not considered as an independent consequence of the act of the party, but the whole transaction is regarded, and spoken of, and comprehended in the one act of suicide.

As the moral effect of dignities and honorary rewards, is to exalt the person receiving them, and to endow with dignity the acts which he has done, or rather, to mark the sense of their worth and dig-

nity entertained by his fellow-men: so the moral effect of punishments is to degrade the person who undergoes them, and to debase and render ignoble the acts of which he has been guilty; or rather, to mark the opinion of mankind as to their baseness and degradation.

The general moral effect of punishments, more especially as regards civilization, is very great. In this, as in other cases connected with civilization, should not only be considered their influence on the mind to deter from the particular crime, but also their result on the dispositions and feelings as a preventive of crime in general. The moral effect of punishments in preventing crime, is also to be viewed as respects their entire influence on the sentiment and habits, and on the civilization of a nation. Crimes may in many cases be prevented by rendering them hideous and revolting through the punishments annexed to them; but this, on the other hand, has a degrading and brutalizing effect on the national mind, as in the case of public executions\* and public floggings, however serviceable they may be as regards the attainment of the direct end at which we aim. Some degradation of the criminal is, nevertheless, a very wholesome accompaniment to his direct punishment, and nothing is so efficient to deter others from following in his course. On this account the village stocks, now unwisely almost

\* *Vide ante*, Element VI., p. 250.



fallen into disuse, had really a more powerful moral influence than the county gallows. The main point to be avoided in the infliction of degrading punishments, is affording a spectacle for the gratification of brutal excitement or curiosity, instead of raising a feeling of abhorrence for the crime which is being punished.

Nor is it reasonable to object to the adoption of any particular form or species of punishment, on the ground that it is degrading to the person suffering it, inasmuch as this is essential to the constitution and to the efficiency of any infliction of a penal nature, and without which it fails absolutely in its object. Absence from our native country, or excessive toil in a particular pursuit, which are forms of degradation resorted to in certain cases, may in others be by choice adopted as an honourable and beneficial recreation. So also many give as a voluntary donation, a sum much exceeding what is imposed on others as a severe pecuniary fine. It is the penal nature of the act, which really renders it degrading, and not the act itself that is so.

As the reformation of the criminal is one of the chief objects at which his punishment aims, so for the purpose of carrying out this reformation, no efforts should be spared in the legislative code of every civilized country. A gaol, indeed, should be a sort of moral hospital, where diseases of this

kind are watched and eradicated, and a healthy constitution is restored to the patient. Care should, however, be taken in our correction and treatment of criminals, lest in our humane attempts to ameliorate their condition, we bestow upon them more favour than is shown to those who have never gone astray; besides which, it will be considered that they owe all the comforts they are enjoying entirely to the circumstance of their having transgressed. While, therefore, we ought to be far from discouraging every endeavour to reform criminals, yet in so doing they should ever be treated as criminals still; and the humanity and kindness shown to them, render additionally necessary this course. In another part of this work,\* has been advocated the expediency of supplying state rewards for the encouragement of the good, as well as means for reforming the bad. The rewards to the good should, for the reasons here adverted to, be of so substantial a nature as considerably to exceed those which are bestowed on persons who are reclaimants from crime.

Crime is, on the whole, one of the greatest enemies to civilization, as civilization is to crime. Legislative measures relating to this subject are, however, rather negative than positive, as regards their influence on civilization; aiming more to remove obstacles against, than to afford aids in favour of its progress.

\* *Vide ante*, Element VII., p. 281.

The main defects of punishments generally, are that they are,—1. Uncertain, both as respects the want of certainty that the offender will be reached, and also the absence of certainty that the punishment, if inflicted, will really be regarded as an evil either by the offender himself or by those whom it is intended to deter. 2. That they are inefficient, as being contrary to the opinions and feelings of the people, either as respects their nature or extent, by which the moral effect of them is entirely destroyed. Both transportation and imprisonment fail from the first of these defects; and it is from the latter that capital punishments for ordinary crimes cease to operate, and to have a due influence on the public mind. Indeed, justice should never be called upon to act in its severest form, unless an adequate occasion exists to demand such an exertion. The law is in danger, when this rule is not observed, of being regarded as either tyrannical or unjust.

Aristotle well observes, that the greatest crimes are committed not from want, but for obtaining the objects of ill-regulated desires, and senseless insatiable passions; and that tyrants do not cover themselves with blood to avoid cold or hunger.\* This consideration appears especially desirable to keep in view in framing laws to deter men from crime.

The jurisprudential system of a perfectly civilized

\* Politics.



country should imitate religion in its economy as well as in its justice, in working by rewards as well as by punishment. This is to some extent attained as regards the effect already adverted to,\* which is produced among the higher classes by the distribution of honours and dignities as encouragements to merit. But the state ought, as also observed,† to be deemed as the rewarder as well as the punisher, alike of the poor and of the rich. In a highly civilized nation, indeed, virtue is to some extent its own reward, in the approbation that it ensures to its possessor; and on the other hand, only great and defined virtues and crimes can be taken cognizance of by the law. How far encouragements to and rewards for good conduct among people of the lower class might be advantageously bestowed by the state, either in the way of honorary certificates or pecuniary donations, or by both these modes, is, nevertheless, deserving of consideration. Indeed, in the preceding Element reference was made to the desirableness of instituting a scale of rewards applicable to persons of the middle and lower ranks in society. And in every country where civilization is perfectly established, the rewards for virtue should be as abundant and as efficient as are the punishments for crime. Hand-in-hand with the warnings not to commit evil, should be the incentives to do good. As degrada-

\* *Vide ante*, Element VII.

† *Ante*, p. 281.

tion of some kind, should ever follow vice, so exaltation as regards the respect entertained for the individual, should ever be the fruit of virtue.

Reference was moreover made in the preceding Element, to the state policy of encouraging in each nation those peculiar qualities and virtues which, from various causes, are most valuable to it, and most conducive to its interests. A corresponding rule should also be adopted as regards the discouragement and punishment of those peculiar vices which are either most frequent, to which there exist the greatest temptations, or which are most pernicious to the well-being of the nation. For instance, a breach of discipline or an act of cowardice, which in a domestic servant may be productive only of inconvenience, and should be punished merely as a misdemeanour ; in a soldier may be attended with the most disastrous and even fatal results, and consequently requires to be punished capitally. So, on the other hand, dishonesty, which in a confidential servant is a most serious crime, and wholly destructive of his value as such ; in a soldier may not be of vital consequence, or even actually lessen the value of his services. Drunkenness, whenever it leads to acts of open violence or indecorum, ought to be criminally punished in every well-regulated civilized state.

Very nearly allied to, and directly bearing on the subject of criminal moral jurisprudence, is that of

oaths in courts of justice, a branch of law which has an important and extensive influence on the moral condition of a people, and which in its turn is greatly dependent for its efficiency upon the moral condition of that particular nation. As regards oaths in general, it may be concluded that that form of oath, in whatever country, or under whatever code of laws, must necessarily be most efficient, most satisfactory, and most proper, which in the opinion of the person taking it, be its wording or manner of administration what it may, is the most binding upon his conscience, however this form may vary among different people, in different nations, and even in the same nation among persons of different opinions. An appeal to honour, can never be so efficient as an oath, although in certain cases it may be binding enough to secure the veracity of the deponent, and which is all that the most solemn oath can ensure. But while the one is an appeal merely to the uncertain verity of man, the latter is an appeal to the infallible truth of God.

Immediately connected with this subject, it may be remarked that perjury is a crime which, although it inflicts no bodily injury on any individual, and may not affect his worldly possessions; yet it is, nevertheless, so utterly destructive to the well-being of society, and to its highest interests, by annihilating all mutual moral confidence between its



members, which is the very basis alike of society and of civilization, as also being a positive violation of the laws of God, that it demands to be repressed by the laws of every civilized state, and deserves to be visited by the severest and most degrading punishment. In each case, moreover, as we may observe in the economy of the human frame, where transgression against the law of nature is followed by some particular corresponding disease, the character of the punishment should bear direct relation to that of the crime to be repressed. Thus, violence ought strictly to be requited by corporeal chastisement; robbery by fine, or by loss of liberty where no property belongs to the criminal so as to enable him to undergo deprivation of property; and idleness should be corrected by compelling the culprit to engage in active labour. Indeed, as idleness is one of the chief causes of crime, so excessive toil may be very appropriately selected as the mode of punishment for offenders whose transgressions may be traced to the former. Moreover, in the Divine system of rewards and punishments, even in this life, we may observe that crime of different kinds is generally followed by punishment of a character closely corresponding with it, as in the case of loss of health from dissipation, loss of substance from dishonesty, loss of credit from unfair dealing; and this which is the perfection of all systems, should human systems ever attempt to imitate, and in proportion as

they succeed in doing so, will be their comparative excellence. It is also desirable that degrading vices be visited with punishments of a degrading and humiliating character. In all these instances, indeed, the system of Nature, and that adopted in the jurisprudential code revealed by the Deity, should as far as possible be followed, and be made the guiding principle.

In addition, however, to the express enactments contained in a criminal code, a due and proper degree of dignity attendant upon the administration of justice, produces upon the mind of the nation quite as much effect, and exercises as extensive an influence, as do the laws themselves. Indeed, while the precise nature and provisions of the latter are known to and practically experienced by but very few, the former more or less affects and acts upon all; and by this, moreover, the power and dignity of the laws themselves, are, as it were, reflected. It is, in reality, not the law, but the ceremony which is its shadow, that the multitude revere.

Not only, however, is it essential that good and equitable laws of different kinds should be made, but that those laws, when made, be brought fully into operation, and on all requisite occasions, be applied. For this purpose, a public officer, as prosecutor, or director of the machinery so constituted, is absolutely necessary, without which many laws, especially those of a penal nature, and

which concern the public welfare rather than the private rights of individuals, may never be enforced for want of such functionary whose business and duty it is to set them in motion, and on account of the odium which acting in such matters is apt to excite against private persons.

The institution of civil disabilities among any class of people in a nation, owing to some moral disqualification, and in order to prevent some moral evil accruing to the state, may reasonably be comprehended under Moral Jurisprudence. These disabilities are imposed,—1. From want of religion altogether, which degrades the individual, and unfits him for being an influential member of a civil society. 2. From a difference in religion to the generality in the state, which incapacitates him from acting harmoniously with them. 3. From want of morality, which also degrades the individual, and unfits him to have civil authority in a state. The foundation of each of these disabilities consists in the desire to promote the exaltation of the higher and nobler over the baser influences in the nation. On the other hand, the existence of laws in a state which allow of the causeless degradation and oppression of any portion of the community, such as the maintenance of slavery, has a demoralizing and degenerating effect on the whole nation, both on the slaves themselves and on those who enslave them. The moral tone and feeling of the entire



community is corrupted by this means. In the cases, however, alluded to above, no restraint is imposed upon the liberty or privileges of any individual, except so far as it prohibits him from interfering with or injuring the general interests of the nation, or that portion of them to which he is opposed.

There are also some specific regulations which, to a certain extent, come within the scope of Moral Jurisprudence, although apparently remote from the subject of morals and civilization. Such are the laws relating to the disposal of property and of money, as those of mortmain and usury; fiscal rules, which bear directly, in many instances, both on morals and education; and the laws referring to the maintenance of the poor. Each of these topics, though not strictly within the sphere of Moral Jurisprudence, is more or less adapted for the application to it of the spirit and principles belonging to this branch, already defined.

An injurious moral tendency is often produced by the laws relating to the Excise, not, however, from anything contained in those laws themselves, but from the great difficulty of regularly and duly enforcing them; the temptations to persons of all classes fraudulently to evade them, which are constantly being excited; and the bad moral effect resulting from their frequent and systematic violation. Having been habitually guilty of dishonesty

of this kind, people eventually feel less scruple in the committal of dishonesty of a more general character.

The laws which regulate the raising of the public revenue, in many instances exercise an important and injurious moral influence on a nation, though this is perhaps rather of a negative than of a positive kind, by the restrictions which they place on certain pursuits and undertakings, especially in matters of art and science, through the obstacles that they impose upon their cultivation. Of all the taxes which operate most perniciously as regards the advancement of civilization, those which affect directly the dissemination of learning, such as the duties on paper and on foreign books, are the most prominent. Laws which impede the circulation of ideas and the spread of information, hinder their progress much as a logger does the motions of an animal, or as turnpikes do that of a traveller. They are not absolutely preventive, but obstructive. They render every step irksome, and curtail every expedition that is not necessary. The extension of knowledge should be like that of thought, free and unrestrained. Taxes of this description are shackles on the mind for the benefit of our material wants. Intelligence ought to be rendered as cheap and as accessible as the most ardent pursuers after it can desire. Food for the mind is really as much its right by nature, as is food for the body

the right of the latter. Both are alike essential, although the necessity for both is not equally acknowledged.

The framing and regulation of the laws, relating to copyright and patents, and other products of the mind, come also strictly within the scope of Moral Jurisprudence. Although these laws are in their nature necessarily restrictive, prohibiting the appropriation by mankind at large of what belongs of right to a few only ; yet their ultimate result is not only to improve and preserve the quality of the article to be availed of, but to secure its general use to the public, and that in the most advantageous manner ; so that in the end the nation, equally with the proprietor of the invention, are benefited by the exclusive privilege which he is allowed to possess.

The leading moral principle which should regulate legislation on the subject of the poor laws, is this. To provide adequately for all those who are really necessitous, and for those only ; and at the same time to protect from imposition those who are called upon to make this provision. And also to prevent the fact of affording this relief from producing any moral degradation in the recipients, who, as already observed, partake of it not as a charity but as a right.

It may perhaps appear to some persons that under the head of Moral Jurisprudence ought to be included sanitary laws, which affect so extensively,



though perhaps only indirectly, the moral well-being of a people. But as cleanliness is no part of, and not actually essential to civilization, though doubtless collaterally conducive to it,—and certain highly civilized people have been observed to be very uncleanly, while some very cleanly people are extremely uncivilized;—so the laws which contribute to and regulate the promotion and preservation of health and cleanliness, cannot strictly be comprehended in a code of Moral Jurisprudence. Indeed, this is a subject which concerns directly not our intellectual or moral, but only our physical well-being, however indirectly, as in the case of nearly every other matter of a physical nature, it may influence the former.

Changes in the laws and jurisprudential system of a country, are also to be considered as regards their moral effects. These are always bad, without sufficient reason, both in themselves directly, and in their consequences. The more civilized is any particular age, the less favourable is it to organic alterations in the laws, or in the principles on which they are founded. There are, in all such cases, many institutions and interests, whose roots have entwined themselves one with another too deeply to admit of either being destroyed without affecting the whole. In some instances, however, the benefit resulting from the change, may so far counterbalance the bad effects incident to it as to render it at all events de-

sirable. Another point of great importance to be considered, besides the change itself, is the mode of making it. Many changes in themselves beneficial become injurious simply from the manner in which they are carried out, as being too sudden, or done at an unfit time, or in an unskilful way. An operation may be very requisite in a human body; but if done clumsily, or at an improper period as regards the condition of the patient, or with too much haste, instead of proving ameliorating, it may become fatal. So also is it in all respects as regards changes in the laws and constitution of a state. It is, moreover, very much, both with forms of government and with systems of religion, as with the professions in life which different men select. When a man has once adopted a profession and settled down in its pursuit, he will probably lose more by following a new one apparently better adapted to his capacities and taste, than by adhering to the old one, irksome and often difficult as a due devotion to it may be. So in the case of nations, when a form of religion or of government has become once thoroughly established, and the institutions of the country have been moulded and accommodated to it; they will ordinarily lose more by an alteration as to either, although a decided improvement in itself, than by adhering firmly to the old and accustomed mode.\* This observation does

\* See also on this subject *ante*, Element V., p. 227.

not of course apply to those cases where the system to be changed is so radically bad, as to be of itself an evil far beyond any alteration that could be made.

In the carrying out of all laws, much depends on the opinion and the habits of the people; and it is most difficult, and most impolitic also, to give active enforcement to a law that is directly repulsive to the general disposition and inclination, especially to the moral sentiment of the nation. Indeed, laws which fail or cease to be in accordance and harmony with the spirit, and feeling, and exigencies of the time, very soon cease to command respect, and to ensure observance. They are little more than the shadow, or rather, lifeless frame of what once lived and acted; and the sooner they are obliterated from the national code, the better both for the rulers and the ruled.

Laws may, however, be repugnant to the public feeling, not because bad in themselves, but, as already observed, from the punishment annexed to a breach of them being considered as disproportionate to the offence; on account of which there is a general disinclination to put them in force, and they consequently fail in their object. This was the case with regard to the laws in this country which formerly inflicted capital punishment for forgery, and for other offences of a much less serious nature. Indeed, laws, the spirit of which is opposed to the feeling of the people, are not only simply inoperative



and powerless ; but they often serve to create a prejudice in favour of the very acts which it is their direct aim to discourage and punish, and in this respect become positively pernicious as regards their moral effect.

The operation and scope of laws in general are after all, however, but limited, both as regards the objects which they embrace, and their power of attaining even the very ends at which they immediately aim. They are, moreover, almost always of the prohibitory kind ; or are, at any rate, for the most part, inefficient to enforce any prescriptions which are of a positive nature. Moral causes are, consequently, far more powerful in their operation, and are calculated to supply fully the defects of jurisprudential enactments in both these respects. The ultimate object, indeed, of Moral Jurisprudence is to accomplish by certain specific regulations those results which no ordinary law, or code of laws, can directly effect. In this respect, and so far only, it not merely assists but supersedes all other law, by creating those influences which operate in its stead, and which are far more potent.

---

#### IX. INTERNAL COMMUNICATION.

As the civilization of mankind is directly promoted by, and is largely dependent upon the in-

tercourse which is carried on by the different members of each society with those about them; so what I have here designated by the term "Internal Communication,"—in order to distinguish it from that more extensive communication which is comprehended under the head of "International Intercourse," and which forms a distinct Element of civilization,—must be allowed to be one of the essential Elements for its advancement. The interchange of sentiment, which almost necessarily results from personal communication between people of the same nation, is in most cases directly calculated to conduce to their progress in civilization, corresponding, indeed, with the progress of knowledge in the mind, of each individual which results from the comparison of ideas. Nevertheless, it must be acknowledged that mutual intercourse between people of the same nation can effect but little, if indeed anything, towards civilizing them, unless accompanied and aided by Education, and certain at least of the other Elements of civilization already considered. Indeed, unless these Elements are some of them combined with that now proposed for discussion, the result of the application of the present Element may, in particular cases, be the entire reverse of civilizing. For instance, although, as I observed when inquiring into the Essence of Civilization, that some philosophers have supposed and contended that mutual communication was absolutely

necessary for the progress of civilization, and certain of them even appear to deem it the one essential Element; yet, on the other hand, unless those individuals with whom this intercourse is held have been educated and refined,—which is effected by the application of the Elements of civilization already considered, and which are appropriate for this purpose,—but little benefit as regards civilization can be derived from this intercourse. Hence, Internal Communication, although, like Education, it is a very valuable Element in the promotion of civilization, yet it is also, like Education, valuable and really efficient only when it is combined with the other Elements which are necessary to its promotion and ultimate perfection.

Intercourse between different persons is, however, so far of itself favourable to civilization as advancing knowledge, which is necessarily communicated by such intercourse. Although knowledge is at once derived from intercourse with the informed, ignorance is happily incommunicable; so that a man of information loses nothing by his intercourse with an ignorant man, though he gains nothing, as the latter does from him. Ignorance is simply negative and inactive; knowledge is both positive and active. But on the other hand, though ignorance is incommunicable, barbarism is communicable, and that to a large extent; and it is consequently possible that, in certain cases, a



civilized community may suffer and be deteriorated from its intercourse with one that is uncivilized.

By joining in society, people are not only brought together as regards their physically associating in one body, but they are also mentally and morally united into one being. A mutual intercourse as regards ideas, and an interchange of feeling, takes place between all the different members; and the results thus produced on the character of the whole, are preserved and transmitted from one generation to another, so that the society itself never dies, but is one perpetually existing intelligent body or community. This is not the case with animals, except to a very limited extent, so far as regards their corporally herding together, and sharing in common any feeling of alarm which may excite them. But they are wholly destitute of the power of interchanging ideas, or of transmitting the record of any events to those who come after them, which is the prerogative alone of intelligent beings. Nor is anything effected towards the civilization of animals by their congregating; except so far as this may and does tend to quicken their instinctive powers, and to increase their activity and watchfulness. The establishment of mutual intercourse between human beings of the same country, is not only, therefore, directly calculated, in all ordinary cases, to contribute of itself towards their civilization;

but it also to leads them to resort to, and to avail themselves of, those other Elements of civilization which I have here considered as essential to its promotion and completion, more especially those of National Education, Religious Influence, and the Cultivation of Art and Science. It may consequently be concluded that however man may be naturally disposed and innately urged on to improve his powers, as an independent being, and which is essential for the attainment of individual civilization, the necessary precursor and producer of that which is national; the stimulus to do this is much increased by his entering into society, and becoming a member of a social community. He is thenceforth led to do so both by the example of others, as also from a feeling of emulation not to be excelled by them, as well as by his own natural desire of improvement. Society, moreover, induces each person in it to develop his higher endowments, which alone directly contribute towards the attainment of civilization; and to subjugate to them the lower influences.

In order to ensure the excitement of a wholesome emulation conducive to civilization, it is, however, not only necessary that societies be formed; but that social communication and intellectual intercourse between the different members of them be carried on. And the greater the means for free communication throughout the nation that are af-

forded, the greater will be the progress of civilization among the people. By this means, indeed, the whole nation will be knit, as it were, into one society ; the metropolis of the empire, which is the headquarter of civilization, communicating with each part of it, and each part of the nation both with the other districts and also with the metropolis.

Indeed, one of the peculiar features observable during an uncivilized condition of society, is that each separate herd, or clan, or department in a country, is not only independent of, but at constant enmity with, and wages war against the other. Civilization binds them all into one community, and converts rivalry into friendship, and acts of hostility into offices of mutual aid. Probably also, the more free and the more constant is the communication which is carried on between the different departments in the state ; the less liable will they be to attempt, or even to desire to establish themselves into distinct rival communities.

This intercourse between the various communities in a nation, is analogous to that which is carried on between various individuals in the same community. In each case, different minds are brought together, ideas are communicated from one to another, varieties of character are exhibited to each, knowledge of several kinds is diffused, and a full acquaintance with the nature and resources of the country is acquired by all. In nothing, moreover,



is the analogy between a man and a state, which has been already adverted to,\* better or more fully exemplified than by the constant, rapid, and unreserved communication which ought to be maintained between the various members of both of them, and between every part of each. A state, indeed, resembles a man the more in proportion as by its advancement in civilization it is perfect in this respect. In the man, the different nerves impart intelligence with the utmost rapidity to the brain from the senses and other organs, as also from the brain to them. And in the state,—whose noblest model is the man, as Nature most accurately regulates the economy of the latter,—civilization, which is its highest, and indeed its most natural condition, is perfect only when free intercourse between each of its members is completely established. The communication between the various points in the nation, as also between the remotest of them equally with those which are contiguous, should, moreover, correspond with that in the human frame, both as to the information and the impulses to immediate action which are conveyed, each member communicating with and acting upon the other with the utmost celerity, ease, and freedom. And, as in the human frame an entire facility of intercourse is established not only between the brain, which is the seat of intelligence,

\* *Vide ante*, *Essence of Civilization*, pp. 3, 6.

and those organs of the body which are immediately exerted in our intellectual operations, but with those organs also which are employed in merely common physical efforts; so also the intercourse in a nation should be carried on not only between those of the same attainments and rank, but also between persons who differ one from another the most widely in this respect. Not alone between the rulers and the ruled, and the learned and unlearned, but between the rich and the poor should this communication be fully and freely maintained. Indeed, as regards intercourse in general, that which most directly tends to the complete civilization of a nation, is the establishment of free and friendly relation between the rich and the poor, by which the knowledge and refinement of the former are communicated to the latter, and the latter are bound by feelings of gratitude and respect to the former. In many respects the effect of this intercourse is beneficial and civilizing to both parties, as not merely do the rich learn many lessons of practical wisdom from the lips of the poor; but the exercise of acts of charity and benevolence has a high moral, humanizing, civilizing influence, and brings to those who thus act, its own precious reward.

Not only, indeed, is the intercourse between those of different ranks favourable to civilization, but intercourse also between persons of different profes-

sions and pursuits is in this respect advantageous to each other, all parties alike deriving benefit from the experience and information thus mutually communicated.

The establishment of a free and expeditious intercourse between the different parts of a country, is, moreover, of the same vital importance to its interests and to its proper regulation, as is the promotion of circulation and communication between the different limbs and organs of an animated body, of the motion of its fluids, and of its nervous and other impulses. Napoleon the First, who of all modern rulers and statesmen best understood the real exigencies of a nation, was pre-eminently distinguished for the care which he displayed in the construction of roads necessary to establish a proper connection between the various departments of his kingdom. And the noble efforts of the Romans in this respect, are among the most remarkable and enduring records of their wise and comprehensive policy.

The communication, especially between the metropolis and the different parts of the empire, is of essential importance to promote the civilization of a nation. Among the ancient Greeks, the meetings of large bodies of the people, and the intercourse which took place between them during the Olympic games, supplied in many respects the want of a metropolis, and occasioned an interchange of ideas.



The means of communication which are established between different parts of the same country, must, however, be necessarily very various both in their actual nature, and as regards the ends they are intended to accomplish; and must, more or less, each of them depend upon the character of the people among whom they are followed, the condition of the country in which they are to be carried on, and the comparative degree to which civilization has attained perfection in that particular state. These modes of internal communication may be defined to be mainly of the six following kinds, which comprise all those which are at present in use. They are,—1. By Roads. 2. By Railways. 3. By Rivers. 4. By Canals. 5. By the Sea. 6. By the Air. The subjects of communication are threefold:—1. Persons. 2. Intelligence. 3. Goods.

Roads are availed of to connect different parts of the country together, but especially the metropolis with the several districts, and the various towns one with another. By their means, communication of each of the above subjects is maintained. Railways are also established on the same principle as common roads, and as the medium of communication for the same subjects. For the purpose of establishing intercourse between far-distant points, they have almost superseded the other. Rivers are the earliest and the natural modes afforded for com-

munication; and, unlike artificial contrivances for this object, beautify and invigorate, instead of disfiguring and deteriorating the country through which they flow. Canals are the artificial imitation and extension of rivers as a means of intercourse, but are mainly used for goods. The sea affords another natural means of communication for the subjects of each kind, both with the different sea-bounden parts of the island, and with its colonial possessions; and travelling by sea is one of the earliest modes in use. By these different means together, communication of each kind is rendered complete throughout the kingdom; and for that of intelligence, especially, the establishment of a post, (which is a branch of the communication by roads and railways,) makes this intercourse between communities analogous to that by language between individuals. Communication by air, (except as regards the ancient mode of conveying intelligence by carrier pigeons,) is yet in its infancy; and the effort to establish it by means of aerial machines or balloons may either degenerate only into a speculative experiment, or supersede the other modes of communication for the subjects of each kind, according as the science of future times may be found inapplicable to, or may be brought to bear upon this invention.

All great undertakings in a nation that are for the national benefit, such especially as the artificial

means of intercourse between its different parts, should be effected by the nation, and with due regard to those which are naturally formed or already subsisting. The national debt of this country has in no way been more pernicious to its interests, than in debarring it from entering into necessary national works of this kind, which have thus been left to chance or private speculation to accomplish, and have been therefore carried on without due regard to the national exigencies, or have been determined by mere local considerations; while the speculation engendered by these enterprises, which are too gigantic for any but states to engage in, have generated a spirit of gambling, as injurious to the moral, as the incompleteness of the scheme was to the material interests of the nation. This has been peculiarly seen in this kingdom, not only in the formation of railways, but also in that of roads, canals, and other public works. If the rulers of Great Britain in the nineteenth century had only been imbued with the same comprehensive genius and spirit of enterprise for carrying on national undertakings in the heart of the empire, which the Romans possessed for effecting them even in a remote colony, how different would be the condition of this country now as regards its various means of communication! Among the Romans, national roads were constructed with due regard to the requirements of the kingdom as a whole, and to serve



as a means of intercourse throughout each part of the land. An opportunity for following their example in applying the noblest invention of the age to supply one of the first wants of a great commercial and highly civilized nation, we have seen lost, and abandoned to private speculation; and the enrichment of the speculators made the leading consideration, in the place of the real interests, intellectual and moral, of the state.

But, although railways extensively contribute to promote intercourse between the distant points of a nation, they frequently have the effect of checking that between adjacent districts, by destroying all communication of an ordinary kind. And perhaps, indeed, the kind of communication which they destroy, is exactly that which is most important in a social and moral point, and as regards the extension of civilization, being that which takes place between the people of neighbouring towns who are familiar with one another. The passengers brought by a railway are most of them strangers, and pass rapidly through a district without either effecting or receiving any impressions of a social and moral nature. Indeed, the facility and constancy of intercourse between different parts of a nation, in order to advance its civilization, should not merely afford means for the travelling of passengers, or the forwarding of goods for commercial purposes; but should supply opportunities

for transmitting information, and furthering the spread of knowledge from one place to another, either verbally, by letters, or by newspapers and books. Of all the various kinds of intercourse tending most directly to civilize a nation, that which is of a social nature, as by familiar conversation and private letters, has the most powerful result in this respect; and the greater and more easy are the means for this communication, the more efficient will they be for the promotion of civilization. Of these modes of intercourse, probably, that which is carried on by epistolary correspondence is the most influential, contributing as it directly does to the development alike of the intellectual and moral powers and feelings of the writers, and to the production of amicable relations on both sides. Consequently, the cheaper and more expeditious is the national postage of any country, the more conducive it is to its civilization.

Of a very different class to the one last named, is the communication of intelligence through the country by means of newspapers, already alluded to in a former Element,\* by which information of the greatest variety is spread through every department, effecting thereby a general intercourse as regards the interchange of ideas between all the districts of the empire.

Nor must we here omit to refer to another mode

\* Vide *ante*, Element V., p. 204.

of communicating information, although resorted to only on extraordinary occasions, and the invention of which is one of the wonders, as it is doubtless also among the most important scientific achievements of the age. I allude to the conveyance of intelligence by the electric telegraph, through which it may be sent to the most distant parts of the country, and even from one country to another, with the utmost facility and celerity.

This manner of expediting dispatches between different parts of a nation, seems directly analogous to the means of conveying impulses from one part to another in an animal frame. As a general medium of intercourse, it is of course from its nature but little resorted to ; but from its immense value in the special cases where it is availed of, it is of great service, and in many ways, to the cause of civilization. Although connected with, and, in fact, a part of the railway economy, it is, as a means of communication, quite independent of it, and is, moreover, adapted for wholly distinct purposes.

The internal communication that is required to be kept up in a civilized nation, is of a fourfold kind :—1. Between the metropolis and the other towns. 2. Between the metropolis and the different parts of the kingdom. 3. Between the different towns and the different parts of the kingdom. 4. Between the mother-country and the colonies of the empire.



The metropolis of every country should be not only its chief city, but the soul of the empire. From hence should emanate its leading civilizing influences, of which it is the source. Such is London to England, and, indeed, in some degree to the world. Such, also, were Athens to Greece; and Rome not merely to Italy, but to Europe. Such, moreover, though to a less perfect extent, ought to be to every province its chief town. The principal city of a state should, also, not only contain the largest mass of the population, but should be its head and source of action; and also its capital as regards intellect, and art, and science, as well as in wealth and commerce. The metropolis of a nation being the occasional resort of a vast portion of the people belonging to the latter, more especially of its leading and most important members, and its condition influencing more or less that of the whole nation; its institutions and public buildings, which belong rather to the kingdom than to this particular city, may claim to be supported at the national cost. Its libraries are the resort of all the learned of the land. Its works of art and models of genius, instruct not merely the inhabitants of the metropolis, but the national mind. Consequently, the capital of each state forms its centre of civilization. From hence the rays are diffused to each part. It is at once the seat of government, of law, of religion, of art, science, learning, and commerce. From

this point, therefore, proceeds the influence which each of these exercises on the nation.

If it be objected that the complete establishment of the means of communication between the metropolis of a country and its different parts may, and often does, have the effect of spreading the vices of the capital to the hitherto comparatively immaculate rural districts; it may be replied that it is solely owing to the imperfect condition of our civilization that this can ever be the case. When civilization has accomplished her entire work, Education and Religious Influence having produced their proper result; the cities will no longer be the hotbeds of vice as they now are, but the receptacles of knowledge and virtue, and the purest and most powerful springs of civilization. Even at present, perhaps, the real fact is that, although there is more vice in the cities than in the country, there is also more virtue; consequently, that it is not that the rural districts are more virtuous, but that they are less vicious than the towns. In a highly civilized and duly regulated state, the communication between its different parts will serve alike to correct the errors, and to supply the deficiencies of each.

The different towns in the nation, correspondingly with the metropolis, though less powerfully, each contribute to promote the civilization of the districts around them, and, as the satellites of the capital, serve to reflect its light. Towns are, indeed, essen-

tial to civilization; and it is here not only that learning and art are preserved, but it is here chiefly that the sciences both originate and advance; and, according to the natural position, advantages, or productions of many of these localities, different inventions will be pursued, and the benefit of them both diffused through the nation, and a beneficial emulation excited between these various communities.

The occupations and condition of the people in the rural districts of the empire, are ordinarily very different from those of the town population. Civilization, in general, is at a much lower ebb in the former; but by the establishment of intercourse between them, each becomes improved. The rustics acquire the arts of civilization from the towns, while most, if not all of the natural resources of a country, are drawn from its rural districts.

But if the difference in pursuits and in productions is so extensive in the rural and urban districts of a nation, will not only a variety, but an opposition of interests between them, be necessarily created, which the establishment of free communication will tend to foster? Although differing in interest, these various parts of the same country ought, however, never to be opposed to the welfare of one another. In certain cases, indeed, a difference of pursuit may enable them the more efficiently to aid the interests of one another. Thus, what the



rural districts produce, the towns consume in manufacture; and while the country supplies food to the cities, the cities disperse their wealth through the country in return. The more free is the communication established between the two, the more perfectly will this interchange be accomplished. In all cases, however, although the various interests in the state may fairly compete with, they should never aim, or be permitted to oppose or injure each other. Wholesome rivalry between them, producing emulation, conduces to the perfection of each, and it is one of the advantages of free communication to promote this feeling. Hostility, on the other hand, is injurious to all alike, and only retards their progress. The common interest of the state, which every patriotic citizen must regard above all other considerations, should serve in these cases to cement a community of interests among all rival bodies. And, indeed, as belonging alike to the nation, each of these interests is concerned indirectly and ultimately in the success of each other. The different members of the same family, between whom the utmost desire exists for each other's welfare, may be to a certain extent competing, but ought never to be hostile aspirants in the same pursuit. While the friendly competitor seeks only to outstrip, and thereby increases the speed of him against whom he runs; the envious rival endeavours not merely to overtake, but to overthrow, his opponent. Different

cities and communities in the state, possessing different interests, should, as in the case of the national representatives elected by different districts, consider themselves bound to promote the general welfare of the country, and of all its interests alike. The neglect of this principle has proved fatal to the prosperity of many great states.

Some communities and interests appear, nevertheless, to be quite as intent on the injury of one another, as on promoting the welfare of themselves. This, however, is a most dangerous, and, indeed, destructive policy. As impossible is it to do good to one part of the body by deteriorating another part, as to advance one interest in the nation by ruining another. The real foundation of the strength and vitality of the state, is the mutual union and co-operation of all its varied interests.

A balance between its contending interests should, moreover, be maintained as far as possible in each state, and is as essential to secure peace among them, as is the maintenance of the balance of power among rival nations. And, in each case, the strict preservation of this balance is the surest means of promoting harmony, and of preventing suspicion and jealousy, which mainly operate to hinder those rivals from becoming benefactors to each other.

It is impossible, however, wholly to repress the rival energy of the contemporaneous interests in a

state. Even the very existence of industry in any community or nation, which in ordinary cases is a most valuable quality, may, under peculiar circumstances, be converted into a bane. Over-activity, whether in a mind, in a body, or in a people, may be the cause of direr evils than the utmost want of activity can occasion. Insanity in the first, fever in the second, and rebellion in the third, will be its consequences. Much must, nevertheless, depend on the quality of the activity in question, and still more upon its application. Activity in one mind may induce great results, in another only great ravings. One man's activity may be that of a man of business. The activity of another may be that of a thief or an assassin. The activity of a people may turn either to commerce or war, or to sedition and rapine. So the activity of the various interests in the nation require control and direction, equally with that of the activity of the population.

The impetus to civilization afforded by a great nation whose career is in a considerably advanced stage, extends, however, far beyond its own natural territories, and must, necessarily, more or less influence all connected with it by the mere ties of intercourse. This is, indeed, especially the case with those countries which are annexed to it as its colonial offshoots or dependencies. And it is of essential consequence that the communication between the mother-country and the colony should be



as free and as constant as possible. The colony receives from the mother-country an important influence favourable to civilization, and derives from it mainly its arts, and learning, and laws, and science, correspondingly as do the different districts in a nation from the metropolis. On the other hand the mother-country may derive porportionally as much from the colony in resources and natural productions, as the towns do from the rural districts.

Owing to the insular position and the limited dimensions of this country, arises the necessity for establishing colonies in different parts of the world, in order to accommodate and to find occupation and territory for her increasing population. And indeed, one of the immediate effects of civilization and of the increased facility of travelling, is to extend the boundaries of any nation. In early barbarous times, several independent states existed in England. As civilization advanced, the whole country became united under one sovereignty. With the further progress of civilization, Scotland and Ireland became included in the empire. And colonies of vast extent have been annexed to this kingdom as its civilization has continued to grow. So also was it with the states of old. But nations which form part of a great continent, are able either to expand their territory by encroaching on their neighbours, as we have seen in the case of Russia, and some other countries; or their popula-

tion becomes mixed with and absorbed by that of the adjacent countries, through which the surplus portion of it is gradually relieved.

By the establishment of colonies in different parts of the world, the natural limits of our little isle are for all practical purposes vastly extended, and its ramifications are made to spread to the remotest parts of the globe, whence they at once draw nourishment from the parent trunk, and it still continues to afford vitality and stability to them.

Colonies form a sort of medium between the different departments of a nation, and the foreign states with which it holds friendly intercourse. They lie locally beyond the shores of the country, and yet they are substantially united and attached to it, by living under the same government. To a certain extent only they have a community of interest, which lasts as long as the dependence on the mother-state continues ; but when this is shaken off, of which there is always a prospect, at any rate a possibility, they become then merely friendly foreign states as regards the nation from which they originated.

The occurrence of the late outbreak in India, affords a proof of the necessity of not only civilizing our colonies, but of binding them to, and incorporating them with the mother-country, by a union of interests, of institutions, of feelings, of religion, and of affection. The more completely this

end is accomplished, the greater is the aid which this nation will derive from its colonies, as the greater also is the benefit which its colonies will derive from this nation. Indeed, a union of the nature alluded to, is the only sound and real cementing principle between parent countries and their colonies.

Being exposed to aggression by foreign powers, colonies, as regards their influence in preserving peace among states, have a corresponding result with the possession of property and children by individuals, which operates as hostages to prevent them from molesting or interfering with one another, from fear of the consequences, either to themselves or to those so closely connected with them, which might ensue. Nevertheless, perhaps in each case, it is something relating to these close connections which constitutes the most frequent occasion of outbreaks between them. And, in addition to this, the circumstance of any country possessing colonies or remote dependencies, tends to destroy that independence as regards its relation with foreign nations, by whom these colonies may be attacked; as also to induce it to cultivate their alliance, and to watch their proceedings.

The result of steam navigation and the electric telegraph, in not merely uniting different parts of the same country, but the distant colonies and the parent state, and in effect bringing them together,



as regards their intercourse of every kind, as though actually located near to one another; amalgamating, as it were, the various scattered portions of the empire, spread through so many regions and climes, into one compact and accessible country; must doubtless be very important as regards the civilization of each. And, indeed, if the different great nations of the earth go on increasing, as they are now doing, both by the annexation of new territories, and the acquisition of fresh colonies, it appears not improbable that the world will eventually be divided, not into four quarters, but into four nations only.

As regards the civilization of colonies, the maintenance of free and constant communication between them and the parent state, must obviously be a matter of the highest importance; as by this means they participate in the superior advancement and enlightenment of the latter, and derive directly from it many of the most essential Elements of civilization. On the other hand, intercourse with the colonies contributes also in its turn to advance the civilization of the mother-country, not only from the productions of various kinds which it affords, but also from the information of great variety that it yields, the strength and wealth that it is the means of ensuring, and the stimulus to enterprise and exertion of each kind which it supplies. Indeed, the maintenance of this intercourse

between the mother-country and her various colonies, as also between the colonies themselves, and the complete carrying it out; are quite as essential for the advancement of civilization, as is the securing the means of Internal Communication between different parts of the same country, and tend more than anything else to cement the union between the colonies and the mother-country, and the colonies one with another. The discovery and application of steam navigation, and of the electric telegraph, are consequently an immense boon to England, so rich in her colonies; and in this respect probably she profits by them beyond any other nation in the world.

It appears necessary, therefore, for the due dissemination of the influence of civilization throughout a nation, both that the before-mentioned means of communication, of each of the five first kinds at least, should be fully established, and also that the subjects of each nature should be freely transmitted thereby. Thus alone can the influence of civilization be largely exercised; the superior enlightenment and cultivation of the metropolis be extended to the promotion of a corresponding civilization in the other parts of the empire; and the resources of the rural and colonial districts be completely developed through the superior knowledge and advancement of the metropolis.

As mutual intercourse between different persons

has been supposed by some writers to be the original mainspring of civilization in each country, and the sole Element requisite for its promotion,—though the latter notion, as I have endeavoured to show, is without foundation in reason,—so it is in reality that which is necessary to the perfection of civilization throughout the whole population of any particular nation. It is the medium by which its diffusion is extended to all parts of the empire. And as the establishment of this communication is, on the one hand, essential to civilization ; so, on the other hand, is civilization essential to the perfect establishment of Internal Communication. And as this Element is extensively dependent on certain of the other Elements for its efficiency in promoting civilization ; so there is no Element which so extensively contributes to aid the operation of those Elements which aid its own operation. This is more especially to be traced in the case of the Elements of National Education, National Religious Influence, National Instructory Institutions, and the National Cultivation of Art and Science.

The freedom of intercourse and intercommunication here contended for, however, like civil freedom, requires to be properly controlled, and to be exercised in moderation only, otherwise it will be in its effects pernicious instead of beneficial to the state as regards its influence on civilization. Thus, while a reasonable degree of activity among the



people, and the free and constant transit and communication from one part of a country to another is desirable to be kept up, and is one great feature in the economy of a civilized nation; yet, on the other hand, a habit of restless activity, which induces persons to be ever wandering about from place to place so as hardly to have a settled home, is directly inimical instead of conducive to civilization; and is in reality a condition which belongs rather to a state of barbarism, than to the economy of a well-ordered, highly civilized community. So also as regards the intercourse one with another which men in general carry on, this should not, of course, be so incessant as to preclude all other and more improving occupations, but should take place at proper intervals only, and under due regulation.

---

#### X. INTERNATIONAL INTERCOURSE.

While inquiring into the nature of the preceding Element, we considered the influence and effect of communication of different kinds between persons of the same nation, as regards the advancement of civilization. In examining the Element now proposed for discussion, I intend to inquire into the result and efficiency, for the same ends, of the intercourse between the people of one nation and those of another, which is in reality an Element in

its essential characteristics very similar to that which precedes it, and has by some persons, indeed, been included with it, as though a part of the same Element. Nevertheless, there are important distinctions between the two, both as regards their quality and their tendency; and the present Element is so much more extensive and more comprehensive in the range of its operation and the scope of its results than the other, as almost of itself to create a difference from it as regards its very nature.

It was observed during the consideration of the preceding Element, that while in a state of barbarism, the various districts of a nation are not only separated from one another as regards their mutual intercourse, but in the habit of waging war against each other; and that civilization draws them together and renders them friendly. This principle is applicable not merely to different communities in the same country, but also, and perhaps equally so, to different countries lying adjacent to, and capable of holding intercourse with one another. Civilization, and civilization alone, unites them; and the result of civilization is to convert feelings of rivalry and hatred into amicable relations and offices of friendship.

Foreign or International Intercourse, although I have placed it the last among the Elements of Civilization, as it appears in our present state of society

the least directly to conduce to that condition; is probably the earliest Element which contributes to its production in many rude nations, who not only imbibe the first notions of various kinds which lead them to cultivate different civilized pursuits, from their intercourse with the inhabitants of foreign countries; but, what is even of greater importance, from this intercourse proceeds the first stimulus to their advancement. Accordingly, as already remarked, the original spring of civilization among individuals is mutual intercourse. The next stage in their progress, and which further conduces to their advancement in civilization, is the intercourse between different tribes and bodies in the same country. And the third and last incipient producer of and stimulus to civilization, is the intercourse which they acquire with foreign nations.

Not only, indeed, upon civilization, but also upon art and science, the influence of International Intercourse has been supposed by some writers to be productive of the most extensive benefit; and it appears to have been believed by them that to this and this alone have their origination and their rise been owing. Here, however, as in the case of civilization, it was not the intercourse itself which generated or promoted the pursuits in question, but the knowledge, or experience, or education, which was obtained through this intercourse.

The immediate and direct civilizing effect of In-



ternational Intercourse upon any particular country, is, moreover, here to be considered quite independent of the assistance which such intercourse always indirectly affords to civilization, by aiding the operation of its other Elements ; as where Education is stimulated by the superior accomplishments of the foreigners who visit it ; where art or science are promoted by imitating the productions, or copying the inventions of another nation ; or where customs conducive to civilization are introduced by the new country to which the inhabitants of the other had until then been strangers. We have here only to regard the influence on the progress of civilization which foreign intercourse exercises, more especially as respects the mental stimulus and general awakening and excitement to emulation and exertion which it produces among a people ; the sharpening of their faculties, and the development of their energies by this means.

Indeed, the grand, immediate, and most important effect of communication and intercourse, whether as regards that between different individuals, different communities, or different nations, is this excitement of stimulus of some kind or other, by which the powers and resources of each are at once fully developed. The truth of this proposition is particularly illustrated in the case of those children who are brought much into communication with others, by which their faculties are greatly sharp-

ened, and their energies are extensively excited ; in comparison with those who have been educated with but few companions. So also is it with respect to communities and nations, intercourse between which calls forth the resources and energies of each, and stimulates them to develope their various powers and capacities.

Nations, moreover, like individuals, are not only greatly improved, as regards their advancement in civilization, by the establishment of mutual intercourse ; but they are also extensively benefited in a variety of ways, corresponding also with the case of individuals, by the maintenance of union and friendship one with another : and perhaps most of the social evils among men, and the political evils among states, are to be traced to the neglect of this principle. In the case, too, both of men and states, certain important advantages can be conferred only by foreign aid, being beyond the power of the individuals themselves to secure. By this union together in the league of friendship, of different foreign nations, alone can ultimately be attained not merely the civilization of a particular country, but that also of the whole world.

An important influence on national character is, moreover, produced by International Intercourse, and that in several respects, physical, moral, and intellectual, corresponding with the change occasioned in individual character by individual inter-

course. This result nevertheless, in the case both of individuals and nations, is more extensive and more important as regards the development and course of conduct thereby occasioned, than with respect to any actual alteration that takes place. Indeed, the establishment of intercourse with others, and especially the particular nature of the communication carried on, materially affects the policy and the action alike of men and of states. This we may observe in the different persons around us, and also in the several nations of the earth, who, according to their social or geographical position, and the consequent opportunity which they possess for holding intercourse with other individuals or countries, vary both in their character and their career.

The principal, natural, and original causes of the separation one from another of different nations, are the partitions effected by seas and rivers, those made by chains of mountains and forests, the distinctions arising from the difference in climate and natural productions, and those occasioned by a dissimilarity in language. Nature no doubt very wisely instituted this division of various countries, which in an earlier state of society and of civilization was in many respects desirable. But as civilization, by softening the manners and regulating the habits of mankind, fits them for more extensive intercourse, and thereby renders this severance no longer necessary; so is it also the first to break down these barriers, and its



tendency is to unite those who have hitherto been separated, from whatever cause. The sciences introduced by civilization contribute, moreover, to enable us to overcome those obstacles to mutual intercourse between nations which Nature had imposed; and in some instances they even make them available, as in the case of seas and rivers rendered navigable, for means of communication. So also a variety in natural productions, which at first operated to deter the people of a different nation from settling in any new country, may eventually, when civilization has advanced, be the main inducement to visit its shores. In like manner, mountains and forests, by the supplies which they afford for the uses of civilized life, instead of separating people one from another, actually draw those of various nations together who are each bent on procuring the same commodity. A difference in language, which constitutes an intellectual, as the others formed physical boundaries between adjacent nations, as intellectual progress advances, ceases to be an obstacle to mutual intercourse, and those of each nation learn the language of the other; and this very variety of tongue may ultimately in many cases be of itself a motive for visiting the foreign country with a desire to acquire its language. Thus it will be seen that, as civilization fits men for International Intercourse, so it chiefly contributes to annihilate the barriers against the advancement of the latter;

and that International Intercourse owes as much to civilization, as civilization does to International Intercourse.

Aristotle remarks that “to the external action of a state, a wide field lies open in the diversity of genius and character of the surrounding nations.”\* Countries in different stages of civilization are naturally drawn together, the more advanced being as eager to receive from the other its natural resources, as the other is to share in the wealth and arts of the more refined.

Religion which, when it is duly cultivated and genuinely carried out, contributes more than anything to unite mankind, whether members of the same community or of various nations, as all alike joined together in the common fraternity of fellow-creatures, the offspring of the same Creator, and the subjects of the same Almighty Sovereign; by the numerous differences of opinion to which it gives rise, seems to be one of the leading intellectual and moral causes for separation, and for preventing free intercourse between them. As Religious Influence is an important Element in civilization, so when civilization itself has become perfected, then and then only will religion,—which has hitherto been not merely one of the main and strongest occasions of division, but which has preserved its power while the mighty barriers of separation occasioned by seas,

\* Politics, book iv.

and rivers, and other natural causes, have been surmounted,—become the surest and only absolute bond of union.

At an early stage in the career of the civilization of most nations, the pursuit of commerce and of general projects of this kind, contributes to draw them closer together; although many of these undertakings frequently prove on the other hand, the occasion of suspicions and differences between them, and afford topics for disagreement. Civilization, however, has a powerful effect in uniting both individuals and nations, by rendering them more dependent one on another for mutual aid and commodities, and also by refining their social habits. By the interchange of natural productions, various communities are also bound together, especially in the earlier stages of civilization; although this may also lead to jealousies and disputes. The establishment of free and friendly communication between different nations, especially for purposes of trade, adds in effect essentially to the riches of each, as thereby every state which is in this position is enabled to derive something from the resources of the other, as well as to dispose of its own superfluous produce. This consideration should operate as an additional inducement to the maintenance of amicable intercourse.

It is further to be observed that, as it is with regard to different rival bodies in a state, so is it with



respect to different foreign nations; there are certain benefits to one which are benefits to the whole, and certain injuries to one which are injuries to the whole. Such are great discoveries in science, grand achievements in art, the scarcity or abundance of provisions, and the like. Each nation should therefore endeavour, as far as possible, to assist every other nation in relation to these matters, which in reality are the property not of particular states, but of all people and countries alike; and are the gifts not of one man to another, but the common gifts of God to all mankind. Indeed, as each individual lives, or should live, not for himself alone but for others as well, and should be ever striving to benefit them as well as himself; so each nation should, in a corresponding manner, carry on its affairs, not for its own advantage only, but for that of the whole of nations by which it is surrounded, and by whose condition it is ever itself necessarily more or less affected.

Commerce contributes extensively to promote intercourse with foreign nations, as well as to unite them together. Commerce and International Intercourse,—indeed, commerce and Internal social Communication—appear naturally to spring up almost contemporaneously, commerce being the immediate result of intercourse, while both tend to support each other, whether the intercourse be international or only internal. In ages long past,

commerce was the means of inducing foreigners to visit our shores from far distant lands, and it still continues to operate in the same manner. Commerce seems to make some atonement for the sordid influence which it directly exercises, by the civilizing tendency that its intercourse produces, and by its effect in binding together in one vast chain of fellowship so many different nations of the world. The interchange one with another, according to the wants and natural or artificial productions of each, leads to a corresponding interchange of ideas and sentiments. A moral bond of union thus becomes formed, whose strength no wars can entirely sever; whose length extends through the wide territory of the civilized world; and by which alike the most polished nations, and those of the fiercest and rudest nature, have been drawn together.

Our own country is indebted for its earliest civilization, to its intercourse with the nations around it; and, as has already been observed,\* it owes much to its geographical position, and its proximity to the continent of Europe, and to surrounding nations, who have furthered its progress in civilization. To this fact also have been greatly owing its commercial advantages, and its skill in navigation. Every country is no doubt largely influenced in its pursuits and character, correspondingly with the case

\* *Essence of Civilization, ante, p. 23.*

of an individual, by its particular adaptation, and the circumstances by which it is surrounded. Its geographical position may often do much to determine the policy of a country, and that policy should ever be in strict accordance with what Nature so dictates. Thus, France, from her situation, is eminently qualified to exercise an important influence over the various great countries with which she is closely connected by geographical affinity; and it is her true policy to pursue a political course accordingly. England, on the other hand, from her insular position, is no less adapted to stand independent; and independence of other nations should be therefore the basis, and leading and prominent characteristic of her policy as regards foreign nations. Particular localities in a country will also be characteristically distinguished according to their situation. Thus, Dover is naturally fitted as a port to the Continent for travellers; Hull for commercial Continental traffic; London, from its accessibility by water, and inland position as well, to be the metropolis of the empire.

Britain was first civilized by its Continental neighbours, and as a colony of Rome its further progress in this respect was extensively promoted. In later periods also, its connection with this seat of arts and learning did much to accelerate its career. It has subsequently advanced independently in the march of civilization, influenced nevertheless at each step



more or less by the nations with which it has held intercourse, until at length it has reached its present position among the states of Europe, although much doubtless remains to be done to perfect it here. It is also engaged in extending the influences and the blessings of civilization to the various nations of the earth with whom it carries on communication, who are less favoured in this respect; a debt of gratitude that it owes to the great cause of civilization, for the large benefits which in its earlier history it derived from its intercourse with other countries.

Those nations which, as in the case of the people of England, live upon an island, in many respects lie under great disadvantages as regards the constancy and the intimacy of their intercourse with their foreign neighbours, compared with countries that are placed on a vast continent, with which the neighbouring nations maintain unreserved communication, and between whom a continual interchange of ideas takes place; so that all the improvements effected in one kingdom, are at once made known to the other, as though the aggregate of these nations formed but one great social community. On the other hand, although people residing upon islands are deprived of this constant and intimate intercourse with the lands lying near; yet they possess a much greater facility of intercourse with those countries which are distant, and

enjoy a far wider range of intercommunion than do continental inland nations, whose communications are almost entirely confined to their immediate neighbours. The sea, although it doubtless much restrains free and unbroken intercourse between nearly adjacent countries, yet it affords the utmost facility for communication between nations which lie far apart from each other, and brings a much greater variety of people into communion than without its aid would ever have been enabled to hold any intercourse at all. This, therefore, which in the earlier ages of the world formed the principal barrier between different nations, and mainly impeded all travelling between distant provinces, is what now mainly promotes and facilitates this communication; and by the power of steam, results alike wonderful and influential in the moral advancement and civilization of the world, have been achieved, reducing the ocean to one vast traversable plain, annihilating the obstacles of space, and invading even the mighty barriers of time.

Indeed, if the world, instead of being intersected by seas, had been constituted of one mighty continent, not only would not the natural separation of countries one from another, and the division of mankind into different orders and species, which is for numerous reasons so essentially desirable, ever have been effected; but, on the other hand, intercourse between nations which lie far distant one

from another, would have been physically impossible. Vast oceans are, however, traversed without inconvenience, and traffic is conveyed over them which could never have been transported by land. Such, moreover, is the difficulty of travelling by land beyond that of transit by water, that, with all the aid of science, the interior of some of the largest continents is as yet unexplored.

But, although the means of travelling over the globe are so much extended beyond what they were in the earlier ages of society; yet, as civilization advances, nations have become far more established in their own territories. They no longer consist of homeless tribes; yet they mix more than ever one with another. And, although facility both as regards Internal Communication and International Intercourse greatly contributes, if, indeed, it is not essential to the civilization of a nation; yet, if this facility in either case tends to induce people to acquire a desultory, unsettled habit of life, so as to have no fixed abode or home, it retards, instead of advancing, civilization. Wandering tribes are even more uncivilized than lone islanders. Perpetual friction, equally with rust, is the cause of waste.

Allusion was, indeed, made at the conclusion of the preceding Element, to the necessity for its due regulation; and it was observed that, although occasional communication and intercourse with other



places and persons are desirable, yet that constant communication and intercourse are unsettling and uncivilizing. This principle is yet more applicable to the Element of International Intercourse than to that of Internal Communication. As we prefer our own homes to all other places, so should we prefer our own country to all other nations. And, although occasional communication with foreigners is desirable, both for the sake of deriving information from them of different kinds, and for dispelling homebred prejudices ; yet to be always going among them, deprives us too much of our cherished national feelings and habits, and instead of merely rooting up undue predilections, is too apt to leave us without any fixed principles at all.

The means of communication and of intercourse which are established between the people of different states, must necessarily vary extensively from those between the people of the same country, both as to the particular mode resorted to for this purpose, and the end which is sought to be attained. In the case of each nation, moreover, they will vary according to the character of the people themselves, and the nature of the countries with which they desire to hold communication. Both as regards Internal Communication and International Intercourse, the invention of steam navigation, of railroads, and of the electric telegraph, has done much for the cause of civilization ; and in each nation,

more or less, though not, perhaps, an equal amount, has been effected. Not only are the people of different departments and states thus drawn closer together, but the barriers against free intercourse are effectually broken down. The general improvement as regards the travelling accommodation in almost every country, and the establishment of international laws for different purposes, but which all alike contribute to bind together those of various nations who are subject to them, whether their object be the prevention of crime, the promotion of trade, or the protection of efforts of genius; directly tend both to encourage and extend International Intercourse, and to advance civilization.

The outbreak of war between different nations, is analogous to the occurrence of quarrels among men. In the case of both, moreover, the disagreement tends to develope the energies of the contending parties; but it puts a stop to all social and intellectual intercourse between them. The powers of each are exerted to the utmost, but the progress of civilization is at the same time impeded. In the place of endeavouring to benefit, their only object is now to annoy one another. While in the former case they imitate the conduct of angels, in the latter they follow only the course of demons. Nevertheless, as in the civil punishment of an individual we aim not at his injury but his improvement,—or at any rate the latter is the ultimate, although the former

may appear to be the direct object in view,—and we hope at once to correct his future conduct, and to afford warning to others not to transgress in a corresponding manner ; so in going to war with a state, we should aim not at its destruction or deterioration ;—except incidentally, and in the same way that we endeavour to give pain in order effectually to inflict punishment on an individual,—but merely to bring it to a sense of right, to compel it to act with justice for the future, and also to deter other countries from following its bad example. Indeed, as is the case between different rival bodies in a state, so different foreign nations have no legitimate right to attempt, even in war, the injury of one another, further than what is necessary to promote the general benefit of the whole family or confederacy of nations, in preventing or repelling aggression through the unjust ambition of one state, by restraining the undue assumptions of such a state. The only additional warrant for war, is the restoration of the balance of power among rival nations, and which of itself affords the surest guarantee for the permanence of peace.

If civilization were generally established in every country, and its spirit animated all their rulers, not only would each of the nations of Europe, indeed of the world, be as forward to assist and improve, as they now are to injure and attack one another ; but in the maintenance of their mutual relations, the



welfare of each and of the whole body of them would be considered, and but few occasions for ruptures between them would be afforded. By conventional treaties and fair discussion, instead of by resort to arms,—by the heads of the wise, instead of by the hands of the strong,—would all matters in dispute then be decided; and, it might fairly be hoped, far more equitably than by the result of brute force. Not only, indeed, in an advanced state of general civilization, ought conventions to take the place of, and in fact entirely to supersede, contests by arms; but the only true pretext for resorting to contests by arms, is the desire to enforce conventions, and to compel their due observance and complete carrying out; and this is the point towards which all martial efforts should be directed, and to attain which they should be concentrated.

War is either directly or indirectly inimical to nearly every Element of civilization. Education is much impeded by it. To Religious Influence it is extensively injurious; as also to the prosperity of the different National Institutions, to the progress of Art and Science, and the celebration of peaceful fêtes. Dignities it diverts from being the encouragement and the rewards of civilization, but they are resorted to only to incite to feats of arms. Laws are on many accounts, then, more stringent, and are less devoted to moral ends; while liberty of speech and communication are restrained. Friendly foreign

Intercourse is in such case, of course, necessarily much abridged. Nor are the indirect injuries inflicted upon civilization by war, much less numerous than those which are direct. Of this class are the ravages which it creates, causing the destruction of many noble works of art, and the hindrance that it occasions to all progress in improvements of this nature. Vast sums are then required to carry on war, which would otherwise be applied in great national undertakings, or in efforts of social progress. In addition to this, the minds of the most able and active are then diverted from the civilizing arts of peace to the exigencies of war.

In civilization, however, as in many other matters, the most opposite results will sometimes be produced by the same cause. Thus, war, which is so extensively destructive, as regards its direct effect, to many of the pursuits of peace; in the erection of castles and forts, has raised the finest of architectural structures. And the events of war, while they spread ruin on art and literature, have supplied the noblest themes to the poet and the historian. In two respects, moreover, in the earlier period of the world's career, war directly tended towards, if it did not directly promote, civilization.

1. By causing the greatest activity, both mental and bodily, among different nations and different people, which had a powerful effect in advancing civilization, and to a certain extent developed some

of its Elements ; as also by creating a spirit of rivalry between various people and nations, the stimulus produced by which was highly favourable to civilization. 2. By war, different people were brought together, and by war they became acquainted with the skill and science, and the contrivances of the nations with which they contended. Nothing, moreover, tends so directly or so powerfully as does war, to develop the energies and resources of any nation. The only true and correct principle applicable to war and its effect upon the civilization of any country, appears, therefore, to be this ; that it either furthers or retards civilization according to circumstances. In the early ages of society, it is favourable to it, while in more advanced times it is inimical to its progress. Thus, in the former periods, it encourages civilization to a certain extent, by inducing people to visit foreign countries, and to acquire intercourse with them. It also acts as a stimulus to science, and to many inventions applicable to martial exploits. On the other hand, it retards the advance of civilization by destroying domestic security, hindering foreign commerce and travel, and calling off attention from the arts of peace. In each nation, however civilized, war is always a period of comparative barbarism. Nevertheless, as war ordinarily originates in civil contention, so civil intervention should be resorted to, and should be efficient to terminate it. At such periods, when



hostilities have once broken out, too much excitement prevails to allow people to reason calmly on the points in dispute. Arms alone are then resorted to, to the neglect of all those pursuits which contribute mainly to the glory of civilized nations.

As in a rude state of society, men resort to physical force, and to that only, in order to repel individual attack, even when that is not of a physical kind ; and when society has become more civilized, not only moral but physical aggression is sometimes withstood by moral force : so, in a corresponding manner, as a nation progresses in civilization, it may reasonably be inquired whether national as well as individual violence, such as one state inflicts on another, might not in all cases be repulsed by moral instead of physical force. With regard to this question it may, however, be remarked that, in the first place, it would be required for all nations alike to be in a high state of civilization in order to carry out the proposal. Even among men in the present state of society, the attacks of the rude and lawless are ordinarily repelled by physical power, and are generally punished by physical inflictions. So must it also be among nations, until civilization in a high degree is established. And even then, occasions will arise when physical force must be the ultimate resort, as may sometimes be the case among highly civilized individuals. One essential distinction between men and animals is that the

former contend and decide their animosities by moral, the latter by physical efforts.

The promotion of civilization among, and the establishment of intercourse between different countries, has a powerful tendency extensively to humanize them as regards their conduct in war, and to effect a restraint on such occasions of those brutal excesses which are indulged in by barbarous people. Among civilized nations, the temples and monuments of art, and receptacles of learning, will be respected in whatever country and under whatever circumstances they may be seized, not only on account of their own nature, but for the common benefit which they may confer on those of all nations alike. Probably, indeed, the practical result of civilization is never more strikingly and more powerfully shown than in the mode of carrying on war, more especially as regards the manner in which we now avail ourselves of a victory, which is an occasion when the greatest and freest opportunity of following out our own inclinations, and evincing our actual disposition, is afforded. Civilization most completely proves its power and efficiency by softening the rigours of war, and by repressing its barbarities. Generosity towards the vanquished, it causes to be exhibited in the place of reckless ferocity. Civilization, indeed, enables the most valiant nations not only to overcome their enemies, but to conquer themselves.

Thus, though war is the condition most directly inimical to civilization, yet on nothing more than on war has civilization effected greater changes, and that both in the mode of carrying it on, and in the manner in which our conduct in relation to it is regulated. Although wars are now far more devastating than they formerly were, from the aid of science being extensively brought into the contest, yet the issue is more speedily determined. And the way in which prisoners of war are now treated, contrasted with what was formerly their fate, affords a striking illustration of the progress of the world in civilization.

According to the mode, moreover, in which war is carried on by one nation against another, both as regards the power and ability evinced, and the honour and clemency displayed; great effect is produced on the mind of the opposing nation, which may eventually be of important influence, alike in restoring and in preserving peace between them. It was a wary maxim of one, always to treat your friend as though he would some day be your enemy. It would be a maxim more consistent with honour and humanity, and more conducive to civilization, and is one as applicable to dealings between states as to those between individuals, always to treat your enemy as though he would some day be your friend.

In carrying on warfare and other contentions, both between men and states, it should ever be



borne in mind that acts essentially bad in themselves can never lose or change their character by the circumstances under which they were perpetrated, however these circumstances may operate for the moment to divert attention from them, to screen them from obloquy, or to avert the punishment which they deserve. Ultimately, nevertheless, the natural consequences of such deeds will certainly follow, and the offender will surely suffer in one way or other for the atrocities he has committed.

It is frequently remarked in our courts of justice that the most ordinary incentive to commit theft, arises from the fact of goods being unwarily exposed. As it is in the affairs of individuals, so is it also in those of nations ; and no provocation to war is so ready or so common as that of a country, from its unguarded condition, offering a temptation to some other state which is well prepared to take advantage of its improvidence, to endeavour to invade it, and to subjugate it to its own power. The cause and the consequence are in each case the same, and both men and states do well to take warning from so constant and so natural an occurrence. On the whole, probably, while success in the art of directing attacks is that which is most serviceable for the promotion of, and in the carrying on of war ; a knowledge of the no less important, and certainly not less exalted science of de-

fence, is that which is mainly requisite for the promotion and preservation of peace. The former is, for the most part, an active, the latter a passive employment. But the latter requires quite as much skill as the former; and its end, as here considered, is surely far nobler. Both the character of the inhabitants, and the insular position of this country, seem to have coincided as regards the main method of warfare to be adopted by this nation, which is of the defensive rather than of the offensive kind; and is effected partly by its navy, and partly by its army, more particularly as regards its protective operations by its rifle corps, to exercise in both which undertakings the natural genius of the people prompts them to practise and to excel.

An aggressive war, solely for the sake, and avowedly with the object of adding to the territory of the Power which commenced the war; is no more justifiable by a state, than is an unprovoked assault by one individual on the person of another for the purpose of depriving him of his property. In both instances alike, the crime is that of robbery, although the degree of ignominy attached to it in the case of the state may not be so great as in the case of the individual, or the means of punishing the aggressor so readily available.

In political and personal, as well as in martial and national contests, the influence of civilization is extensively experienced in subduing and con-

trolling those violent and virulent feelings of animosity and antipathy that, at one period, ever existed between rival competitors and heads of factions, as well as rulers of nations; which led them to regard each other as each alike intent upon, and equally desirous of one another's destruction, though really only differing in opinion as to the best means of promoting the actual welfare of their country, or of mankind at large.

Civilization, which in some respects contributes to weaken the mere physical power both of men and nations, yet confers on them a vast superiority over bodies endowed with brute force alone, by the dexterity which they acquire. Hence it is that civilized nations so far exceed barbarians in martial skill and efficiency. There is in this respect the same corresponding difference between a civilized and an uncivilized people, as there is between a man and an animal. Although the animal may be of four times the size and physical strength of the man, it is speedily vanquished by the intellectual resources and scientific appliances of the latter.

Not only, however, do science and civilization aid the carrying on of war, but the promotion and the maintenance of peace are also extensively furthered by their means. Thus, gunpowder and steam navigation, by placing different countries more on an equality both as regards their position and means of defence, have more completely reduced



war to a science, and rendered its issue less uncertain than formerly; all which has contributed to discourage a resort to arms, and has opened opportunities for civil interventions.

The desirableness and duty of preserving peace as far as possible, between different nations, appears strictly analogous to its maintenance between private persons. Peace is always of itself to be preferred, but should never be sought after at the sacrifice of right or duty, which is a worse evil than that which we aimed at preventing. So among individuals, friendships should be maintained, even at a considerable cost; although to effect this we are by no means bound to submit to injustice or oppression. In both cases, however, the surest and most efficient way permanently to preserve peace, is to be always fully prepared for war. Nothing so powerfully provokes attack both among individuals and nations, as the apparent destitution of all means to repel it.

It is, moreover, of great importance for the preservation of peace among different nations, that they should be each made to maintain the natural boundaries assigned to them as their proper territories, such as chains of mountains and great rivers afford, and by which Nature herself seems to have chalked out the limitations for each to observe, so as to prevent all causes for mutual aggression on this account. Equal or fair distribution of territory,

according to the allotment made by Nature, is perhaps in each case the firmest foundation on which to proceed in fixing or restraining the limits of any country. Here, however, the increase of population in such a state, and the decrease of that of the adjacent nations, and many other causes, must, of course, occasion a deviation from these principles, which can be considered as applicable only as general, leading, fundamental rules.

Of importance equal with, if not greater than that of the preservation of the natural boundaries of different states, is the preservation, also, of those frontiers and entrances from one country to another, which may be regarded as their natural citadels; and which serve to resist the inroads of aggression, and are, in fact, the fortifications which maintain peace itself, as well as promoting the security of the nation.

As in the case of the rival interests existing in the same state, so also among different rival foreign nations, it is essential to maintain the due balance of power, by which suspicions and jealousies of one another become banished, and they are converted into mutual friends, and the promoters of the general welfare. In considering the preservation of the balance of power among states, it should, moreover, be borne in mind that there are interests as well as forces which can be set off and balanced one against the other, and which may

operate both to unite various nations together, and also contribute to the pacific and harmonious carrying on of the government in each particular country. As much as possible, too, corresponding also with the case of the various rival interests in a state, the several interests existing in separate nations should be made to contribute to the mutual welfare of one another. Civilization will thus serve to fuse into one great family not only the different people of the same land, but the various nations of the whole world.

As in the intercourse between individuals, so in that between nations, both pacific and hostile, especial regard should be had to the character and disposition of each, quite as carefully as, in forming an alliance with them, we consider the commercial products which each can supply advantageously to the other. As it is with individuals, so is it with nations, that some are naturally agreeable and friendly, and others are naturally disagreeable and hostile to one another. The true mode of politic dealing, both with men and states, is to know alike how both to take advantage of their merits and their defects; as also how to correct ourselves, and to supply our own exigencies by their deficiencies and their example.

Moreover, as in the case of individuals, so also in that of nations, there are certain among them which, owing to their peculiar character, intel-



lectual, moral, or physical, their position, or some other cause, can never agree together, or feel mutual esteem or regard one for another. But as in the case of the former, it may occasionally happen that circumstances occur which change their whole relation with each other, and induce them to agree with and love one another; so in the case of nations also, whose character and position vary equally with those of individuals, events may take place which will alter their mutual disposition and feeling, and produce concord and amity where before there were only rivalry and hostility. Nevertheless, although nations do well to be united one with another, a dependence one upon the other is very far from desirable, whether for food, for protection, or for wealth. Independence is, indeed, in every respect, as great a virtue, and is of as much consequence to be maintained among nations as among individuals; and is absolutely essential for the extensive prosperity and advancement of each. The want of it is, moreover, experienced in every department of the state, and in every act both of individual and of civil life.

But, although mutual dependence between states is not desirable, yet the maintenance of alliances between them by treaties is most expedient; and these ought, doubtless, to be as faithfully kept and as literally observed as are the ties of friendship and the bonds of intercourse between individuals, which

it is equally the interest of all parties to respect. Thus regarded, a correct perception of the spirit of these agreements should in all instances be sufficient to enforce them, even when the strictness of the letter is found to fail. This, and this alone, can preserve us against deceit either in social or in state Intercourse. Yet perhaps here, as in other cases already adverted to, that which was designed solely to prevent the possibility of dispute, proves in reality to be its most frequent cause.

The rapid progress of civilization during periods of peace, as contrasted with its advancement in time of war, is at once proved by reference to history, more especially that of the career of this country in the last forty years. As Christianity is the most perfect condition of civilization, so universal peace will be one of the most precious moral fruits of Christianity. Among the main causes of the progress of civilization in time of peace, it cannot be doubted that the existence of mutual Intercourse between nations is one of the most powerful.

Nevertheless, as regards our Intercourse with foreign nations, it is a leading principle to be observed that, while that Intercourse should be as unrestricted as possible; at the same time every requisite precaution must be adopted in order to render it as free as we can from injury or danger to the states so communicating. As no great benefit is without its accompanying bane, so with our refinement we export to less civilized nations our

vices also, and with their valuable products we obtain additional means of increasing our debasing luxuries. On matters, too, relating to religion, morality, legislation, education, and even taste; the correct principles of one nation may be vitiated or degenerated by the depraved or lax notions of the country with which it holds Intercourse. The best security, indeed the only safe guarantee against the corruption of a people by this means, is the instillation of sound and correct principles on those subjects concerning which there is the most danger of their being unsettled. And the more completely this is effected, the more perfect will be the condition of their civilization.

It is fully as important to preserve a high standard of national morality and honour in a state, as it is to maintain personal honour and morality in the case of a man. As regards the different parties, too, in each particular nation, this principle should be observed. Neither states, nor individuals, nor parties, can deal freely and satisfactorily one with another, unless entire reliance subsists in each other's honour. A want of confidence as regards this, is consequently fatal to one branch of International Intercourse which is of a most important nature, being that which is carried on by the different governments of those countries one with another as the organs of communication of the people of those states. As the crimes of individuals against the code of society, in any particular country, are punished



through the mutual co-operation of the other members of society against the person proved guilty; so the crimes of a state against the society of states, must be in a corresponding manner punished by means of a confederation of states against the guilty nation. War for this purpose is always justifiable; and its lawfulness is founded on the soundest of all reasons for war, the ultimate hope of securing a permanent peace, by terminating those excitements which provoke war. International laws serve as a kind of chain to bind together the people and the governors of different nations, who all acknowledge one common rule of right. They tend to prevent disruptions, just as the recognition of the same laws binds together the various subjects of the same country, and the acknowledgment of the same Supreme Being unites all Christians into one common brotherhood.

Moreover, although the general result of Intercourse, both internal and International, is to promote civilization by stimulating the people to enterprise, and showing them what has been done by others, whose inventions they are induced to follow, as also to improve by these their own efforts; yet, on the other hand, one effect of this Intercourse of either kind will be to prevent men from relying on their own resources as regards the particular pursuits for which they are especially adapted, and for which they have manifested a peculiar genius. These will no longer engage that exclusive devo-

tion which they did before, but other foreign inventions and works of skill will command attention in common with them ; and in the endeavour to emulate what is new, and which on that account commands admiration, that for which they were especially qualified, and which sprang up indigenous in their minds, incurs neglect. Just so it is in the case of individuals, that when a man comes to mix with society at large, he disregards those particular pursuits or studies to which his own natural genius impelled him, in order that he may obtain proficiency in undertakings in which he sees the world around him to be occupied and to have acquired dexterity, and with whom he desires to place himself on a level.

There is an important branch of jurisprudence connected with the subject of International Intercourse, which demands here a passing notice, exercising as it does an extensive influence on the civilization of each country ; and that is the regulation of the laws of different kinds affecting foreigners who may be either resident in a nation, or merely travellers through it, and whether as regards their personal freedom, or their commercial dealings. However desirous we may be to treat foreigners as friends, we must not at the same time forget that they are aliens. However pleased we are with our visitors, we ought not to consider them as a part of our own family. The distinctions proper in the treatment of each ought ever to be kept up, not

only in order to secure our independence, but to preserve our friendship. As in the regulation of property, so in that of ceremony, nothing so soon leads to dispute as the neglect to observe the due distinctions essential to be maintained.

Alike various and important, therefore, are the results which are obtained by the establishment of a free and general Intercourse between nations, as regards their advancement in civilization. Art and science, literature and learning, jurisprudence and morals, commerce and discovery, are all extended, and all improved by this means. And in the pursuit of each, not only are many new suggestions gained, but many prejudices on several subjects become dissipated. As this communication between different nations is more firmly established, the variety of language not only ceases to be a barrier between them, but by each learning the language of the other, many original ideas are conveyed to one another in the fresh turns of thought thereby disclosed. A new and most extensive mine of knowledge is thus opened, whose wealth, especially as regards that most precious of all knowledge, the knowledge of human nature, is almost if not wholly illimitable. The production in any country of great and sterling literary works, is of value in the promotion of International Intercourse, as leading foreigners to the study of its language; just as the production of splendid works of art contributes also to this Intercourse by attracting the people of foreign



countries to visit them. As speaking different languages, is one of the strongest and most formidable barriers which was raised by Nature herself against the Intercourse between different nations; so the acquirement of a knowledge of the language of a country, forms of itself a strong bond of Intercourse. Nevertheless, however desirable it may be to read in the original tongue the master-works of genius produced by each country; the advantage to the literature of every land of possessing translations from the best foreign authors, and the benefit derived to the mind of the nation from their circulation, and its tendency to promote civilization, cannot be denied. By this means, mental communication with other countries is opened for those to whom ignorance of the language remains a barrier. In either case, indeed, an acquaintance with the literature of a nation, constitutes intellectual Intercourse with its people.

The increase of Intercourse between different nations which has of late years taken place, has done much for the general advancement of civilization, although the results of this may in certain cases vary. While we extend to less civilized countries our arts and our refinement, we derive from them in return many products and commodities. Vast changes are by this means effected. Nevertheless, in our Intercourse with less polished nations, it should ever be our aim to communicate to them our civilization, without imbibing any por-

tion of their barbarism in return ; just as knowledge dispels ignorance, although ignorance cannot obliterate knowledge. Something, however, is to be gathered from each nation, as from each individual, either in the way of example, or wisdom, or warning ; and the result here is as great among states as among persons. To rulers of nations, especially, this information is most important and valuable. By blending together these different influences, our aim should be to profit alike by our researches, our experience, and our new spheres of operation.

Now indeed the territory of civilization almost forms of itself one vast and mighty empire, the feelings, and habits, and desires of every individual being moulded alike, the same knowledge and pursuits animating each person ; and through the whole civilized world are acknowledged the same grand principles of truth, and justice, and moral conduct. As it is when civilization is most perfectly established, that International Intercourse is most free and most general ; so when International Intercourse is completely carried out, does it serve to communicate along with itself to the nations to which it is extended, each of the other Elements of civilization, until at length, by degrees, all the earth becomes subjected to the influence of the latter. International Intercourse, moreover, contributes to aid civilization, wherever it reaches, correspondingly as civilization in its turn aids International Intercourse.

## THE END RESULTING FROM THE COMPLETE ESTABLISHMENT OF CIVILIZATION.

HAVING considered in succession, one by one, the various Elements deemed essential to complete the civilization of a nation, we now proceed to inquire into the general result of their operation, in the aggregate. It may, perhaps, however, be objected, that what are here termed the Elements of Civilization, have in reality no right to be so considered; that certain of them are not of this nature, while others not here included, might claim to be so ranked. To such persons I would reply, that whatever directly and essentially conduces to the original constitution, progress, and perfection of any being or condition, must necessarily be classed as one of its Elements. It is of these that the composition is formed, and these are the particles which contribute to make up the entire mass. Considering civilization in this light, the Elements of it above enumerated will be found to be correct; to be those which conduce to effect it; and those only. And



it may be further added, that there are none besides these which contribute in any important degree to this end. This, surely, is a conclusive mode of testing their correctness.

That the Elements which I have set forth and described, are those, those only, and all of them those that are essential to effect civilization; is, indeed, obvious not merely from their operation in the civilization of states, but even in that of individuals, among whom precisely the same, or exactly corresponding causes, are what produce or result in their civilization. And not only are all these Elements essential to perfect civilization in any nation, but their deficiency in it will be peculiarly characterized according to their want of any one of these Elements. Thus in Greece and Rome, the absence of the Element of a correct Religious Influence, was the cardinal defect in their civilization, as it must also be in the present day in that of Turkey.

In considering the End of Civilization, we ought, moreover, essentially to distinguish between civilization, and those partial and incomplete attainments of it which some mistake for general civilization, but which are in reality only the achievement of particular branches of it; and so, because the results which follow the entire accomplishment of civilization are not produced by the latter, we are led to deny to civilization itself due credit for the results which it can effect, and which it never

fails, when properly carried out, to secure. Thus, certain communities have reached a high degree of perfection in art and literature; but from the other Elements of civilization being neglected, they have continued in a state of comparative barbarism as regards their general condition.

As in the case of an individual, a little knowledge serves only to puff him up, and renders him superficial, while depth in knowledge alone confers power; so in the case of a nation, while partial or limited civilization tends to develope but a few of its energies, its complete civilization alone can suffice to perfect alike its material and intellectual, as well as moral condition. And as in the education of the individual, it is essential to cultivate and to train each separate faculty and endowment, to store the memory, exercise the judgment, cultivate the taste, and subdue the appetites and passions; and for the attainment of which very different and even opposite appliances are resorted to: so in the civilization of a state, it is no less necessary that all the different ranks and societies of men within its territory should alike be brought under the influence of civilization, however varying one from another; and which can be effected only by the application of each and all of the several Elements of civilization here set forth.

It is in this place, however, important to define with clearness and certainty what is intended by the End of Civilization, more especially as distinguished

both from its Essence and its Elements, with the former of which, at least, it is apt by some persons to be confounded. Thus, they consider what civilization is, and what is its real nature, which constitute its Essence ; and not what it actually accomplishes, which alone constitutes its End. The one is the agent employed, the other the act itself which is performed. As well, indeed, might we confound the vigour of our frames acquired by food, with the food itself, as the End with the Essence of civilization. By the End of Civilization, is here therefore meant those active, powerful, and substantial effects which civilization produces in the condition of a people, alike material, mental, and moral, being the ultimate object, moreover, which was sought to be attained by the application of the principle ; just in the same way as the production of a picture is the end of painting, the erection of an edifice the end of building, or the cure of a diseased person the end of giving him medicine. In each of these cases, the application and the means used, are clearly distinguishable from the end at which we aim.

As civilization is in many respects to a nation, precisely what education is to a man ; so the main End of Civilization is the entire development of the energies and resources of the nation, and the advancing it to that state where all those energies and resources will be fully matured, and which must, doubt-



less, be its most perfect, if not, indeed, its most natural condition also, being that which it was both adapted and intended ultimately to attain. The End of Civilization is therefore, in reality, no less than the perfection of the state, considering this in its largest, most extensive, and most complete sense, as that wherein all its most valuable qualities and properties will attain their amplest development. To this consummation, moreover, each of the Elements of civilization alike directly tend. And as civilization consists as regards its Essence, in rendering the higher endowments predominant over those which are lower; so, as regards its End, this is fully attained only when all the most valuable resources and powers of the nation are completely matured and brought to perfection.

The End of Civilization, and the final object which it aims at effecting, may therefore be concluded to be as follows:—In the case of the individual, its result is to perfect and to develope to the full all his higher faculties and powers, and to subject to them the lower propensities and endowments. In the case of the state, its result is to exalt those influences in the community which are the highest and purest over those which are inferior and debasing; to develope to the full the resources of the nation, both natural and artificial; and to adapt the people in all respects for advan-

tageously and completely availing themselves of these resources. On the other hand, every care should be taken to avoid the introduction and enervating effects of luxury ; which, instead of being, as some appear to suppose, the perfection of civilization, constitutes in reality its corruption and decay, being in fact the consequence of the subjugation of the higher influences to those which are inferior.

The End of Civilization is, in fact, analogous to the aim and object of Art in relation to Nature ; the result of the application of which should not be to thwart the due progress, or divert the legitimate course of Nature, but to restore the latter to its proper channel, and to clear away those obstructions which prevent the regular flow of the current. By the influence of civilization, Nature, so far from being checked or restrained, is only aided and invigorated, and enabled to attain its most perfect condition. Consequently we may conclude that the End of Civilization, and that state of it which is most mature, consists in and results from having all the different Elements of it completely developed, and completely blended together. When this is efficiently accomplished, then, and then only, will civilization in its perfect form ensue.

If, however, the promotion of civilization, which is to be effected mainly by the extension and application of the several Elements of it already ex-

amined, be a matter of such importance and benefit to the nation, as from a consideration of its End appears to be the case ; it is surely deserving of being made an object of national support. Instead of now waging war, as in ruder times, against our Continental neighbours, we should unite with them to wage war against ignorance and crime ; and our national expenditure, and our national energies, should be devoted to the arts of peace, and the progress of civilization. Indeed, another great End of Civilization, is the union which it directly and powerfully tends to effect among all the tribes of the human race,—a union of intelligence, a union of interest, and a union of moral sentiment. As superstition vanishes, truth and virtue must necessarily triumph, and must then each aim at the same purposes ; and as barbarism is exterminated, every member of the human race is led to desire and to promote the happiness of the other, and of the whole community.

The three main practical objects that are ever aimed at, which are fully capable of being attained by civilization, and which may be resolved into the ultimate design or End of it already specified, are the promotion of the virtue, the promotion of the happiness, and the promotion of the security of a nation. Virtue is promoted by the inculcation of correct principles, and the discouragement of vice. Happiness, by raising and improving the general condition of the people, and enlarging their capa-



cities for exertion, and their means of enjoyment. Their security is increased by civilization, because they are thereby freed from the dangers of superstition and error which mislead an ignorant people, and are rendered as a body more vigorous, capable of greater undertakings, and of cordially and efficiently co-operating together.

The happiness of societies and of nations, closely corresponds with, and is produced by causes nearly analogous to those which occasion the happiness of individuals. In the case of each, it is their natural condition, and health is consequently essential to its extensive possession. And as civilization is the highest natural condition of society and of nations, so civilization must necessarily be conducive to their happiness.

It appears, nevertheless, to be incorrect to assert that "the happiness of individuals is the great end of civil society."\* This end is not the happiness, but the welfare of the members of such a society; although, doubtless, the promotion of their welfare does more than anything else to secure their happiness also. And both the welfare and the happiness of nations are extensively advanced by their civilization. Moreover, forms of government do not of themselves produce the happiness of nations, though doubtless they may be largely conducive thereto, according as they are suitable and

\* Ferguson's 'History of Civil Society,' p. 95.

conformable to the character, and circumstances, and condition of such nations; just as a particular occupation may, according to the same principles, contribute to the happiness of an individual. Civilization in the one, and intellectual endowments and cultivation in the other, will be found far more powerful than any form of government for this end.

One particular negative result of civilization deserves here to be especially noticed, and which may appear to be quite different to what might have been calculated upon; and that is that the attainment of civilization, however refining and purifying it is to the mind, does not tend in its turn to enervate or weaken the powers of the body. On the contrary, as was observed indeed in Element X,\* by increasing the resources of the mind, it adds greatly also to the physical power at our disposal. Moreover, by subjecting the body to the mind, it enables us to resist groundless fear. Hence civilized soldiers are far less liable to terror than are savage troops. Luxury, indeed, enervates; but this, as has been already shown, is but the decay of civilization, and enervation is ever a proof, not of civilization but of luxury.

Moreover, with the progress of society, of that of discovery, of science, and of civilization generally, many material changes in our social and general

\* *Vide ante*, p. 383.

condition have been effected, which must in their turn occasion moral changes equally great; while great moral changes have been made, which are calculated to produce material results quite as extensive. The two, indeed, must ever reciprocally act upon each other; and it is seldom or never that either can operate quite independent and alone.

It is important, however, for the full and complete development of civilization, not only that each of the foregoing Elements should be availed of, but that they should be all of them brought into operation together. Like the senses in an individual, they severally aid the other in their course of action, and the loss or incapacity of any one of them deranges the entire system. As in a university, or in a school, the different teachers and classes in their several departments, although inculcating distinct and even opposite pursuits and studies, nevertheless each together contribute to the general progress of education; so in a state should the different institutions and other Elements of civilization here adverted to, alike and altogether contribute to the general civilization of the nation. The loss or want of either, causes a defect in the system; and there is not one but what conduces essentially to the efficiency of the other, and to the perfect operation of the whole.

The complete accomplishment of civilization is indeed mainly dependent upon, and principally ef-



fectured by this union and co-operation of its different Elements, each one of them regulating and correcting the action of the others. Not only, moreover, should they each be availed of in the same country, but the same individuals should also be induced to cultivate them all. By this means, not merely is civilization promoted and completed, but luxury, which is the decay of civilization, is prevented and averted. Hence, therefore, it is alone by this conjunction of the several Elements of civilization, that its real End can be efficiently attained.

And as the civilization of each particular nation is completely effected only through the application and joint co-operation of all these different Elements of it together; so in a corresponding manner, the entire civilization of the world will be effected only by the co-operation of a number of civilized nations, each, it may be, differing widely in character, and condition, and pursuits, but which circumstance is of itself of extensive importance when they are united, and they thus obtain mutual intercourse through this union,—of itself an essential Element of civilization.

Another point of great importance, is the precise manner in, and the actual extent to which the different Elements of civilization act upon and influence one another, and that in various modes. This is observable at once as regards Education and Religious Influence. Education of each kind should

moreover, be followed by every individual, as well as adopted in every system. Art, too, both acts upon and influences alike Education and Religion, as it is also acted upon and influenced by them. Upon Religion the effect of Art is as powerful, as is that of Religion upon Art. Art, moreover, aids commerce in various ways. Upon Education the influence of Art is necessarily very extensive as regards its effect in refining and ennobling the mind, and with respect to the facilities that it affords for supplying ideas of many subjects which could not without its aid be clearly communicated by books. Art also in many cases aids Science, as Science, in its turn does in a variety of instances the carrying on of Art. Nor is the reciprocal mutual effect upon each other of the different Elements of civilization less real and powerful, although it may be less obvious. Thus, the Press corrects the regulation of our National Institutions. Moral Jurisprudence supplies principles for the governance of both. And the influence of Internal Communication and of International Intercourse, alike contributes to enlighten our views, and to enlarge our notions with regard to these matters. Civilization, indeed, binds both nations and mankind together, especially the great men of various nations, by facilitating the means of Intercourse, and by increasing those objects for securing which Intercourse is maintained, and which render it most desirable and indeed essential.

Contemporaneously, too, with the introduction of a system of Education into any country, National Institutions should be established to provide for its practical application, and for the cultivation of the powers that it unfolds. Art and Science must also be duly diffused, in order to furnish the expanding mind, and to direct its resources to useful purposes. It is one End, and an important result of civilization, not only to perfect Art, but to promote the cultivation, contemporaneously therewith, of other pursuits of a more invigorating nature, which prevent it from becoming in its influence too refining and effeminating, which it is apt to be when followed by itself alone; while, on the other hand, it is really more advantageous for itself as well as for the nation in which it is established, and is more invigorating for both, that other studies, even though they be of an opposite nature, be adopted in conjunction with it. Liberty of free discussion being allowed to all, abuses would be prevented, and knowledge spread through every portion of the empire. Religious Influence is, moreover, much extended by the security of liberty of conscience and free Toleration. Opportunities at once for needful recreation and mental cultivation should be afforded by the Commemorations and Festivals which occur at stated intervals. Merit and talent in each department should be encouraged by the Honours and Rewards conferred by the state; and the highest



moral ends made the first object of law. Through every portion of the nation, intelligence should be rapidly diffused. And foreign nations, no less than our own, may be made to contribute to our general advancement in civilization.

If, on the other hand, we proceed to regard each of these different Elements of civilization as independent of the other, and to treat them accordingly ; we should be acting like a person who, for different diseases of the body, applied various remedies to each limb, which counteracted the effect of one another, instead of considering the good of the whole frame, and adopting a method by which the disease might be eradicated altogether. As in the system of the human body, so is it also in the system of a nation, that the sympathy is so strong between the several parts, that whatever affects one member of it, affects every portion. The development of each faculty and disposition in an individual, and of each Element of civilization in a nation, depends greatly on their being properly and efficiently called forth. It is the duty alike of the parent in the case of the individual, and of the government in that of the nation, to provide duly for this development, and not to leave so important a measure to mere chance.

From the due application, however, of each of the various Elements of civilization here enumerated, the most extensive and important results

may not only be anticipated, but securely relied upon. We have, moreover, the example of nations of old to illustrate the effects of civilization generally; and to evince also those produced by their decline in civilization.

A striking instance is afforded of the result of a feeling of national honour among a people, by the extent and force of that sentiment among the citizens of ancient Rome, and the reverence with which they regarded those religious obligations under which they had placed themselves. Such, indeed, we are told, was the influence of an oath, that nothing bound them more strongly to the laws; that they often did more for the observance of an oath, than they would have done for the thirst of glory, or for the good of their country. Such, too, among them was the feeling of honour, that the disgrace of being accounted dishonourable was a severer punishment than the most rigid penal infliction that could be imposed. But as human nature is still the same, might not we also hope to establish an equally exalted and pure tone of moral sentiment among the people of this country, who are moreover guided by a religion incomparably more sublime and pure than that of Rome? Instances, indeed, have been witnessed in this nation of a corresponding nature with those recorded among the Romans; and as the several Elements of civilization are duly availed

of and co-operate together, will the result of the whole be equally influential and extensive.

The principal and leading practical results of civilization, may be said to be threefold, corresponding with the nature of its general effects, being mental, moral, and manual. It improves the character of the national mind; it raises the tone of the national morals; and it contributes to the development of the national resources and materials. Upon individuals in the nation, it produces also effects corresponding with those produced on the nation at large. Its results may be also considered in a twofold view:—1. As regards the remedies to be effected. 2. As regards the improvements to be made.

I. The mental results, as regards the remedies to be effected by the extension of civilization, are the banishment of error and superstition, which lead to many moral delinquencies, to crimes and misdemeanours of several kinds, both national and individual. Most of the errors committed, both in the common practice of life, and in the conduct of states, by which extensive evils are entailed on each, will be corrected by this means. Nor less in the due application of the national resources, or in the private economical arrangement of individuals, will this conduce to the removal of abuses and mismanagement of various descriptions.

Nations, like individuals, are, as has already been



observed, subject to many diseases; and in both, moral as well physical diseases are the cause of great misery and evil. Diseases in states, of a moral kind, are such as concern especially its advancement in civilization. Both in men and in states, diseases originate in some disorganization or derangement of the system, and are occasioned as much by deficiencies as by positive acts. Moreover, both in men and in states, diseases change at different periods, assuming new forms and varieties, one disease disappearing, and its place being supplied by another; such changes originating, however, not in the diseases themselves, but in a certain transformation in the condition of the being who is subject to them, and not unfrequently the cure of one disease operating as the producing cause of another.

The diseases which affect states as regards their civilization, arise mainly from some defect in connection with the foregoing Elements, either with respect to their existence, their development, or their imperfect operation; and which fully, in each case, admit of the application of their appropriate remedy.

II. The mental improvements that would be effected by the extension of civilization throughout the nation, are as follows:—Each individual in the state becomes a more exalted, because a more cultivated being; and that state, which is constituted

of individuals, becomes, in a corresponding degree, more enlightened and advances equally in refinement and intelligence. The moral improvements that would result, are no less extensive: and as in the individual, the lower impulses are subdued by cultivation, and those which are higher are rendered paramount; so in a nation, by civilization its lower influences are decreased and subjugated to those of a more exalted nature, which now gain the ascendancy. And as in an individual, his manual dexterity and professional resources, and means of benefiting himself, are largely increased by cultivation; so in a state, its national resources, and powers, and real strength, are alone fully developed by civilization.

The ideal of a perfect state, as regards its attainment of a condition of complete civilization, can only be arrived at from the consideration of what a state would be when, according to the theory already enunciated, these threefold grand results ensue: its highest interests entirely predominate, its lower influences are efficiently subdued, and its whole resources are completely developed. Here, however, it is to be observed, as has indeed already been pointed out, that, although these highest interests ought to predominate, they ought not to rule uncontrolled; and though the lower impulses are to be subdued, they are to be by no means extinguished; but their legitimate exercise is still essential in a

state, in a manner corresponding with that in which the influence of the animal appetites and passions, duly regulated and subdued, is available in the economy of the human frame. The resources, too, of the nation, do not necessarily demand to be ever in full operation, but need only to be developed so as to be ready for action when required.

In a completely civilized state, each of the foregoing Elements of civilization will not only be duly developed, but each contemporaneously, and each will co-operate with the other. Thus, the people will be generally and systematically Educated, not only as regards storing their minds with knowledge, but by the inculcation of right principles, the extirpation of error, and the adapting them for the respective callings they are required to pursue. Each of the different National Institutions in the country, will be properly availed of, and highly prized by its citizens of all ranks. The Arts and Sciences will be generally understood, and not only cultivated by, but in their turn will cultivate and influence those of every class. As the Arts and the different Institutions for their encouragement, and for the promotion of learning, become better appreciated by the people generally ; will they not only be more liberally supported by them, but their influence on the national mind will be also correspondingly more extensive. Their neglect is in ordinary cases owing to their real nature not being perceived, or to their



value not being duly estimated. The influence of the Press is of great utility to correct this defect, and to instruct the people in the use and application of their various public Institutions.

Another important result of civilization, arises from its influence upon the general habits and manners of a people. It might perhaps be urged that manners of themselves constitute an independent Element of civilization. On the whole, however, it appears that, in reality, they do not of themselves conduce to it, but merely spring from it. They are rather an evidence than a cause of civilization, serving more to reflect what is already existent, than to produce anything new. Manners, indeed, are a consequence of refinement of mind, which results from civilization generally; though at the same time extensive refinement of manners is quite consistent with a very low condition of civilization; and a very low condition of civilization is quite consistent with extensive refinement of manners. The extension of Education, and the maintenance of Degrees of Honour and Rank in a state, are both conducive to refinement of manners, although they no more necessarily produce this, than refinement of manners tends directly to extend Education, or to the establishment of Degrees of Honour and Rank. Refinement of manners in any people must, however, on the whole, be regarded both as a decided proof of, and as the direct result of civilization.

Not only, however, a refinement of manners, which is an external proof and result of civilization, but a higher tone of morals, which is in its nature internal, is at once produced by the general advancement of civilization, and to which each of its Elements will more or less either directly or indirectly contribute. This will also extend itself to, and be exhibited alike in the tone and spirit of our laws and customs, in the various usages of society, and in the sentiment of our literature.

That “nations are not primarily ruled by laws,”\* is a maxim of the highest importance, to be ever kept in view. There are, indeed, as already observed,† moral causes, especially those connected with and springing out of the civilization of a country, which are in their effect and result far more extensive and more powerful than any laws can ever be. Moreover, laws are in general rather prohibitory and restrictive, than calculated to induce people to any particular course of action; to which however they are urged on by moral causes. And in order to ensure the enactment of wise and salutary laws, a corresponding spirit must animate not only the rulers of the nation who propound these laws, but the body of the people whom they are to direct. It may also be observed that a vast proportion of the actual laws which are established in any state, both with regard to the general govern-

\* Burke.

† *Ante*, Element VIII., p. 330.

ment of a country and the regulation of the conduct of the people, are really unknown to the great bulk of the population, who have neither the ability nor the opportunity to make them the subject of study. They are consequently guided in the main by their own sense of propriety, rather than by any arbitrary legislative rule. Hence, not laws, but some more immediate and powerful influence, is what controls and urges on the conduct of the nation in general. Civilization must, therefore, be far more important to any country than legislation, however fully the latter may be adapted for its purpose; and the more complete and extensive is the former, the better calculated it is to supersede the latter.

Civilization, moreover, not only to a large extent supersedes the action of law, but it qualifies men for self-guidance, so as not to require to be so strictly bound by legislative provisions as those whose conduct is not regulated by higher principles. Hence, another great boon which the complete establishment of civilization would serve to confer, is that thereby men are not merely fitted for the possession and the enjoyment of perfect civil liberty, but that alone by this means are they fully adapted to use it aright.

Civilization further contributes to qualify mankind for civil liberty, by the habits of order and self-discipline which it is the means of establishing



among all classes, through which, instead of needing laws to regulate them, they learn on every occasion how to govern themselves. Having from their youth been trained up under proper restraint, the exercise of obedience and self-control becomes engrafted on their very nature, and they are thus enabled thoroughly to appreciate the value of such a course of conduct.

Not, only, however, by civilization are the people led to revere the laws, but they are induced also to render their assistance to the government on all occasions of emergency, from possessing a due perception of the principles on which it is carried on, and from being persuaded of the propriety and necessity of affording it their support. Confidence in one another is then established among all classes, they duly estimate each other's position, and from motives both of duty and interest are ever ready to aid one another. Those of different ranks are thus drawn nearer together, and both the claims and the grievances of all are fully understood. Hence are they not merely each individually superior in point of wisdom and capacity, but they will each be disposed to co-operate together when occasion requires it, either for the good of themselves, or of their common country. Both in peace and in war, a nation so circumstanced has in itself the surest elements of prosperity and of real greatness. And indeed, the grand and very extensive advantages that a state

derives from civilization, are obvious in the history of the rise and progress of every important nation, whose real power, and glory, and wealth, and happiness, and well-being, have not only been contemporaneous with, but closely connected with, and absolutely dependent upon its civilization.

It was the dying injunction of Henry the Fourth of England to his son Prince Henry, afterwards Henry the Fifth, not to allow the people to remain long in peace, which was apt to breed intestine commotions; but to engage them in war, by which all the restless spirits might find occupation and diversion. In a civilized state of society, and in the present enlightened age, the energies of the people should be devoted not to war and bloodshed, but to habits of industry, and to peaceful though not less active pursuits. The conquests of science should take the place of those of arms. Against ignorance and error should our forces be wielded. And our grand design, both as a nation and as individuals, should be to effect, not the destruction, but the general welfare of all mankind.

Not only, however, will the accomplishment of civilization be followed by grand results such as are here described; but its advancement will be also marked by certain outward symbols or manifestations, which serve to testify to the reality of its establishment. As it is impossible that there should be much fire existent without the exhibition of

some flame ; so if civilization in any country has made considerable progress, its results will doubtless be openly shown, and which are in most cases quite as obvious as they are important. The most prominent of the signs of civilization, are necessarily those which are in their nature material, such as the taste in erecting the cities and buildings of a nation, the costume of the inhabitants, and their mode of travelling. Next to these, the general intellectual capacity and cultivation displayed by the people will strike the observer, which though not so immediately perceptible, are not less surely indicated than the other. A corresponding refinement will also be exhibited in the habits, and manners, and customs, and feelings of the population generally. Superior skill will, moreover, be shown in all their active efforts, whether domestic, industrial, or martial. Civilization, indeed, while in some respects it softens and enervates the material frame, confers power on the whole being, by invigorating and developing the faculties of the mind. While it refines the man, it also gives him resolution. With wisdom he acquires strength. And although his muscular power may be less, his martial appliances are considerably increased. Thus, though the physical frame of a civilized person is much more easily fatigued than is the frame of a barbarian ; yet the former, through the aid of his mental resources, is able to effect far more with the



same amount of exertion than he could otherwise accomplish. And while the one can deal with matter more vigorously, the other is able to subject matter to his control.

Nor are the direct material and physical advantages derived by each country from civilization, less extensive, less obvious, or less important in their way than those which are mental and moral. Not only are the people then better fitted to avail themselves of the natural resources of the country, but these resources themselves are very extensively increased by the appliances of civilization. By the additional facilities for locomotion, persons are enabled to travel about with less danger and labour; and it is through the means which civilization supplies, that mankind are adapted to endure all the varieties of climate and temperature which different portions of the globe present, but which animals, who have no such aid from civilization, are frequently unable to withstand. As regards also food, civilization enables man both to improve its general quality, and to render much of it good and wholesome which without such resorts would be noxious and unpalatable.

There is, nevertheless, this important attendant circumstance connected with the progress of civilization, that although civilization supplies either directly or indirectly nearly every want which a state can experience; yet, on the other hand, nu-

merous new and urgent wants are ceaselessly created by civilization, and which, moreover, imperatively demand to be supplied. If a condition of barbarism can boast of but few of the conveniences of life, it is but justice to it to say that it not only requires but few, but that it could not very well avail itself of more than it actually possesses. The exact opposite, however, is the case with civilization; and the exigency so occasioned by it has an extensive and very valuable result in the strong stimulus which it excites and keeps up constantly, to further progress in civilization, in order to meet the necessity thus created, whereby alternately the want and the supply sustain each other, and each alike contribute to urge on the course of civilization.

A comparison was made while discussing the Nature and Essence of Civilization, between man as an individual, and nations which are but made up of men. In nothing, however, is the resemblance more striking, than in the results which are produced by civilization upon each, developing their powers, calling forth their energies, and directing aright their exertions. How different is the condition of any particular individual, whether on the one hand he lives and dies an uncultivated hind or a rude savage, all his mental faculties dull and imperfect through neglect and want of training; or whether he receives a regular and correct education, by which his capacities are duly cultivated and

sharpened, and his habits properly trained. But great as is the difference produced by this variety of their treatment alone, in the savage and the educated man, the difference between a rude and an uncivilized nation is not less extensive; and, indeed, in their relative position they closely resemble each other. To a certain extent, although Education is essentially different from civilization, and far less influential; civilization is to a nation what Education is to an individual. Nor can it be doubted that the individual who obtains a high degree of Education, is sure to obtain civilization therewith, by resorting to the other Elements of civilization, provided that they are placed within his reach, (the procuring which is the main object aimed at in this Treatise,) and to which he is at once instinctively stimulated by the desire for self-improvement which his Education generates. And the civilization of a nation necessarily includes the Education of the people, which is rather an essential part of it, than something that is occasioned or promoted by it, although in reality the one both furthers and aids the other.

But it may be said that civilization, together with the many benefits which it undoubtedly confers both on men and nations, brings also in its career a long train of evils of a very serious kind; and that in reality a large proportion of the vices, and diseases, and distresses which oppress mankind, are



not only the products of civilization, but never would have existed in an uncivilized state of society : that savages are as much strangers to many diseases and crimes, as also to pecuniary embarrassment, as they are to philosophical research, literary occupation, or artistical employment.

Admitting it to be the truth that the evils alluded to exist alone, and to the full, in a state of civilization ; yet, on the other hand, it cannot be denied that they are not only no necessary part of its perfection, but are absolute defects in the system ; that they are in reality signs not of its completion, but of its corruption, springing in many cases out of that luxury which has been already observed to be the surest cause of the decay of civilization, although many persons have very erroneously regarded it as one of the certain proofs of civilization having reached its climax. True it is that these vices and diseases can thrive only in a civilized condition ; but the main reason of this is, not that a barbarous state of society is more inherently virtuous than the latter, but because in such a case the soil is too barren to produce any vegetation at all. Weeds are ever more apt to spring up in rich than in sterile ground. But this is surely no solid reason why the earth should not be cultivated. It is a reason, however, why that cultivation should be carried out to the full, by means of which the weeds will be exterminated, and the genuine plant only fostered. So also

as regards the progress of civilization, although vices as well as virtues will be necessarily nurtured during its progress, and will receive that encouragement which in a barbarous state of society they could never have obtained ; yet, when civilization is perfectly established, these vices, like weeds, will be thoroughly rooted out, and its legitimate products only obtain encouragement and patronage.

If among all the mighty empires of the world, concerning whose rise, and splendour, and decay, history records, no one example has ever yet been found of a nation in which civilization may be said to have reached absolute perfection, so as practically to illustrate the End which civilization should effect ; this is surely no proof that such a condition is incapable of attainment. If the principles here maintained as to the Elements necessary to ensure the completion of civilization, be correct, the proper means for ensuring its accomplishment have been as yet unresorted to. But probably even among mankind, no one absolute model of excellence has ever yet been seen, either as regards his natural endowments, mental or moral, or the degree of cultivation to which these have been brought. By how much less, therefore, is this perfection to be looked for in the state, where so many counteracting influences must always exist, in the various feelings and dispositions of its members. The truth of a principle is not impugned by the fact that it has

never been carried out to the full. Nay more than this, the omission so to carry it out, may be mainly owing to the difficulty occasioned by the high and sublime standard of excellence at which it aims.

Indeed, the highest and most perfect condition of civilization, and that both as regards communities and individuals, will be attained only in eternity, when the soul will be disengaged from the debasing influence of the carnal body, and united to one of a spiritual and intellectual nature; and the state of society will be such that all the various obstacles which now militate against civilization, will be removed, and those influences only which conduce to its advancement and completion will be extended and invigorated.

So little has as yet really been attempted towards the accomplishment of a complete system of civilization in any one country, and there is so much which is capable of being practically carried out here; that the highest hopes may be entertained for the result when the experiment shall have received a full and fair trial, corresponding with the importance of the subject. Indeed, the effects that have been produced, both in our own country and in other nations, from the partial efforts to diffuse civilization, afford of themselves ample and practical proof of what may be done by well-directed measures in this great cause; and serve to evince that the anticipations here put forth are not founded merely



on conjecture, but, on the contrary, well-tryed experience assures us fully of their truth. And in examining into the various causes of the greatness and glory of the most distinguished nations of old, we cannot but unhesitatingly attribute the main portion of that grandeur to their advancement in civilization.

Singular it is, nevertheless, that in those Elements of civilization in which certain of the ancients mainly excelled, we have been especially deficient; while in turn we have far surpassed them in others. They were as superior to us in Art and some branches of literature, as we are superior to them in Science, in jurisprudence, and in all the means of carrying on Intercourse, both International and Internal. If the Elements of civilization availed of in both periods could be combined in one nation, civilization might at once be perfectly accomplished. And, surely, if these Elements have been proved, either singly or united, to be actually capable of practical application, and of such extensive influence, they may be so availed of again. It must, therefore, be admitted that those great nations in several respects considerably exceeded us in their approaches to that land of promise, though in other respects we have far distanced them in our advancement in the same direction. As a land of promise, however, only, it still remains, whose shores have never yet been reached by the most skilful or

adventurous navigator on that vast and illimitable ocean; and on whose coasts may not only mighty discoveries be unfolded, but the most delicious and precious fruits may eventually be gathered.

Those blissful shores which they in vain attempted to gain, we are now in full prospect of attaining, although hitherto we have been hindered through the want of proper charts and pilots from arriving there. But the majestic peaks and most prominent heights of that glorious land are at length discernible, of which the eye can trace the grand outline; and from thence to us have been borne some of the rich fruits which it so abundantly yields. We have full assurance, ere long, of seeing the stately trees and luxuriant vegetation which those fruits adorned, reared in this country, and made the natural products of British soil.





## INDEX.

- "Able-men," proposed order of, 269.  
 Absolute government, (see Governments, and Monarchies.)  
 Abuse, no argument for disuse, 166.  
 Accent, 37.  
 Accomplishments, *Pref.* xv.  
 Achievements of the ancients, 45.  
 Activity, over, dangers from, 350, 357.  
 Acts of Parliament, (see Parliament.)  
 Addison, sacred poetry of, 180.  
 'Advancement of Learning,' the, 152.  
 Africa, unfavourably situated for civilization, 24.  
 Air, the, communication by, 339, 340.  
 Alfred the Great, 242, 293.  
 Aliment, mental and moral, (see Food.)  
 Alliances, international, 387.  
 America, people of, 37.  
 Amusements for the people, 76, 158, 231, 236, 237; necessity for, 236, 238, 243; adaptation and regulation of, 244, 247, 249, 253; pernicious, 249, 252; duty of the state in regard to, 254; by excursions, 255.  
 Analogy, between men and states, 3, 6, 336.  
 Anarchy, 290.  
 Anarchy, periods of, 9.  
 Ancients, vast achievements of the, 45.  
 Anglo-Saxon era, dignities during the, 264.  
 Animals, changes in character of, illustrative of changes in national character, 36.  
 Animals, independent and incapable of civilization, 3, 333, 420.  
 Animosities, national, discouragement of, 240; between sects and parties, 240.  
 Anniversaries, (see Commemorations.)  
 Appointments, ecclesiastical, proposed veto on, 140.  
 Architecture, 171.  
 Aristocracy, influence of an, 260, 297, 298.  
 Aristotle, 44.  
 Aristotle, 'Politics' of, 3, 11, 52, 56, 92, 176, 265, 294, 305, 317, 364.  
 Arms should be superseded by conventions, 374.  
 Arnold, Rev. Dr., 47.  
 Art, influence of in civilization, 101, 169, 170, 171.  
 Art in Greece, 14; in Egypt, 14.  
 Art, pictorial, advantages of an acquaintance with, 175, 176.  
 Art, popular, 192.  
 Art, progress of, 43.  
 Art and Science, national cultivation of, 169, 375; their influence, national and individual, 170, 406; classification of pursuits, 171; refining influence of, 174; aid of, to religion, 174; pictorial art, 175; music, 176; poetry, national and devotional, 177; monuments,

- 180; national edifices, 189; national disfigurements, 190; ornamental gardening, 191; provision for support of the arts, 192; popular cultivation of art, 193; music, 193; decay of the arts, 194; reciprocal influence of art and science, 195; encouragement for achievements in, 266, 267; influence of intercourse upon, 359.
- Articles of the church, efficiency of the, 130.
- Artificial dignities, (see Dignities, civil.)
- Asia, early civilization of, 22.
- Aspersions on the stage, unjust, 165.
- Assemblies, representative, framing of, 295, 296.
- Athenian intellect, the, 28.
- Athens, 315; poverty of, 52, 55; theatre of, 202.
- Atonement for crime, what constitutes, 309.
- Attack, martial, the science of, 381.
- Attica, climate of, 28.
- Authors, claim of, to state patronage, 275.
- Avarice, 53.
- Bacon, Lord, 152, 182, 242, 272.
- Balance of interests, 347, 348, 350.
- Balance of parties, 205.
- Balance of power, preservation of, 374, 385.
- Balloons, communication by, 340.
- Barbarism, communicability of, 332, 394.
- Barbarous age, honours suited to a, 259, 265; treatment of women in a, 305.
- Barbarous times, advantages of, 423.
- Barriers, national, 362; maintenance of, 384.
- Baxter, Richard, 133.
- Benefits, international and universal, what are, 365.
- Benevolence, Christianity promotes, 103.
- Bible, (see Scripture,) favourable to Civilization, 48, 100.
- Birthdays, royal, commemoration of, 242.
- Bishops, proposed veto on appointment of, 140.
- Boundaries, national, 362; maintenance of, 384.
- Britain, geographical position of, 22, 23, 24.
- Britons, the ancient, 29, 32.
- Buckle's 'History of Civilization,' 60.
- Buildings, (see Edifices.)
- Burghley, Lord, 182.
- Burke, Edmund, 182, 415.
- Burns, sacred poetry of, 180.
- Canals, communication by, 339, 340.
- Causes, moral, (see Moral Causes,) 415.
- Ceremony in religious services, value of, 111.
- Changes, in men and states, 11.
- Changes in national character, (see Character, national.)
- Change in national religion, effect of, 227, 328.
- Changes, jurisprudential, 327; mode of effecting, 328.
- Changes, resulting from civilization, 404.
- Character, influence of education on, 72.
- Character, national, 30, 31, 32; and national laws, 302; on what dependent, 34; changes in, 35, 387, 410; influence of intercourse upon, 361; regard to, in forming alliances, 386; improved by civilization, 410.
- Character of the press, 209.
- Chaucer, Geoffrey, 182.
- Childhood, in men and states, 6, 7.
- Children, education of, 92.
- Chinese, the, 47, 172.
- Chivalry, 308; influence of, 48.
- Chivalry, courts of, 308.
- Christianity, its influence on civilization, 47, 97, 98, 99, 101, 102, 103, 233.
- Christianity owes much to freedom of discussion, 210.
- Christianity, universal peace, the fruit of, 388.
- Church, the, 47, 83, 126, 127, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 136, 137, 140, 141, 204.
- Church of England, tolerant spirit of the, 222, 223; intolerance of some of its members, 223.

- Church, a true, intolerance no test of, 221.
- Church, proposal for extending basis of the, 133, 136.
- Church establishments, 125, 126.
- Church celebrations, 239.
- Church, liturgy of, proposal for revision of, 137.
- Churchmanship, proposal for new criterion of, 133.
- Church revenues, misappropriation of, 135; redistribution of, 140.
- Citadels, national and natural, 385.
- Civic offices, honours suited for, 268.
- Cities, great, recreations for people in, 254.
- Civilization, the influence produced by, 3, 4; origin of, 12, 14; the natural condition of man, 4, 16, 17; essence of, 17, 18; requisites to, 18; diffusion of, 19; division as regards the several kinds of, 20; elementary principles of, 21; ancient and modern, 40; decay of, 49, 400; to be ranked as a science, 56; duty of the State in promoting, 58; constituents of, 59; elements of, 59; education and, 62, 63, 64, 398, 422; knowledge the keystone of, 63; Christianity, highly favourable to, 93; religious influence different from civilization, 95; effects of Christianity upon, 97, 101, 102; promoted by certain institutions, 121, 125, 142; amusements greatly influence, 158; effect of art and science upon, 169, 173, 176, 177; of monuments, 181, 183; of music, 193; of liberty of the press and toleration, 196; of commemorations and festivals, 231, 232, 245; of dignities and honorary rewards, 258, 259, 260; influence of moral jurisprudence upon, 283; of liberty upon, 299. its influence upon crime, 306, 307; crimes, directly affecting, 308; moral effect of punishments in regard to, 314; crime directly inimical to, 316; promoted by intercourse, general, internal, and international, 331, 332, 361, 392, 393; and promotes this intercourse, 331, 332, 335, 358; its influence on societies, 335; influence of postal communication upon, 343; intercourse a great stimulant to, 360; severance of natural barriers, 362; influence of commerce upon, 366; early, of this country, 367, 368; influence of war upon, 373, 375, 376, 377; its influence upon war, 379; in subduing animosities, 382; confers strength, 383; promotes peace, 383; peace, promotes, 388; of the world, 394, 405.
- Civilization, the End of, 395; definition of, 398, 399, 400; threefold objects of civilization, 401; threefold results of, 410; remedies, 410; improvements resulting from, 411; ideal of a completely civilized state, 412, 413; manners and habits of the people, 414; morals, 415; law superseded by, 416; men qualified for civil liberty by, 416; national greatness, 418; symbols of civilization, 419; stimulus to progression, 420; no example of a completely civilized state, 424; in eternity alone will exist, 425; anticipations for the future, 427.
- Civilization, evils attendant on, 422.
- Civilization, incomplete conditions of, 396.
- Civilization, symbols of, 418.
- Classification of pursuits, 171.
- Clergy, guidance by, 227.
- Clergy, veto of on ecclesiastical appointments, 140.
- Clerical labour, division of, recommended, 139.
- Climate, influence of, 27, 28.
- Climate, varieties of, man able to endure, 420.
- Cost, extent of, as influencing civilization, 25.
- Codes, criminal moral, 307.
- Coercion, inefficiency of, 214, 215.
- Coleridge, 'Constitution of Church and State,' by, 23.
- Colonies, 104, 350, 351, 368; establishment of, 351; use of, 352; communication with, 350, 352, 354; protection of, 353.
- Colonial possessions, influence of, on civilization, 24.
- Commemorations, national, 231, 240;



- influence and effect of, 232; by the church, 239; commemorative anniversaries, 240; days to be appointed, 241; amusements to be provided on days of, 254.
- Commerce, its influence on civilization, 24, 172, 365, 366; international, 365.
- Commercial ranks, honours adapted for the, 268.
- Commonwealth, the, 237.
- Communication, internal, (see Internal communication.)
- Compass, influence of the invention of, 40, 42, 242.
- Concerts, popular, sacred, recommended, 177.
- Conduct, regulation of, 17.
- Conflicting influences, 8, 9.
- Congregating for religious worship, moral effect of, 128.
- Conscience, liberty of, 200, 212, 213, 216, 226, 227, 230.
- Continent, our proximity to the, 24, 25, 368, 369.
- Continents, why unfavourable to civilization, 24, 369, 370.
- Conventions, should supersede arms, 374, 377.
- Cook, Captain, 242.
- Co-operation of Elements, (see Elements.)
- Copyright, laws relating to, 326.
- Corrective effects, 70, 244, 247, 356.
- Corrective Elements, 129, 204, 356.
- Corruption, precaution against, 389.
- Costume, influence of, 172.
- Counteractive effects, 70, 124, 244, 247.
- Courage, encouragement of, 281.
- Covetousness, influence of, 53.
- Cowardice, punishment of, 319.
- Cowper, sacred poetry of, 180.
- Crime, 72.
- Crime, freedom from, 20, those most inimical to civilization, 20.
- Crime, influence of civilization upon, 306, 307, 308; influence of, upon civilization, 308, 316.
- Crimes, causes of, 317.
- Crimes, laws relating to, 286, 307, 316.
- Crimes, moral effect of particular, 307.
- Crimes, national, 390.
- Crimes, punishment corresponding with, 321.
- Dances, 33.
- Death, infliction of, 311, 312.
- Debt, national, influence of, 54, 341.
- Decay of states, 6, 7.
- Declamation, use of, 203.
- Decline of art, 194.
- Decline of civilization, 49, 50, 252, 306, 400.
- Defence, martial, the science of, 381.
- Degradation, infliction of, 311, 314, 315, 322, 323.
- Deity, perfection of the Government of, 292.
- Demosthenes, quotation from, 6.
- Design, art of, 176.
- Development, tendency of civilization to promote, 398.
- Diffusion of civilization, necessity of, 19.
- Dignities and honorary rewards, 256, 375; moral effect of, 259; object of, 260; at an early period of our history, 264; conferred as rewards for achievements in civilization, 264; suited to a civilized age, 265; mode of selecting and designation for, 267; distribution of minor honours, 268; proposal for new order of, 269; revival of extinct orders, 270; desirableness of rendering hereditary, 270; life peerages, 271; moral influence of dignities, 272; accompanied with pensions, 276; to men of middle rank, 281.
- Disabilities, civil, 286, 323.
- Discipline, breach of, punishment for, 319.
- Discoveries, aid of new, 195, 274.
- Discoveries, influence of, on civilization, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45.
- Discussion, free, purifying effect of, 210.
- Discussion, liberty of, 201, 205, 206, 207, 208, 210, 212.
- Diseases, national, 6, 7, 28, 411.
- Disfigurements, national, 191.
- Dishonesty, punishment of, 319.
- Dissent, causes of, 134.

- Dissenters, admission of, into the church, 133.
- Distinctions, civil, origin of, 256.
- Divines, monuments to, 184.
- Doddridge, Dr., 133.
- Dress, 28, 172.
- Drunkenness, punishment of, 319.
- Duelling, prevention of, 308.
- Duty of the state, in promoting civilization, 58, 82, 84.
- Duties, clerical, division of, 139.
- Ecclesiastical appointments, proposed veto on, 140.
- Edifices, religious, 112; national, 189; private, 189; art and science applicable to, 189; style of, general, 419.
- Education, 265, 286, 331, 332, 346, 375, 406; compulsory, *Pref.* xiv.; not the sole requirement of the age, *Pref.* ix.; only one of several aids to civilization, *ib.* x.; what it comprehends, *ib.* xiii.; of the people generally, 62; as compared with civilization, 62, 398; education and civilization, 63, 422; knowledge and education, 63; the keystone of civilization, 63; different kinds of, 64; mental 64; moral, 65; manual, 65; object of, 64, 65, 68; quality of, 66; principles of, 69; corrective effects of, 70; necessity of systematic principles in, 71, 397; crime and education, 72; education in after-life, 74; does not tend to lead the poor astray, 78; protects them against pernicious principles, 79; does not unfit them for their station, 80; brings different classes together, 82; national education a national duty, 82; state provisions and regulations for this purpose, 84; examinations, 86; ornamental, 88; education should continue through life, 89; Spartan system of, 90; stimulus to education, 91; education of children, 92; religious education, 93; threefold results of education, 94; only one Element in civilization, 94; stimulus to, 200; what it ought to effect, 222; of women, 305; necessity for a systematic plan of, 148.
- Electric telegraph, (see Telegraph.)
- Elementary principles of civilization, 21.
- Elements of civilization, co-operation of, *Pref.* xii., xiv., 68, 204, 232, 243, 331, 332, 334, 356, 360, 394, 397, 404, 405, 407, 408, 422, 426; classification of, 21; each should aid the other, 68; correct emuneration of, *Pref.* viii., 21, 395; experience of application of, 408.
- Emulation, excitement of, 91, 248.
- Encouragement of inventions and experiments, 185.
- Encouragement, national, to literature and art, 192.
- Enervation, civilization does not tend to, 17, 28, 49, 50, 252, 306, 400, 403, 419.
- England, proper foreign policy of, 368.
- English monarchy, establishment of the, 242.
- Engravings, popular issue of, proposed, 193.
- Epithets, use of, 39.
- Equality, natural and artificial, 256, 257.
- Error, banishment of, 210, 410.
- Errors, education corrective of, 70.
- Essence of a state, a representative assembly should contain, 226.
- Essence of civilization, 17, 18.
- Euripides, 28.
- Europe, situation of, favourable to civilization, 22.
- Evils attendant on civilization, 422.
- Examinations, public, efficiency and expediency of, 85, 151.
- Excise, laws relating to the, 324.
- Executions, public, demoralizing effects of, 250, 314.
- Exercise, bodily, necessity for, 68.
- Exhibitions, theatrical, (see Theatre.)
- Experience of the effects of civilization, 409, 418.
- Experiments, national encouragement of, 195.
- External intercourse, (see Intercourse.)

- Extinct orders of nobility, proposal for revival of, 270.
- Fabric-worship, 109.
- Faculties of the mind, each should be cultivated, 151.
- Fallacies, educational, 81.
- Fanaticism, 129.
- Fashion, definition of, 293.
- Feasting, entertainments consisting of, 245, 246.
- Ferguson's History of Civil Society, 402.
- Festivals, national, 231, 232, 239, 240, 254; object and influence of, 232, 233, 234, 239, 246.
- Field sports, moral effect of, 251.
- Flowers, civilizing effect of study of, 191.
- Food, influence of, 28, 29.
- Food, intellectual, necessity of, *Pref.* xiii., 71, 73, 155, 325.
- Force moral, 378.
- Force, physical, 378.
- Foreign influences, precautions respecting, 388.
- Foreign intercourse, (see Intercourse, international.)
- Foreigners, laws respecting, 391.
- France, foreign policy of, 368.
- Frontiers, national, preservation of, 385.
- Galileo, 217.
- Galleries of art, 126, 157, 254.
- Gallows, the, punishment by, 315.
- Gambling, tendency of, 252.
- Games, 237, 248; Grecian, 247, 338.
- Gardening, ornamental, 191.
- Gauls, the, 29.
- Generosity to enemies, civilization productive of, 379, 380.
- Genius, the English, theatrical turn of, 164.
- Gentility, 63, 263, 264.
- Geographical position, influence of, 22, 23, 368, 369.
- Germs of national character, 37.
- Gibbon's Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire, 195.
- God, enactments contrary to law of, 301.
- Goods, communication of, 339.
- Government, civil, 290.
- Government, object of a free, 258.
- Government, restraint on discussion of principles of, 206.
- Governments, absolute, 290, 292.
- Governments, representative, 295; principles in framing, 296; moral influence of, 297.
- Governments, republican, 295.
- Grants, educational, 84.
- Greatness, national, 417.
- Greece, 345; religion of, 97.
- Greece, art in, 14; situation of, 22, 24, 25; Müller's Literature of Ancient, 28; orators of, 263; festivals of, 245; civilization in, 396.
- Guizot, M., History of Civilization by, 16, 17, 47.
- Gunpowder, influence of the invention of, 40, 42, 46, 242, 383.
- Gunpowder Plot, commemoration of the, 241.
- Habits and manners, 414.
- Happiness, national, 182; promoted by civilization, 401; not the end of civil society, 402.
- Hardwicke, Lord Chancellor, 182.
- Harvey, W., 192.
- Heber, Bishop, sacred poetry of, 180.
- Henry IV., dying injunction of, 418.
- Heresy, not nurtured by toleration, 219.
- Hero, definition of a, 266.
- Heroes, monuments to, 184.
- Heroism, encouragement of, 281.
- Holidays and Holy-days, 239.
- Holidays, national, 237, 238; means to secure the observance of, 239.
- Honour, appeals to, 320.
- Honour, national, 389, 409.
- Honorary rewards, (see Rewards.)
- Human nature, study of, 12.
- Humanity, civilization conduces to, 379, 380.
- Hunter, John, 182.
- Hypocrisy, 165.
- Ideal of a perfect State, 412.
- Idleness, amusements tending to encourage, 252, 253.
- Idleness, conducive to crime, 321.
- Ignorance, incommunicability of, 332.



- Ignorance, popular, no safeguard, 79; no plea for intolerance, 229.
- Impoverishment of the nobility, proposed provision against, 262.
- Imprisonment, punishment by, 311, 312.
- Improvement, intellectual capacity of man for, 1.
- Independence, national, desirableness of maintaining, 387.
- India, 104; civilization of, 352.
- Indifference, religious, productive of toleration, 226.
- Influence, religious, national, 95, 346, 375, 396, 406; mutual effect between that and education, 96; extent of this influence, 96; different kinds of, 99; different modes of promoting civilization, 100; its civilizing effect, 102; aids the other Elements, 104; immensity of its influence, 105; pagan and heathen systems of religion, 106; personality and materiality in religion, 107; priest-worship and fabric-worship, 109; instruction in evidences of religion, 110; ceremony in religious services, 111; character of religious edifices, 112; atheistical men and nations, 113; duty of the state in promoting religious influence, 115; state honour to religion, 116; the protection of religion, 117; repulsiveness in religious services, 119; style of Scriptures a model for the latter, 120.
- Influences, conflicting, 8, 9.
- Influences, foreign, precautions respecting, 388.
- Influences, reciprocity of, 171, 204; rival and conflicting, 9; moral, 12.
- Insane, punishment of the, 310.
- Instinctive intelligence, 1.
- Institutions, charitable, 141.
- Institutions, instructory, 120, 197, 259, 375; what ought to be deemed national, 121; requirements of, 122; exclusive privileges of, 123; principles regarding, 123; different kinds of, corresponding with education, 125; liability to corruption, 129; religious and charitable institutions, 144; end they ought to serve, 147; systematic plan of instruction required in them, 148; requisites in them, 156; what they ought to effect, 222; duty of state to provide, 229; use of, in connection with other Elements, 243.
- Institutions, national, for promoting civilization, 115.
- Instructors, qualifications of, 84.
- Instructory institutions, (see Institutions.)
- Insular position, influence of, 23, 351, 369.
- Integrity, encouragement of, 281.
- Intelligence, communication of, 339.
- Intelligence, influence of, in a representative assembly, 295.
- Intelligence, laws restricting the spread of, 325.
- Intentions, mere, not within the scope of the law, 283.
- Intercourse between rich and poor, 82, 243, 337.
- Intercourse, general, influence of, 13, 14; external, 15, 24, 104.
- Intercourse, international, 24, 357, 406; to be considered independent of other Elements, 360; stimulus created by, 360; natural barriers against, 362; influence of religion upon, 364; of commerce, 365; early civilization of this country by, 367; the sea, as a medium of, 368, 369; regulation of, 371; various modes of, 372; influence of war upon, 376, 379; consideration of character in establishing, 386; precautions respecting, 388; leads to neglect of national pursuits, 310.
- Intercourse, marine, influence of, 369.
- Intercourse, promotion of, 204.
- Interests, leading, ought to predominate in a representative assembly, 295.
- Interests, rival, balance of, 347, 348, 350.
- Interests, rural, 347.
- Intermixing with foreigners, influence of, 23.
- Internal communication, 330, 406;

- effects resulting from, 332 ; creates a stimulus to civilization, 334 ; intercourse between ranks and classes, 337 ; internal communication, analogous to animal circulation, 338 ; varieties of internal communication, 338 ; a national object, 340 ; points of, 344 ; with colonies, 351 ; communication of each kind should be maintained, 355 ; proper application and regulation of this Element, 357.
- International intercourse, (see Intercourse, international.)
- Interventions, civil, superseding war, 374, 377.
- Inventions, aid of new, 195, 274.
- Inventions, influence of certain, 40, 43.
- Intolerance (and see Toleration), 129.
- Ireland, union with, 242.
- Ireland, situation of, 22, 24.
- Jews, civilization of, 25, 35, 36 ; national character exhibited in, 37 ; laws of, 299.
- Judicial proceedings, early, 33.
- Jurisprudence, leading principles of, 283.
- Jurisprudence, moral, (see Moral Jurisprudence.)
- Jury, trial by, 33.
- Justice, mode of administration of, 322.
- Keble, Rev. J., sacred poetry of, 180.
- Knighthood, rank of, 268.
- Knowledge, communicated by intercourse, 332.
- Knowledge, its necessity in civilization, 18, 62 ; the keystone of education, 63.
- Knowledge, political, for the people, 77.
- Knowledge, religious, 68, 72.
- Labour, human, employment of, 173.
- Language, 37, 38, 171 ; influence of, 40, 363 ; national, reflective of national character, 39 ; knowledge of foreign, 393 ; requisite precision of, in legal enactments, 285.
- Law, its influence upon civilization 283 ; province of, 283, 285 ; duty of state in framing, 284, 285 ; language of, 285 ; threefold object of, 298 ; maintenance of, 298 ; moral, under what comprehended, 298 ; causes of failure of, 298 ; leading principle of, 299 ; proper operation of, 300 ; repugnant to religion, 301 ; to nature, 301 ; accordance of with reason, 302 ; of marriage, 303 ; relating to crime, 306, 307 ; relating to oaths, 320 ; relating to the poor, 324, 326 ; relating to the revenue, 325, 326 ; of copyright, 326 ; sanitary, 326 ; repugnancy of national sentiment to a, 329 ; limitation to operation and scope of, 330, 415 ; whence its authority derived, 100.
- Laws, nations not ruled by, 415.
- Laws, respecting foreigners, 391.
- Laws, international, 390.
- Laws, national, and national character, 302.
- Lawyers, monuments to, 184.
- Lectures, 46, 69, 149, 150.
- Legislation, in reference to civilization, *Pref.* ix., 170.
- Legislation, Sabbatarian, principles of, 235.
- Lessons, in church services, proposal respecting, 138.
- Letters, use of, 38.
- Liberty, restraint of, 196, 197, 288 ; liberty, physical and intellectual, 197 ; civil, 197, 288 ; its influence on civilization, 199, and education, *ib.* ; liberty of conscience, 200 ; of discussion, 201 ; security of, 288 ; definition and essence of, 289 ; the natural condition of man, 289 ; love of, 299 ; varies in different societies, 299 ; civilization qualifies men for, 416 ; civilization the safeguard of, 417.
- Liberty of the press, (see Press.)
- Liberty of thought and speech, 195, 199, 200.
- Liberty, religious, 195, 199 ; political, 195, 199.
- Libraries, 125, 126, 154.
- Licentiousness not liberty, 208.
- Life-peerages, 271.

- Literature and art, encouragement of, 192.
- Literature for the lower classes, want of a, *Pref.* xii., 71, 74, 155.
- Literature, pensions to men engaged in, 279.
- Liturgy, proposal for revision of, 137.
- Locke, John, 76, 182.
- London, 345, 368.
- Lower classes, want of a suitable literature for the, *Pref.* xii., 71, 74, 155.
- Luxury, 17, 28, 49, 50, 252, 306, 400, 403, 419.
- Magna Charta, commemoration of, 241, 242.
- Man, as an individual, 3; in the aggregate, 3, 4; as the type of a state, 3, 6, 421; capacity of, for intellectual improvement, 1; three-fold consideration of, 3.
- Manners, 67.
- Manners and habits, 414, 419.
- Mansions of the aristocracy, 261.
- Manual education, 65, 88.
- Manual institutions, 125.
- Maps, as aids to education, 69.
- Marine intercourse, influence of, 369.
- Marriage, laws relating to, 286, 303, 304.
- Martial exploits, dignities for skill in, 265.
- Materiality in religion, 107, 108.
- Mechanical power, supply of, 173.
- Medicine, progress of the science of, 43.
- Memorials not monumental, 188.
- Men and states, analogy between, 3, 6, 336, 421.
- Mental education, 64.
- Mental institutions, 125.
- Merit, the only foundation of rank, 257, 258, 259.
- Merit, rewards to men of, 274, 280.
- Metropolis, civilizing effects of a, 338, 345; communication with, 338, 344, 346; position of a, 368; progress of building in the, 236.
- Microscope, use of, 43.
- Middle Ages, the, 48.
- Middle rank, honours to men of, 268; rewards to, 281, 318.
- Middle ranks, influence of the, 11, 294.
- Milton, John, 182, 242, 272, 274.
- Mind, national, 1.
- Minds, great, influence of, in civilization, 60.
- Mixed governments, advantages of, 297.
- Models for imitation, importance of, 106.
- Monarchies, absolute, 290.
- Monarchy, English, establishment of the, 242.
- Money, state grants of, 84.
- Monuments in the Houses of Parliament, 182.
- Monuments, national, 180; influence of 118; neglect to erect, 182; Wordsworth on, 184; Napoleon on, 186; not dependent on art, 187; their influence on civilization, 183.
- Moral causes, 415.
- Moral causes, the influence of, 12, 330.
- Moral education, 65.
- Moral effect of state dignities, 259.
- Morals, effect of civilization upon, 415.
- Moral influence of sovereigns, 292, 293, 300; of a nobility, *ib.*; of rulers, 294, 295.
- Moral institutions, 125.
- Moral jurisprudence, *Pref.* ix., 48, 282, 406; definition of, 283; proper sphere of, 286, 324, 326; principles of, 287; regarding forms of government, 288; in relation to crime, 307; ultimate end of, 330.
- Moral objects, aid of legislation to effect, 299.
- Morality, 20, 113, 323.
- Morality, disability from want of, 323.
- Morality and religion, 113.
- Morality, national, 389.
- More, Sir Thomas, 'Utopia' of, 249.
- Mountains, chains of, separating different countries, 362, 384.
- Museums, 125, 127, 157.
- Music, popular, the state should supply, 193, 254.



- Music, influence of, 119, 171, 174, 176, 193, 215, 247.
- Napoleon I. on civilization, *Pref.* xi., 190; on national monuments, 186; promoted internal communication, 338.
- National character, (see Character.)
- National commemorations, (see Commemorations.)
- National dignities, (see Dignities.)
- National edifices, (see Edifices.)
- National education, (see Education.)
- National religion, effect of change of, 227.
- National religious influence, (see Influence, religious.)
- National theatre, (see Theatre.)
- Nature, (see Human nature,) the system of, to be followed, *Pref.* ix., 273, 321, 400; dictates of, 256; operation of, in relation to rewards and punishments, 313; influence of contemplation of, 191.
- Naval force, 24; British, 382.
- Navigation, the position of this country promotes skill in, 367.
- Navigation, dignities conferred for skill in, 264.
- Newspaper, the, 204; as a public institution, *ib.*, 343; general character of, at the present day, 209.
- Newton, Sir Isaac, 182, 242, 272.
- Nobility, (see Dignities.)
- Nobility, moral influence of, 293.
- Nobility, proposed provision against the impoverishment of, 262.
- Nobility, system of, not superannuated, 267.
- Nonconformist ministers, excellence of some, 132.
- Numbers, influence of, in a state, 295.
- Oaths, laws relating to, 286, 320.
- Offices, civil, appointment to, 87.
- Olympic games, the, 339.
- Opinion, freedom of, (and see Liberty of the Press and Toleration,) 215, 216.
- Opinion, stagnation of, 211.
- Opinion, public, 204.
- Opposite results from the same cause, 376.
- Orators, Grecian, 203.
- Order, maintenance of, 298.
- Organs of public opinion, 200, 205.
- Origin of civilization, 12, 14.
- Ornamental education, *Pref.* xv., 88.
- Painting, 171.
- Papists, vices of, 129; tolerance of some, 211.
- Parliaments, the holding of, 33.
- Parliament, the, and the press, 203.
- Parliament, acts of, loose phraseology of, 285.
- Party-feeling, whence favourable to civilization, 297.
- Patents, laws relating to, 326.
- Patrons of art and science, 261.
- Patronage, necessity for, 174, 192; objects of, 192, 195.
- Paul, St., on avarice, 53.
- Peace, civilization promoted by, 388, 418; universal, one of the fruits of Christianity, 76; maintenance of, 298, 374, 381, 384.
- Peerages, (see Dignities.)
- Peerages, early, 264.
- Peerages for life, 271.
- Pensions, state, 276.
- Perfect state, ideal of a, 412.
- Performances, popular musical, 177, 194.
- Perjury, punishment of, 320.
- Pernicious amusements, (see Amusements.)
- Pernicious publications, (see Publications.)
- Persecution, inefficacy of, 231.
- Personality in religion, 107.
- Persons, communication of, 339.
- Physical force, 378, 403.
- Pictures, as aids to education, 69.
- Plato, Republic of, 247.
- Poetry, 171; national, 177; religious and devotional, 178; doggrel, 180.
- Poetry of Scotland, 177.
- Poetry, Jewish, 177, 179.
- Poetry and rhyme, distinction between, 178.
- Poets, monuments to, 184.
- Points of communication, different, 344.
- Political knowledge, (see Knowledge.)
- Pomp in religious services, effect of, 111.

- Poor-laws, principle of the, 324, 326.  
Pope, Alexander, 182.  
Position, geographical, 22; of this country, 23, 24.  
Position, insular, influence of, 23, 351, 369.  
Postal communication, influence of, 343.  
Poverty no proof of want of genius, 274.  
Poverty, national, 53.  
Power, civilization increases, 383, 400, 403, 419.  
Power, balance of, preserving the, 374, 385.  
Prayer-book of the Church of England, 178.  
Preaching, qualifications for, 138.  
Preaching, lay, recommended, 139.  
Precautions, respecting foreign influences, 388.  
Precision, necessity and neglect of in legal enactments, 285.  
Preferment, state, dispensation of, 279.  
Press, liberty of the, 195, 286; value of a free press, 200; especial advantages possessed by the press, 201; inefficiency to punish, 202; has superseded the theatre as a censor, 202; the Parliament and the press, 203; as a public instructor, 204; aiding the other Elements, 204; basis of the power of the press, 205; legitimate restraints on the press, 205; licentiousness not liberty, 208; present character of the British press, 209.  
Priest-worship, 409.  
Principles of education, (see Education.)  
Principles, systematic, necessity of, 70.  
Printing, influence of the invention of, 40, 41, 46, 149, 242.  
Privileges, exclusive, 123.  
Profaneness, restriction of, 205.  
Professional services, requital of, 276.  
Professorships, suitable endowment of, 146.  
Progress, 17.  
Progression, stimulus to, 420.  
Property, maintenance of, 298.  
Property, national and individual, 12.  
Prosecutor, public, necessity for a, 322.  
Protestants, vices of, 129; intolerance of some, 211.  
Provisions, state, for the promotion of civilization, *Pref.* xiii., 75, 83.  
Psalms, the, 138, 178; authorized version of, 178; desirableness of a new authorized version of, 180.  
Punishment, power of the press to inflict, 202.  
Punishments, 298; principle of, 309; preventative, 310; application of, 312; true theory of, 313; moral effect of, 313, 314; main defects and failure of, 317; capital, 311, 312, 317; corresponding with crimes, 320; degrading, 311, 314, 315, 322; varieties of, 310, 311; objects of, 311; corporeal, 311.  
Public prosecutor, (see Prosecutor, public.)  
Publications, pernicious, how to avert the effects of, 75.  
Puritans, the, 237.  
Pursuits, classification of, 171.  
Qualities, requiring state encouragement, 282.  
Qualities, physical as well as moral deserving of consideration, 86.  
Qualities, natural, 256, 257.  
Qualities, original natural, of a people, 34.  
Races, mixture of, 26, 29, 31, 34.  
Railways, influence of, 44, 342; excursion trains by, 255.  
Railways, as a means of communication, 339, 340, 341, 342.  
Rank, natural and artificial, 256, 259.  
Rank and honours, civilizing effect of, 54, 414.  
Ranks and classes, intercourse between, 82, 243, 337, 417.  
Reading for the people, recreative, the want of, *Pref.* xii., 71, 74, 155.  
Readings, public, 151.  
Reason, right exercise of, 210, 226, 227, 230.

- Rebellion, the Great, 237.  
 Recreations for the people, (see Amusements.)  
 Recreative reading, (see Reading.)  
 Refinement, 19.  
 Reformation, criminal, 315, 316.  
 Reformatories, 316; treatment of criminals in, 316.  
 Regulations, educational, 84.  
 Relaxation, national, (see Amusements.)  
 Relaxation, bodily, necessity of, 68, 243, 254, 255.  
 Religion, aided by art, 174, 175.  
 Religion, its influence in relation to international intercourse, 364.  
 Religion, influence of upon civilization, 47, 93, 346.  
 Religion, heathen systems of, 97, 105, 106, 107.  
 Religion, free discussion respecting, 210, 286; instruction in evidences of, 110; reverence to, 115.  
 Religion, laws repugnant to, 301.  
 Religion, restraint on discussion of principles of, 206, 207, 208.  
 Religion, disabilities from want of, 323; from difference in, 323.  
 Religious Education, (see Education.)  
 Religious Influence, (see Influence religious.)  
 Religious knowledge, (see Knowledge.)  
 Religious societies, (see Societies.)  
 Repentance, 309.  
 Representation, 'The True Theory of,' reference to, 263, 272, 296.  
 Representative governments, (see governments representative.)  
 Repugnancy of national sentiment to certain laws, 329.  
 Repulsiveness in religious services, avoidance of, 119.  
 Requisites to civilization, 18.  
 Resources, national, development of by civilization, 398, 410, 412, 413, 420.  
 Restraints on liberty, legitimate, 197, 199, 205, 206, 207, 208, 288, 290, 324.  
 Restrictions, 298, 325.  
 Results, opposite, from the same cause, 376.  
 Revenue, laws relating to the public, 325.  
 Revenues of the church, redistribution of, 140.  
 Reverence to religion, 115.  
 Rewards, working by, in legislation, 318.  
 Rewards, honorary and pecuniary, 256; to unsuccessful men, 273; correspondent with objects, 275; for intellectual efforts should be the highest, 276; pecuniary, 276, 278, 279; care to be taken in dispensing, 278; to men of letters, 279; to men of middle rank, 281, 318; government should work by, 318.  
 Rewards and punishments, the Divine system of, 321.  
 Rhyme, distinction of from poetry, 178.  
 Rich and poor, different punishments for, 312.  
 Ridicule, use of, 203.  
 Ridicule of religion, 118.  
 Rifle corps, the English, 382.  
 Rival parties and opinions, 205, 297.  
 Rival powers, in men and states, 8, 9, 26, 297, 347, 348, 350.  
 Rival religious bodies, toleration towards, 222.  
 Rivalry, religious, may have been ordained by God, 228.  
 Rivers, as a means of communication, 339, 340; as barriers of separation, 362, 384.  
 Roads, as a means of communication, 338, 339, 341.  
 Robbery, national, 382.  
 Rome, 29, 97, 345, 368; holidays in, 237; civilization in, 396.  
 Romans, roads made by the, 338, 341; sense of honour among the, 409.  
 Rulers, moral influence of, 294.  
 Russia, encroachments of, 351.  
 Sabbath, establishment of the, 47; its influence on civilization, 233; principles of legislation for, 235.  
 Sanitary laws, 326.  
 Satire, legitimate use of, 203.  
 Savages, low condition in civilization of, 15.



- Saxons, the, 33.  
 Saxon era, dignities during, 264.  
 Scenery, protection of from disfigurement, 191.  
 Scholastic establishments, 126, 144.  
 Schools, 125; principle of holidays adopted in public, 238.  
 Science, claim of civilization to be ranked as a, 56.  
 Science, elementary principles of a, 56.  
 Science, influence of in civilization, 169, 170, 172, 173.  
 Science and art, (see Art.)  
 Scotland, union with, 242.  
 Scriptures, belief in the, 133; style of the, 120; discussion of the veracity of, 212, 216, 217, 218.  
 Sea, the, communication by, 339.  
 Seas, aids to international intercourse of 368, 369; separate different nations, 362.  
 Security, national, promoted by civilization, 401.  
 Sentiment, the national, repugnancy of to certain laws, 329.  
 Separation, causes of geographical, national, 362.  
 Sermons, 46, 119, 138, 139; commonplaceness, cause of, 139; proposed substitutes for, 140.  
 Services, religious, 120.  
 Shakspeare, 162, 242, 272.  
 Sight, protection of enjoyment of, 191.  
 Sincerity in religious instructors, importance of, 106.  
 Slander, prohibition of, 205.  
 Slavery, 289, 290; moral effect of, 173, 323; physical, 199; moral and intellectual, 198, 199.  
 Societies, whence men join in, 5, 333; amalgamation of, 335; religious, 125, 141.  
 Societies, educational, 141.  
 Society, influence of upon its members, 333, 334.  
 Somers, Lord, 182.  
 Sovereigns, moral influence of, 292; advantages possessed by, 291.  
 Spain, bull-fights of, 249.  
 Spartan system of education, 90.  
 Spectacular institutions, 126.  
 Spenser, Edmund, 182.  
 Stage, (see Theatre.)  
 State, authority of in making prohibitory laws, 284.  
 State, duty of, (see Duty.)  
 State, duty of the, in promoting civilization, 58.  
 State, ideal of a completely civilized, 412.  
 Statesmen, monuments to, 184.  
 Steam, invention of, 242, 383.  
 Steam-engine, influence of the invention of, 40, 42, 353.  
 Sternhold and Hopkins, poetry of, 179.  
 Stimulants to good conduct, 282.  
 Stimulus, influence of in civilization, 15, 85, 91, 335, 360, 420.  
 Stocks, the village, utility of, 314.  
 Streets, names given to, 188.  
 Style of the Scriptures, 120.  
 Substitute for sermons, proposed, 140.  
 Success, secret of securing, 280.  
 Sunday, 233, 235; mode of observing on the Continent, 234; proper mode of keeping, 240.  
 Sunday concerts, recommendation of, 177.  
 Superstitions, 118; religious, 225.  
 Support, right of every member of the state to, 302.  
 Symbols of civilization, 418.  
 Talent, proper employment of men of, 280.  
 Taste, duty of the state to correct the public, 192.  
 Taste, national, 419.  
 Tate and Brady, poetry of, 179.  
 Taxation, 55.  
 Telegraph, the electric, 344, 353.  
 Telescope, the invention of, 43.  
 Temple, Rev. Dr., 47.  
 Tests, strict, inutility of, 131, 132.  
 Thane, proposal for revival of title of, 270.  
 Theatre, the, 126, 159, 254; censorship of, superseded by the press, 202.  
 Theatre, proposal for a national, 160.  
 Theatres, the Greek and Roman, 160.  
 Theatrical entertainments, tendency of, 161.

- "Theory of representation, the true," reference to, 263, 272, 296.  
 Thought, freedom of, 195, 200.  
 Threefold nature of education, 64, 65.  
 Titles, honorary, effect of, 258.  
 Toleration, 117, 195; basis of, 210; principles of, 211; in relation to civilization, 213; negative rather than positive, 214; essence of, 216; reasonable limits to, 218; does not aid error, 219; inefficacy of intolerance, 220; intolerance no test of truth, 221; toleration towards rival religious bodies, 222; degenerating into intolerance, 224; state benefits resulting from, 228; true principle of, 230; in regard to Sabbatarian legislation, 235.  
 Towns, communication with, 344, 346.  
 Translations, utility of, 393.  
 Transportation, punishment by, 311, 315, 317.  
 Travelling, progress of, 43, 420.  
 Treaties, construction of, 387.  
 Truth, triumph of, 201; intolerance no test of, 221.  
 Turkey, civilization in, 396.  
 Tyranny, definition of, 289.  
 Union, civilization tends to promote, 401.  
 Union, international, civilization of the world through, 405.  
 Union with Ireland, 242.  
 Union with Scotland, 242.  
 Universities, 125, 126, 144, 145; professors in, 145, 146; requirements of universities, 146, 152; intercourse between, 153; local position of, 153.  
 Unsuccessful men, when deserving of state patronage, 273.  
 Vavasour, proposal for revival of title of, 270.  
 Veto on ecclesiastical appointments, proposal for a, 140.  
 Vices, danger of spreading by extending communication, 346.  
 Vices, particular, to be discouraged by the State, 319.  
 Violence, crimes of, 308, 321.  
 Virtue, homage due to, by the state, 256, 258.  
 Virtue, promoted by civilization, 401.  
 Virtue, reward of, 258, 261, 265.  
 Virtues, requiring state encouragement, 282, 319.  
 Walks, public, 191.  
 Walpole, Sir Robert, 182.  
 Wandering tribes, uncivilized character of, 371.  
 War, 17, 43, 46, 55, 418; when justifiable, 374, 382, 390; provocatives to, 353, 381; its influence upon civilization, 373, 376; opposite results produced by, 374; interventions should supersede, 374, 377; influence of civilization upon, 379, 380, 401; aggressive, 382; principles on which war should be conducted, 374.  
 Warfare, modes of conducting, 380; national, of this country, 382.  
 Waterloo, commemoration of the victory of, 241.  
 Watts, Dr., 48, 132.  
 Wealth, influence of, 257, 259.  
 Wealth, national, 51, 52.  
 Whately, Archbishop, on civilization, 13.  
 Will, freedom of the, the criterion of liberty, 288.  
 Will, restraint of the, 288.  
 Women, influence of, 304; treatment of, 305.  
 Wordsworth, W., 182; on national monuments, 184.  
 Works, literary, deserving of state support, 276.  
 World, civilization of the, 394, 405.  
 Worship, freedom of religious, (and see Toleration,) 215.  
 Zeal, religious, productive of intolerance, 252.

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

---

In 3 vols. 8vo, with Plates, price 21s. cloth.

Dedicated by express permission to his Royal Highness PRINCE ALBERT.

## THE LIFE

OF

## LORD CHANCELLOR HARDWICKE,

WITH

SELECTIONS FROM HIS CORRESPONDENCE, DIARIES,  
SPEECHES, AND JUDGMENTS,

NOW FIRST PUBLISHED FROM THE ORIGINAL MSS. AT WIMPOLE.

BY GEORGE HARRIS, ESQ.,

OF THE MIDDLE TEMPLE, BARRISTER-AT-LAW.

---

"It is a very valuable book indeed. It is the very first in value that has for a long time appeared."—*Lord Brougham*.

"Vigorous, intelligent, and remarkably interesting."—*Blackwood's Magazine*.

"The author, as well as the noble representative of the Chancellor, deserve great praise, and great thanks for so valuable a contribution to legal history."—*Law Review*.

"Mr. Harris has produced a work no less interesting to the general reader than to those who may consult it for its historical value."—*Westminster Review*.

"A valuable contribution to the History of British Politics and Jurisprudence."—*Morning Chronicle*.

"A sterling and important historical work."—*Literary Gazette*.

"Not only the best life of Lord Hardwicke extant, but also the best chronological and general compilation, referring to the period which it embraces, at present known to English literature."—*Observer*.

"A nobly conceived portraiture of the mind of the great Lord Hardwicke."—*Morning Post*.

"The writer will henceforth occupy a distinguished position in the abiding literature of this country. He is fortunate in his subject, happy in its treatment."—*Birmingham Journal*.



In 8vo, cloth, price 3s. 6d.

THE  
TRUE THEORY OF REPRESENTATION  
IN A STATE;

OR

The Leading Interests of the Nation,  
NOT THE MERE PREDOMINANCE OF NUMBERS,  
PROVED TO BE ITS PROPER BASIS.

By GEORGE HARRIS, ESQ.,  
OF THE MIDDLE TEMPLE, BARRISTER-AT-LAW.

"We confidently recommend this excellent work to our readers, and to their power to adopt its suggestions."—*Standard*.

"This is a very thoughtful publication. Its views are original and comprehensive. The frank, truth-seeking, and dispassionate tone of the whole book, renders its perusal a real pleasure, independently of its learning, logic, and earnestness."—*Illustrated London News*.

"A very able Essay on a most important and thoroughly English theme. We welcome Mr. Harris's work as a highly valuable contribution to our political knowledge."—*John Bull*.

"Mr. Harris has treated a question at this moment of paramount importance, with the knowledge of a constitutional lawyer, as well as with the calm reflection of a philosopher."—*Law Times*.

---

Preparing for Publication.

THE THEORY OF THE ARTS;  
COMPRISING AN  
INVESTIGATION, ANALYTICAL AND CRITICAL,  
INTO THE  
ORIGIN, RISE, PROVINCE, PRINCIPLES AND APPLICATION  
OF ART OF EACH KIND.

By GEORGE HARRIS, F.S.A.,  
AUTHOR OF "CIVILIZATION CONSIDERED AS A SCIENCE," ETC. ETC.

# MESSRS. BELL AND DALDY'S NEW AND STANDARD PUBLICATIONS.



## New Books.

**S**PENSER'S COMPLETE WORKS; with Life, Notes, and a Glossary, by JOHN PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A. 8vo. 5 vols. 5*l.* 15*s.* Antique calf, 6*l.* 6*s.* [Ready.]

**LDINE POETS. — THOMSON'S POEMS**, with Memoir by SIR H. NICOLAS, and additional Poems; the whole very carefully revised, and the Memoir annotated by PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq., F.S.A. 2 vols. 10*s.* Morocco, or antique morocco, 21*s.* [Ready.]

**LDINE POETS. — THOMSON'S SEASONS, AND CASTLE OF INDOLENCE**, with Memoir, 6*s.* Morocco, or antique morocco, 11*s.* 6*d.* [Ready.]

**POEMS FROM THE GERMAN.** By RICHARD GARNEFF, Author of "In Egypt, and other Poems." Fcap. 8vo. 5*s.* 6*d.* [Ready.]

**JUL, A DRAMATIC POEM**; Elizabeth, an Historical Ode, and other Poems. By WILLIAM FULFORD, M.A. Fcap. 8vo. 5*s.* [Ready.]

**AYS AND POEMS ON ITALY.** By F. A. MACKAY. Fcap. 8vo. 5*s.* [Ready.]

**IRISH SERMONS.** By the Rev. M. F. SADLER, M.A., Vicar of Bridgwater, Author of "The Sacrament of Responsibility," and "The Second Adam and the New Birth." Vol. II. Fcap. 8vo. [In the press.]

**THE BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER.** Ornamented with Head-pieces and Initial Letters specially designed for this edition. Printed in red and black at the Cambridge University Press. 24mo. Best morocco, 10*s.* 6*d.* Also in ornamental bindings, at various prices. [Ready.]

Also a large paper Edition, crown 8vo. Best morocco, 18*s.* Also in ornamental bindings, at various prices. [Ready.]

**A COMMENTARY ON THE GOSPELS** for the Sundays and other Holy Days of the Christian Year. By the Rev. W. DENTON, A.M., Worcester College, Oxford, and Incumbent of St. Bartholomew's, Cripplegate. Vol. II. Easter to the Sixteenth Sunday after Trinity. 8vo. 14*s.* [Ready.]

**THE SECOND ADAM, AND THE NEW BIRTH**; or, the Doctrine of Baptism as contained in Holy Scripture. By the Rev. M. F. SADLER, M.A., Vicar of Bridgwater, Author of "The Sacrament of Responsibility." Third Edition, greatly enlarged. Fcap. 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.* [Ready.]

**THE DIVINE RULE OF PRAYER.** By the Rev. R. M. BENSON, M.A., Vicar of Cowley. Fcap. 8vo. [Shortly.]

**REASONS OF FAITH**; or, the Order of the Christian Argument developed and explained. By the Rev. G. S. DREW, M.A. Fcap. 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.* [Ready.]

**CHARLES AND JOSIAH**; or, Friendly Conversations between a Churchman and a Quaker. Sm. 8vo. [Immediately.]



**THE BOOK OF PSALMS;** a New Translation, with Introductions and Notes, Critical and Explanatory. By the Rev. J. J. STEWART PIERCE, B.D., Fellow of C. C. College, Cambridge, and Examining Chaplain to the Lord Bishop of Norwich. 8vo. [In the press.]

**POPULAR ILLUSTRATIONS OF SOME REMARKABLE EVENTS RECORDED IN THE OLD TESTAMENT.** By the Rev. J. F. DAWSON, LL.B., Rector of Toynton. Post 8vo. 3s. 6d. [Ready.]

**SCUDAMORE ORGANS,** or Practical Hints respecting Organs for Village Churches and Small Chancels, on improved Principles. By the Rev. J. BARON, M.A. Second Edition, revised. 8vo. 6s. [Ready.]

**ADVENTURES OF BARON WENCESLAS WRATISLAW OF MITROWITZ;** what he saw in the Turkish Metropolis, Constantinople, experienced in his Captivity, and, after his happy return to his country, committed to writing in the year of our Lord 1599. Literally translated from the original Bohemian by A. H. WRATISLAW, M.A., Head Master of the Grammar School, Bury St. Edmunds, and formerly Fellow and Tutor of Christ's College, Cambridge. [Immediately.]

**A HISTORY OF ECCLESFIELD.** By the Rev. J. EASTWOOD. 8vo. [In the press.]

**THE COTTON, FLAX, AND OTHER CHIEF FIBRE-YIELDING PLANTS OF INDIA;** with a coloured Map of the Country, several original Illustrations of the Native Fibrous Plants, and many important Statistical Tables. By J. FORBES WATSON, A.M., M.D., Reporter to the Indian Government on the Products of India. Royal 8vo. [Immediately.]

**A HANDY BOOK OF THE CHEMISTRY OF SOILS.** By JOHN SCOFFERN, M.B. Crown 8vo. [Shortly.]

**HINTS TO PEDESTRIANS.** New Edition. [Preparing.]

**NOTES AND QUERIES.**—General Index to the Second Series. Fcap. 4to. 5s. [Preparing.]

**CHILDHOOD AND YOUTH.** By Count NICOLA TOLSTOI. Translated from the Russian by MALWIDA VON MEYSENBURG. Post 8vo. 8s. 6d. [Ready.]

**GIFTS AND GRACES.** A new Tale, by the Author of "The Rose and the Lotus." Post 8vo. 7s. 6d. [Ready.]

**THE OLD FOLKS FROM HOME** or, a Holiday in Ireland in 1801. By MRS. GATTY. Second Edition. Post 8vo. 7s. 6d. [Ready.]

**AUNT JUDY'S LETTERS.** By MRS. ALFRED GATTY, Author of "Aunt Judy's Tales," "Parables from Nature," &c. Fcap. 8vo. [In the press.]

**MELCHIOR'S DREAM AND OTHER TALLS.** By J. H. G. Edited by MRS. GATTY. Fcap. 8vo. [In the press.]

**BARONSCLIFFE;** or, the Deed of other Days. By MRS. P. M. LATHAM. Author of "The Wayfarers." Crown 8vo. 6s. [Ready.]

**DOMESTIC LIFE IN PALESTINE** By M. E. ROGERS. Post 8vo. 10s. 6d. [Ready.]

**THE LIGHTS OF THE WILL** or, THE WISP. Translated by Lady MARY WELLS WALLACE. With a coloured Frontispiece. Imperial 16mo. Cloth, gilt edges, 5s. [Ready.]

**CHURCH STORIES.** Edited by the Rev. J. E. CLARKE. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. [Ready.]

**THE CHILDREN'S PICTURE BOOK OF USEFUL KNOWLEDGE** With 130 Illustrations. Uniform with "The Children's Bible Picture Book." Super royal 16mo. Cloth, gilt edges, 5s. [Ready.]

**THE SCHOLE MASTER.** By ROGER ASCHAM. Edited by the Rev. J. B. MAYOR, M.A. Fcap. 8vo. [Shortly.]

**THE 1862 EDITION OF UNDER THE GOVERNMENT:** an Official Key to the Civil Service, and Guide for Candidates seeking Appointments under the Crown. By J. C. PARKINSON, Chief Accountant Office, Inland Revenue, Somerset House. Cr. 8vo. 3s. 6d. [Ready.]

**HOMER AND ENGLISH METRICAL.** An Essay on the Translating of the Iliad and Odyssey. With a Literal Rendering in the Spenserian Stanza of the First Book of the Odyssey, and Specimens of the Iliad. By WILLIAM G. T. BARTER, Esq., Author of "A Literal Translation, in Spenserian Stanza, of the Iliad of Homer." [Immediately.]

**ENGLISH RETRACED;** or, Remarks, Critical and Philological, founded on a comparison of the Breeches Bible with the English of the present day. Crown 8vo. 5s. [Ready.]



**THE ELEMENTS OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE, FOR SCHOOLS AND COLLEGES.** By ERNEST ADAMS, Ph. D., University College School. *New Edition, enlarged and improved.*

[Nearly ready.]

**ATIN PROSE LESSONS.** By the Rev. A. Church, M.A., Master of Merchant Taylors' School. Feap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

[Ready.]

**ASC'S LE PETIT COMPAGNON :** a French Talk-Book for Little Children. With numerous wood-cuts. 16mo. 3s. 6d.

[Immediately.]

**ASC'S SELECT FRENCH POETRY FOR THE YOUNG.** With English Notes, and preceded by a few Plain Rules of French Prosody. Feap. 8vo. 2s.

[Ready.]

**KEY TO M. GASC'S FIRST AND SECOND FRENCH BOOKS.** Feap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

[Ready.]

**COMPENDIUM OF FACTS AND FORMULÆ IN PURE AND MIXED MATHEMATICS.** For the use of Mathematical Students. By G. R. SMALLY, B.A., F.R.A.S. Feap. 8vo. [Immediately.]

**THE CHOEPHORAE OF AESCHYLUS AND ITS SCHOLIA.** Revised and Interpreted by J. F. DAVIES, Esq., B.A., Trinity College, Dublin. 8vo. 7s. 6d.

[Ready.]

**BELL AND DALDY'S POCKET VOLUMES.** A Series of Select Works of Favourite Authors, adapted for general reading, moderate in price, compact and elegant in form, and executed in a style fitting them to be permanently preserved. Imperial 32mo.

*New Ready.*

The Robin Hood Ballads. 2s. 6d.

The Midshipman. — Autobiographical Sketches of his own Early Career, by Capt. Basil Hall, R.N., F.R.S. — From his "Fragments of Voyages and Travels." 2s.

The Lieutenant and Commander. By the same Author. 2s.

Southey's Life of Nelson. 2s. 6d.

George Herbert's Poems. 2s.

George Herbert's Works. 2s.

Longfellow's Poems. 2s. 6d.

Latch's Tales from Shakespeare. 2s. 6d.

Milton's Paradise Lost. 2s. 6d.

Milton's Paradise Regained and other Poems.

2s. 6d.

*Preparing.*

White's Natural History of Selborne.

The Conquest of India. By Capt. Basil Hall, R.N., Sea Songs and Ballads. By Charles Dibdin, and others.

Walton's Lives of Denham, Watton, Hooker, &c.

Walton's Complete Angler.

Gray's Poems.

Goldsmith's Poems.

Goldsmith's Vicar of Wakefield.

Henry Vaughan's Poems.

Burns's Poems.

Burns's Songs.

Coleridge's Poems.

In cloth, top edge gilt, at 6d. per volume extra ; in half morocco, Roxburgh style, at 1s. extra ; in antique or best plain morocco (Hayday) at 4s. extra.

*Other Works are in preparation.*

## The Library of English Worthies.

Series of reprints of the best Authors, carefully edited and collated with the Early Copies, and handsomely printed by Whittingham in Octavo.

 **OWER'S CONFESSION AMANTIS,** with Life by Dr. Pauli, and a Glossary. 3 vols. 2l. 7s. Antique calf, 3l. 6s. Only a limited number of copies printed.

*This important work is so scarce that it can seldom be met with even in the large libraries. It is wanting in nearly every collection of English Poetry.*

**PENSER'S COMPLETE WORKS ;** with Life, Notes, and Glossary, by JOHN PAYNE COLLIER, Esq., F.S.A. 3 vols. 3l. 15s. Antique calf, 6l. 6s.

**SHOPI JEREMY TAYLOR'S RULE AND EXERCISES OF HOLY LIVING AND DYING.** 2 vols. 1l. 1s. Morocco, antique calf or morocco, 2l. 2s.

**BISHOP BUTLER'S ANALOGY OF RELIGION ;** with Analytical Index, by the Rev. EDWARD STARR, LL.D. 12s. Antique calf, 1l. 1s.

"The present Edition has been furnished with an Index of the Texts of Scripture quoted, and an Index of Words and Things considerably fuller than any hitherto published." — *Editor's Preface.*

**HERBERT'S POEMS AND REMAINS ;** with S. T. Coleridge's Notes, and Life by Isaac Walton. Revised, with additional Notes, by Mr. J. YOUNG. 2 vols. 1l. 1s. Morocco, or antique calf or morocco, 2l. 2s.

*Uniform with the above.*

**THE PHYSICAL THEORY OF ANOTHER LIFE.** By ISAAC TAYLOR, Esq., Author of "Logic in Theology," "Ultimate Civilization," &c. *New Edition.* 10s. 6d. Antique calf, 11s.

## The Aldine Edition of the British Poets.

The Publishers have been induced, by the scarcity and increasing value of this admirable Series of the Poets, to prepare a New Edition, very carefully corrected, and improved by such additions as recent literary research has placed within their reach.

The general principle of Editing which has been adopted is to give the entire Poems of each Author in strict conformity with the Edition which received his final revision, to prefix a Memoir and to add such notes as may be necessary to elucidate the sense of obsolete words or explain obscure allusions. Each Author will be placed in the hands of a competent editor specially acquainted with the literature and bibliography of the period.

Externally this new Edition will resemble the former, but with some improvements. It will be elegantly printed by Whittingham, on toned paper manufactured expressly for it; and a highly finished portrait of each author will be given.

The Aldine Edition of the British Poets has hitherto been the favourite Series with the admirers of choice books, and every effort will be made to increase its claims as a comprehensive and faithful mirror of the poetic genius of the nation.



**KENSIDE'S POETICAL WORKS**, with Memoir by the Rev. A. DYCE, and additional Letters, carefully revised. 5s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 10s. 6d.

**COLLINS'S POEMS**, with Memoir and Notes by W. MOY THOMAS, Esq. 3s. 6d. Morocco, or antique morocco, 8s. 6d.

**GRAY'S POETICAL WORKS**, with Notes and Memoir by the Rev. JOHN MITFORD. 5s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 10s. 6d.

**KIRKE WHITE'S POEMS**, with Memoir by Sir H. NICOLAS, and additional Notes. Carefully revised. 5s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 10s. 6d.

**SHAKESPEARE'S POEMS**, with Memoir by the Rev. A. DYCE. 5s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 10s. 6d.

**YOUNG'S POEMS**, with Memoir by the Rev. John Mitford, and additional Poems. 2 vols. 10s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 11. 1s.

**THOMSON'S POEMS**, with Memoir by Sir H. NICOLAS, and additional Poems; the whole very carefully revised, and the Memoir annotated by PETER CUNNINGHAM, Esq., F.S.A.. 2 vols. 10s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 11. 1s.

**THOMSON'S SEASONS, AND CASTLE OF INDOLENCE**, with Memoir. 6s. Morocco, or antique morocco, 11s. 6d.

**DRYDEN'S POETICAL WORKS**, with Memoir by the Rev. R. HOOPER, F.S.A. Carefully revised. [In the press.]

**COWPER'S POETICAL WORKS**, including his Translations. Edited, with Memoir, by JOHN BRUCE, Esq., F.S.A. [Preparing.]

**PARNELL'S POEMS**, with Memoir. Edited by BOLTON CORNEY, Esq. M.R.S.L. [Preparing.]

**POPE'S POETICAL WORKS**, with Memoir. Edited by W. J. THOMAS, Esq. F.S.A. [Preparing.]

*Uniform with the Aldine Edition of the Poets.*

**THE TEMPLE AND OTHER POEMS**. By GEORGE HERBERT, with Coleridge's Notes. *New Edition*. Morocco, antique calf or morocco, 10s. 6d.

**THE WORKS OF GRAY**, edited by the Rev. JOHN MITFORD. With his Correspondence with Mr. Chute and other Journal kept at Rome, Criticism on the Sculptures, &c. *New Edition*. 5 vols. 11. 3s.

**VAUGHAN'S SACRED POEMS AND PIOUS EJACULATIONS**, with Memoir by the Rev. H. F. LYTE. *New Edition*. 5s. Antique calf or morocco 10s. 6d. Large Paper, 7s. 6d. Antique calf 14s. Antique morocco, 15s.

"Preserving all the piety of George Herbert they have less of his quaint and fantastic turn with a much larger infusion of poetic feeling and expression."—LYTE.

**BISHOP JEREMY TAYLOR'S RULE AND EXERCISES OF HOLY LIVING AND HOLY DYING**. 2 vols. 2s. 6d. each. Morocco, antique calf morocco, 7s. 6d. each. In one volume 5s. Morocco, antique calf or morocco 10s. 6d.

**BISHOP BUTLER'S ANALOGY OF RELIGION**; with Analytical Introduction and copious Index, by the Rev. I. STEERE. 6s. Antique calf, 11s. 6d.



uniform with the Aldine Edition of the Poets.

**ISHOP BUTLER'S SERMONS AND REMAINS**; with Memoir, by the Rev. E. SIERRE, LL.D. 6s.

\*.\* This volume contains some additional remains, which are copyright, and render it the most complete edition extant.

**ISHOP BUTLER'S COMPLETE WORKS**; with Memoir by the Rev. Dr. SIERRE. 2 vols. 12s.

**ACON'S ADVANCEMENT OF LEARNING**. Edited, with short Notes, by the Rev. G. W. KITCHIN, M.A., Christ Church, Oxford. 6s. Antique calf, 11s. 6d.

**ACON'S ESSAYS**; or, Counsels Civil and Moral, with the Wisdom of the Ancients. With References and Notes by S. W. SINGER, F.S.A. 5s. Morocco, or antique calf, 10s. 6d.

**ACON'S NOVUM ORGANUM**. Newly translated, with short Notes, by the Rev. ANDREW JOHNSON, M.A. 6s. Antique calf, 11s. 6d.

**OCKE ON THE CONDUCT OF THE HUMAN UNDERSTANDING**; edited by BOLTON CORNEY, Esq., M.R.S.L., 3s. 6d. Antique calf, 8s. 6d.

"I cannot think any parent or instructor justified in neglecting to put this little treatise into the hands of a boy about the time when the reasoning faculties become developed."—HATFIELD.

**LTIMATE CIVILIZATION**. By ISAAC TAYLOR, Esq. 6s.

**OGIC IN THEOLOGY, AND OTHER ESSAYS**. By ISAAC TAYLOR, Esq. 6s.

**HE PHYSICAL THEORY OF ANOTHER LIFE**. By ISAAC TAYLOR, Esq., Author of the "Natural History of Enthusiasm," "Restoration of Belief," &c. New Edition. 6s. Antique calf, 11s. 6d.

**R. S. W. SINGER'S NEW EDITION OF SHAKESPEARE'S DRAMATIC WORKS**. The Text carefully revised, with Notes. The Life of the Poet and a Critical Essay on each Play by W. W. LLOYD, Esq. 10 vols. 6s. each. Calf, 5l. 5s. Morocco, 6l. 6s.

**arge Paper Edition**, crown 8vo. 4l. 10s. Calf, 6l. 10s. 6d. Morocco, 5l. 3s.

"Mr. Singer has produced a text, the accuracy of which cannot be surpassed in the present state of antiquarian and philological knowledge."—*Daily News*.

**R. RICHARDSON'S NEW DICTIONARY OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE**. Combining Explanation with Etymology, and copiously illustrated by Quotations from the best authorities. New Edition, with a Supplement containing additional Words and further Illustrations. In 9 vols 4to, 4l. 14s. 6d. Half bound in Russia, 5l. 15s. 6d. Russia, 6l. 15s.

The Words—with those of the same Family—are traced to their Origin.

The EXPLANATIONS are deduced from the Primitive Meaning through the various Usages.

The QUOTATIONS are arranged Chronologically, from the Earliest Period to the Present Time.

\*.\* The Supplement separately, 4to. 12s.

An 8vo. Edition, without the Quotations, 15s. Half Russia, 20s. Russia, 24s.

"It is an admirable addition to our Lexicography, supplying a great desideratum, as exhibiting the history of each word, its birth, passage, and education, the changes that have befallen it, the company it has kept, and the corrections it has borne—by rich stores of quotation, all in chronological order. This is such a Dictionary as perhaps no other language could ever boast—*quarterly Review*."

**DR. RICHARDSON ON THE STUDY OF LANGUAGE**; an Exposition of Horne Tooke's Divisions of Purley. Temp. 8vo. 4s. 6d.

**DOMESTIC LIFE IN PALESTINE**. By M. E. ROGERS. Post 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**BY-ROADS AND BATTLE FIELDS IN PICARDY**; with Incidents and Gatherings by the Way between Ambletote and Ham; including Agincourt and Crécy. By G. M. MASONARI, M.A., Author of "A Pilgrimage into Dauphiné," &c. Illustrated. Super royal 8vo. 16s.

**THE BOAT AND THE CARAVAN**. A Family Tour through Egypt and Syria. New and cheaper Edition. Temp. 8vo. 5s. 6d.

**FRAGMENTS OF VOYAGES AND TRAVELS**. By Captain BARRY HALL, R.N., F.R.S. 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Series in 1 vol. complete. New Edition. Royal 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**THE GEM OF THORNEY ISLAND**; or, The Historical Associations of Westminster Abbey. By the Rev. J. RIMMAY, M.A. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.



**THE LIFE AND TIMES OF AONIO PALERIO**; or, a History of the Italian Reformers in the Sixteenth Century. Illustrated by Original Letters and unedited Documents. By M. YOUNG. 2 vols. 8vo. 1l. 12s.

**CLAUDE DE VESCI**; or, the Lost Inheritance. 2 vols. Fcap. 8vo. 9s.

**MAUD BINGLEY**. By FREDERICA GRAHAM. 2 vols. Fcap. 8vo. 12s.

**THE WAYFARERS**: or, Toil and Rest. By MRS. LATHAM. Fcap. 5s.

**THE MANSE OF MASTLAND**. Sketches: Serious and Humorous, in the Life of a Village Pastor in the Netherlands. Translated from the Dutch by THOMAS KEIGHTLEY, M.A. Post 8vo. 9s.

**THE HOME LIFE OF ENGLISH LADIES IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY**. By the Author of "Magdalen Stafford." *Second Edition, enlarged.* Fcap. 8vo. 6s. Calc. 9s. 6d.

**THE ROMANCE AND ITS HERO**. By the Author of "Magdalen Stafford." 2 vols. Fcap. 8vo. 12s.

**MAGDALEN STAFFORD**. A Tale. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

By THE LATE MRS. WOODROOFFE.

 **OTTAGE DIALOGUES**. *New Edition.* 12mo. 4s. 6d.

**SHADES OF CHARACTER**; or, the Infant Pilgrim. *Seventh Edition.* 2 vols. 12mo. 12s.

**MICHAEL KEMP**, the Happy Farmer's Lad. 8th Edition. 12mo. 4s.

**A SEQUEL TO MICHAEL KEMP**. *New Edition.* 12mo. 6s. 6d.

 **MONG THE TARTAR TENTS**; or, The Lost Fathers. A Tale. By ANNE BOWMAN, Author of "Esperanza," "The Boy Voyagers," &c. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 5s.

**CAVALIERS AND ROUND HEADS**. By J. G. EDGAR, Author of "Sea Kings and Naval Heroes." Illustrated by AMY BUTTS. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**SEA-KINGS AND NAVAL HEROES**. A Book for Boys. By J. G. EDGAR. With Illustrations by C. K. JOHNSON and C. KEENE. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**THE WHITE LADY AND UNDINE**

Translated from the German by the Hon. C. L. LATHAM. With numerous Illustrations. Fcap. 8vo. 5s. Or, separately, 2s. 6d. each.

### MRS. ALFRED GATTY'S POPULAR WORKS.

"We should not be doing justice to the highest class of juvenile fiction, were we to omit, as particularly worthy of attention at this season, the whole series of Mrs. Gatty's admirable books. They are quite *suo generis*, and deserve the widest possible circulation."—*Literary Characterist*.

 **ARABLES FROM NATURE** with Notes on the Natural History. Illustrated by W. HOLMAN HUGHES, OTTO SPECKLER, C. W. COPE, R.A., J. WARREN, W. MILLAIS, G. THOMAS, and J. CALDERON. 8vo. Ornamental cloth, 10s. 6d. Antique morocco elegant, 1l. 1s.

**PARABLES FROM NATURE**. 16mo. with Illustrations. *Tenth Edition.* 3s. 6d. Separately: First Series, 1s. 6d.; Second Series, 2s.

**RED SNOW**, and other Parables from Nature. Third Series, with Illustration. *Second Edition.* 16mo. 2s.

**WORLDS NOT REALIZED**. 16mo. *Third Edition.* 2s.

**PROVERBS ILLUSTRATED**. 16mo. with Illustrations. *Third Edition.* 2s.

\* \* These little works have been found useful for Sunday reading in the family circle and instructive and interesting to school children.

**AUNT JUDY'S TALES**. Illustrated by CLARA S. LANE. Fcap. 8vo. *Third Edition.* 3s. 6d.

**THE HUMAN FACE DIVINE**, and other Tales. With Illustrations by C. LANE. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**THE FAIRY GODMOTHERS**, and other Tales. *Third Edition.* Fcap. 8vo. with Frontispiece. 2s. 6d.

**LEGENDARY TALES**. With Illustrations by PHIZ. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**THE POOR INCUMBENT**. Fcap. 8vo. Sewed, 1s. Cloth, 1s. 6d.

**THE OLD FOLKS FROM HOME** or, a Holiday in Ireland in 1861. *Second Edition.* Post 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**THE LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF ROBINSON CRUSOE.** By DANIEL DEFOE. With 100 Illustrations by E. H. WEHNERT. Uniform with "Andersen's Tales." Small 3vo. Cloth, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.

**ANDERSEN'S TALES FOR CHILDREN.** Translated by A. WEHNERT. With 105 Illustrations by E. H. WEHNERT, W. THOMAS, and others. Small 3vo. Cloth, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.

**NURSERY CAROLS.** Illustrated with 120 Pictures. By LUDWIG RICHTER and OSCAR PFLEISCH. Imperial 16mo. Ornamental Binding. 3s. 6d., coloured, 6s.

**LITTLE MAGGIE AND HER BROTHER.** By MRS. G. HOOPER, Author of "Recollections of Mrs. Anderson's School," "Arbell," &c. With a Frontispiece. Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**GUESSING STORIES; or, the Surprising Adventures of the Man with the Extra Pair of Eyes.** A Book for Young People. By a Country Parson. Imperial 16mo. Cloth, gilt edges, 3s.

**THE CHILDREN'S PICTURE BOOK OF GOOD AND GREAT MEN.** Written expressly for Young People, and Illustrated with Fifty large Engravings. Super royal 16mo. Cloth, gilt edges, 3s. With Coloured Illustrations, 9s.

**THE CHILDREN'S PICTURE BOOK OF ENGLISH HISTORY.** Written expressly for Young People, and Illustrated with Sixty large Engravings. Super royal 16mo. Cloth, gilt edges, 3s. With Coloured Illustrations, 9s.

**THE CHILDREN'S BIBLE PICTURE BOOK.** Written expressly for Young People, and Illustrated with Eighty large Engravings. Third Edition. Super royal 16mo. Cloth, gilt edges, 3s. With Coloured Illustrations, 9s.

**THE CHILDREN'S PICTURE BOOK OF SCRIPTURE PARABLES AND BIBLE MIRACLES,** in 1 vol. Cloth, gilt edges, 3s. Coloured, 7s. 6d.

**THE CHILDREN'S PICTURE BOOK OF SCRIPTURE PARABLES.** By the Rev. J. LUSKINE CLARKE. With Sixteen large Illustrations. Super royal 16mo. Cloth, red edges, 9s. 6d. Coloured, with gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

**THE CHILDREN'S PICTURE BOOK OF BIBLE MIRACLES.** By the Rev. J. LUSKINE CLARKE, M.A. With Sixteen large Illustrations. Super royal 16mo. Cloth, red edges, 9s. 6d. Coloured, with gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

**THE CHILDREN'S BUNYAN'S PILGRIM'S PROGRESS.** With Sixteen large Illustrations. New Edition. Super royal 16mo. Cloth, red edges, 9s. 6d. Coloured, with gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

**THE CHILDREN'S PICTURE BOOK OF THE LIFE OF JOSEPH,** written in Simple Language. With Sixteen large Illustrations. Super royal 16mo. Cloth, red edges, 9s. 6d. Coloured, with gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

**THE LIFE OF CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS,** in Short Words. By SARAH CROMBIE. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. Also an Edition for Schools, 1s.

**THE LIFE OF MARTIN LUTHER,** in Short Words. By the same Author. Crown 8vo. 1s. 6d. Stiff cover, 1s.

**REDFIELD; or, a Visit to the Country.** A Story for Children. With Illustrations by Alston. Super royal 16mo. 2s. 6d. Coloured, 3s. 6d.

**NURSERY TALES.** By Mrs. MOTHERLY. With Illustrations by C. S. Lane. Imperial 16mo. 2s. 6d. Coloured, gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

**NURSERY POETRY.** By Mrs. MOTHERLY. With Eight Illustrations by C. S. Lane. Imperial 16mo. 2s. 6d. Coloured, gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

**POETRY FOR PLAY-HOURS.** By GERDA FAY. With Eight large Illustrations. Imperial 16mo. 3s. 6d. Coloured, gilt edges, 4s. 6d.

**VERY LITTLE TALES FOR VERY LITTLE CHILDREN.** In single Syllables of Four and Five letters. New Edition. Illustrated. 2 vols. 16mo. 4s. 6d. each, or in 1 vol. 3s.

**PROGRESSIVE TALES FOR LITTLE CHILDREN.** In words of One and Two Syllables. Forming the sequel to "Very Little Tales." New Edition. Illustrated. 2 vols. 16mo. 4s. 6d. each, or in 1 vol. 3s.



**THE LIGHTS OF THE WILL O' THE WISP.** Translated by Lady MAXWELL WALLACE. With a coloured Frontispiece. Imperial 16mo. Cloth, gilt edges, 5s.

**VOICES FROM THE GREEN-WOOD.** Adapted from the Original. By Lady MAXWELL WALLACE. With Illustrations. Imperial 16mo. 2s. 6d.

**PRINCESS ILSE: a Legend,** translated from the German. By Lady MAXWELL WALLACE. With Illustrations. Imperial 16mo. 2s. 6d.

**A POETRY BOOK FOR CHILDREN.** Illustrated with Thirty-seven highly-finished Engravings by C. W. COPE, R. A., HELMSLEY, PALMER, SKILL, THOMAS, and H. WEIR. *New Edition.* Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.



**LARK'S INTRODUCTION TO HERALDRY.**—Containing Rules for Blazoning and Marshalling Coats of Armour—Dictionary of Terms—Orders of Knighthood explained—Degrees of the Nobility and Gentry—Tables of Precedency; 48 Engravings, including upwards of 1,000 Examples, and the Arms of numerous Families. *Sixteenth Edition improved.* Small 8vo. 7s. 6d. Coloured, 18s.

**BOOK OF FAMILY CRESTS AND MOTTOES,** with *Four Thousand Engravings* of the Crests of the Peers, Baronets, and Gentry of England and Wales, and Scotland and Ireland. A Dictionary of Mottoes, &c. *Ninth Edition, enlarged.* 2 vols. small 8vo. 1l. 1s.

"Perhaps the best recommendation to its utility and correctness (in the main) is, that it has been used as a work of reference in the Heralds College. No wonder it sells."—*Spectator.*

**BOOK OF MOTTOES,** used by the Nobility, Gentry, &c. with Translations, &c. *New Edition, enlarged.* Small 8vo. Cloth gilt, 2s. 6d.

**A HANDBOOK OF MOTTOES BORNE BY THE NOBILITY, GENTRY, CITIES, PUBLIC COMPANIES, ETC.** Translated and Illustrated, with Notes and Quotations, by C. N. ELVIN, M.A. Small 8vo. 6s.

**GOTHIC ORNAMENTS;** being a Series of Examples of enriched Details and Accessories of the Architecture of Great Britain. Drawn from existing Authorities. By J. K. COLLING, Architect. Royal 4to. Vol I. 3l. 13s. 6d. Vol. II. 3l. 16s. 6d.

**DETAILS OF GOTHIC ARCHITECTURE,** Measured and Drawn from existing Examples. By J. K. COLLING, Architect. Royal 4to. 2 vols. 5l. 5s.

**THE ARCHITECTURAL HISTORY OF CHICHESTER CATHEDRAL,** with an Introductory Essay on the Fall of the Tower and Spire. By the Rev. J. J. WILLIS, M.A., F.R.S., &c., Jacksonian Professor in the University of Cambridge.—Of Boxgrove Priory, by the Rev. J. J. PETIT, M.A., F.S.A.—And of Shoreham Collegiate Church, together with the Collective Architectural History of the foregoing buildings, as indicated by their mouldings, by EDMUND SHARPE, M.A., F.R.I.B.A. Illustrated by one hundred Plates, Diagrams, Plans, and Woodcuts. Super royal 4to. 1l. 10s.

**ARCHITECTURAL STUDIES IN FRANCE.** By the Rev. J. L. PETIT, M.A. F.S.A. With Illustrations from Drawing by the Author and P. H. DELAMOTTE. Imperial 8vo. 2l. 2s.

**REMARKS ON CHURCH ARCHITECTURE.** With Illustrations. By the Rev. J. L. PETIT, M.A. 2 vols. 8vo. 1l. 1s.

**LECTURES ON CHURCH BUILDING:** with some Practical Remarks on Bells and Clocks. By E. B. DENISON, M.A. *Second Edition.* Rewritten and enlarged; with Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**A FEW NOTES ON THE TEMPLE ORGAN.** By EDMUND MACRORY, M.A. *Second Edition.* Super-royal 16mo. Half morocco, Roxburgh, 3s. 6d.

**SCUDAMORE ORGANS;** or, Practical Hints respecting Organs for Villages, Churches and small Chancels, on improved principles. By the Rev. JOHN BARO, M.A., Rector of Upton Scudamore, Wilts. With Designs by GEORGE EDMUND STREET, F.S.A. *Second Edition, revised.* 8vo. 6s.

**MEMOIRS OF MUSICK.** By the Hon. ROGER NORTH, Attorney-General James II. Now first printed from the original MS., and edited, with copious Notes, by Dr. E. F. RIMBAULT. Feap. 4to. half morocco, 1l. 10s.

**PRACTICAL REMARKS ON BELLS, FRIES AND RINGERS.** By the Rev. H. T. ELLACOMBE, M.A., F.A.S., Rector of Clyst St. George, Devonshire. *Second Edition,* with an Appendix on Chimes. Illustrated. 8vo. 3s.



**THE BELL**; its Origin, History, and Uses. By Rev. A. GATLY. 3s.

**PROCEEDINGS OF THE ARCHEOLOGICAL INSTITUTE AT NEWCASTLE, IN 1853.** With Numerous Engravings. 2 vols. 8vo. 2l. 2s.

**A HANDBOOK FOR VISITORS TO CAMBRIDGE.** By NORRIS DECK. Illustrated by 8 Steel Engravings, 97 Woodcuts, and a Map. Crown 8vo. 5s.

**CANTERBURY IN THE OLDEN TIME**: from the Municipal Archives and other Sources. By JOHN BRIST, F.S.A. With Illustrations. 3s.

**WEBSTER'S COMPLETE DICTIONARY OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE.** *New Edition*, revised and greatly enlarged, by CHAUNCEY H. GOODRICH, Professor in Yale College. 4to. (1624 pp.) 1l. 11s. 6d.; half calf, 2l.; calf, or half russias, 2l. 2s.; russias, 2l. 10s.

Though the circulation of Dr. WEBSTER'S celebrated Dictionary, in its various forms, in the United States, in England, and in every country where the English Language is spoken, may be counted by hundreds of thousands, it is believed that there are many persons to whom the book is yet unknown, and who, if seeking for a Dictionary which should supply all reasonable wants, would be at a loss to select one from the numerous competitors in the field.

In announcing this *New Edition*, the Proprietors desire to call attention to the features which distinguish it, and to put before those who are in want of such a book, the points in which it excels all other Dictionaries, and which render it the best that has as yet been issued for the practical purposes of daily use:—

1. Accuracy of Definition. 2. Pronunciation intelligibly marked. 3. Completeness. 4. Etymology. 5. Obsolete Words. 6. Uniformity in the Mode of Spelling. 7. Quotations. 8. Cheapness.

With the determination that the superiority of the work shall be fully maintained, and that it shall keep pace with the requirements of the age and the universal increase of education, the Proprietors have added to this *New Edition*, under the editorship of Professor GOODRICH,—

A Table of Synonyms. An Appendix of New Words. Table of Quotations, Words, Phrases, &c.

**WHIRLWINDS AND DUST-STORMS OF INDIA.** With numerous Illustrations drawn from Nature, bound separately; and an Addendum on Sanitary Measures required for European Soldiers in India. By P. F. H. BABBETTY, Surgeon, Bengal Army, Retired List. Large 8vo. With Illustrations, 8s. 6d.; without Illustrations, 5s.

Two transparent Wind Cards in Horn, adapted to the Northern and Southern Hemispheres, for the use of Sailors. 2s.

**TABLES OF INTEREST.** Enlarged and Improved; calculated at Five per Cent.; Showing at one view the Interest of any Sum, from £1 to £365: they are also carried on by hundreds to £1,000, and by thousands to £10,000, from one day to 365 days. To which are added, Tables of Interest, from one to 12 months, and from two to 13 years. Also Tables for calculating Commission on Sales of Goods or Banking Accounts, from  $\frac{1}{4}$  to 5 per Cent., with several useful additions, among which are Tables for calculating Interest on large sums for 1 day, at the several rates of 4 and 5 per Cent. to £100,000,000. By JOSEPH KING, of Liverpool. 24th Edition. With a Table showing the number of days from any one day to any other day in the Year. 8vo. 1l. 1s.

**LEGENDS AND LYRICS**, by ADELAIDE ANNE PROCTER. 6th Edition. Fcap. 8vo. 5s. Antique or best plain morocco, 10s. 6d.

*Second Series. Second Edition.* Fcap. 8vo. 5s.; antique or best plain morocco, 10s. 6d.

**THE LEGEND OF THE GOLDEN PRAYERS**, and other Poems. By C. F. ARNOLD, Author of "Moral Songs," &c. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.; antique or best plain morocco, 10s. 6d.

**VERSES FOR HOLY SEASONS.** By the Same Author. Edited by the Very Rev. W. F. HOOK, D.D. 4th Edition. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.; morocco, antique calf or morocco, 8s. 6d.

**NIGHTINGALE VALLEY**: a Collection of the Choicest Lyrics and Short Poems in the English Language. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.; morocco, antique calf or morocco, 10s. 6d.

**THE MONKS OF KILCREA**, and other Poems. Third Edition. Post 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**CHRISTOPHEROS, and other Poems.**

By the Ven. W. B. MAST, Archdeacon of  
Down. Crown 8vo. 6s.

**TEUTON. A Poem. By C. J. RIETH-**

MÜLLER. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**DRYOPE, and other Poems. By T.**

ASHE. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**POEMS. By THOMAS ASHE. Fcap.**

8vo. 5s.

**DAY AND NIGHT SONGS AND**

THE MUSIC MASTER, a Love Poem.

By WILLIAM ALLINGHAM. With Nine  
Illustrations. Fcap. 8vo. 6s. 6d.; mor-  
rocco, 11s. 6d.

**WILD THYME. By E. M. MITCHELL.**

Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**LYRICS AND IDYLLS. By GERDA**

FAY. Fcap. 8vo. 4s.

**PANSIES. By FANNY SUSAN WYVILL.**

Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**IO IN EGYPT, and other Poems.**

By R. GARNETT. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**THE DEFENCE OF GUENEVERE,**

and other Poems. Fcap. 8vo. By W.  
MORRIS. 5s.

**HERBERT'S PRIEST TO THE**

TEMPLE, or the Country Parson. Super  
royal 32mo. cloth, red edges, 2s.; morocco,  
or antique calf, 5s.

**DAVID MALLET'S POEMS. With**

Notes and Illustrations by F. DINSDALE,  
LL.D., F.S.A. *New Edition.* Post 8vo.  
10s. 6d.

**BALLADS AND SONGS OF YORK-**

SHIRE. Transcribed from private MSS.,  
rare Broad-sides, and scarce Publications;  
with Notes and a Glossary. By C. J. D.  
INGLEDEW, M.A., Ph.D., F.G.H.S., au-  
thor of "The History of North Allerton."  
Fcap. 8vo. 6s.

**PASSION WEEK. By the Editor of**

"Christmas Tyde." With 16 Illustrations  
from Albert Durer. Imp. 16mo. 7s. 6d.;  
antique morocco, 14s.

**PERCY'S RELIQUES OF ANCIENT**

ENGLISH POETRY. 3 vols. Sm. 8vo.  
15s. Half-bound, 18s. Antique calf, or  
morocco, 1l. 11s. 6d.

**ELLIS'S SPECIMENS OF EARLY**

ENGLISH POETRY. 3 vols. Sm. 8vo.  
15s. Half-bound, 12s. Antique calf, or  
morocco, 1l. 11s. 6d.

**THE BOOK OF ANCIENT BAL-**

LAD POETRY OF GREAT BRITAIN.

Historical, Traditional, and Romantic; with  
Modern Imitations, Translations, Notes  
and Glossary, &c. Edited by J. S. MOORE.  
*New and Improved Edition.* 8vo. Half-  
bound, 14s. Antique morocco, 21s.

**SHAKESPEARE'S TEMPEST. With**

Illustrations by BIRKET FOSTER, GUSTAVE  
DORE, FREDERICK SKILL, ALFRED SLADER,  
and GUSTAVE JANET. Crown 4to. Orna-  
mental cloth, 10s. 6d. Antique morocco  
elegant, 1l. 1s.

**THE PROMISES OF JESUS**

CHRIST. Illuminated by ALBERT H.  
WARREN, *Second Edition.* Ornamental  
cloth, 15s. Antique morocco elegant, 21s.

**CHRISTMAS WITH THE POETS:**

a Collection of English Poetry relating to  
the Festival of Christmas. Illustrated by  
BIRKET FOSTER, and with numerous initial  
letters and borders beautifully printed in  
gold and colours by EDMUND EVANS. *New  
and Improved Edition.* Super royal 8vo.  
Ornamental binding, 21s. Antique morocco,  
31s. 6d.

**THENÆ CANTABRIGIEN-**

SES. By C. H. COOPER, F.S.A.,  
and THOMPSON COOPER. Vol. I.  
1500—1585. 8vo. 18s. Vol II. 1586—  
1609. 8vo. 18s.

This work, in illustration of the biography  
of notable and eminent men who have been  
members of the University of Cambridge,  
comprehends notices of:—1. Authors. 2.  
Cardinals, archbishops, bishops, abbots,  
heads of religious houses, and other church  
dignitaries. 3. Statesmen, diplomatists,  
military and naval commanders. 4. Judges  
and eminent practitioners of the civil or  
common law. 5. Sufferers for religious or  
political opinions. 6. Persons distinguished  
for success in tuition. 7. Eminent phy-  
sicians and medical practitioners. 8. Artists,  
musicians, and heralds. 9. Heads of col-  
leges, professors, and principal officers of  
the university. 10. Benefactors to the uni-  
versity and colleges, or to the public at large.

**THE EARLY AND MIDDLE AGES**

OF ENGLAND. By C. H. PEARSON,  
M.A., Fellow of Oriel College, Oxford, and  
Professor of Modern History, King's Col-  
lege, London. 8vo. 12s.



**HISTORY OF ENGLAND**, from the Invasion of Julius Caesar to the End of the Reign of George II., by HUME and SMOLLETT. With the Continuation, to the Accession of Queen Victoria, by the Rev. T. S. HUGHES, B.D., late Canon of Peterborough. *New Edition*, containing Historical Illustrations, Autographs, and Portraits, copious Notes, and the Author's last Corrections and Improvements. In 18 vols. Crown 8vo. 4s. each.

Vols. I. to VI. (Hume's portion), 11. 4s.  
Vols. VII. to X. (Smollett's ditto), 16s.  
Vols. XI. to XVIII. (Hughes's ditto), 11. 12s.

**HISTORY OF ENGLAND**, from the Accession of George III. to the Accession of Queen Victoria. By the Rev. T. S. HUGHES, B.D. *New Edition*, almost entirely re-written. In 7 vols. 8vo. 3l. 13s. 6d.

**CHOICE NOTES FROM "NOTES AND QUERIES,"** by the Editor. Feap. 8vo. 5s. each.  
VOL. I.—HISTORY. VOL. II.—FOLK LORE.

**MASTER WACE'S CHRONICLE OF THE CONQUEST OF ENGLAND.** Translated from the Norman by Sir ALEXANDER MALET, Bart., H.B.M. Plenipotentiary, Frankfort. With Photograph Illustrations of the Bayeux Tapestry. Medium 4to. Half-morocco, Roxburgh, 2l. 2s.

**THE PRINCE CONSORT'S ADDRESSES ON DIFFERENT PUBLIC OCCASIONS.** "Beautifully printed by WHITTINGHAM. 4to. 10s. 6d.

**LIFE AND BOOKS; or, Records of Thought and Reading.** By J. F. BOYES, M.A. Feap. 8vo. 5s.; calf, 8s. 6d.

**LIFE'S PROBLEMS.** *Second Edition*, revised and enlarged. Feap. 5s.

**PARLIAMENTARY SHORT-HAND** (Official System). By THOMPSON COOPER. Feap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

This is the system *universally practised by the Government Official Reporters*. It has many advantages over the system ordinarily adopted, and has hitherto been inaccessible, except in a high-priced volume.

**GEOLOGY IN THE GARDEN; or, The Fossils in the Flint Pebbles.** With 136 Illustrations. By the Rev. HENRY ELLY, M.A. Feap. 8vo. 6s.; calf, 9s. 6d.

**THE PLEASURES OF LITERATURE.** By R. ARIS WILMOTT, Incumbent of Bear-Wood. *Fifth Edition*, enlarged. Feap. 8vo. 5s. Morocco, 10s. 6d.

**A POPULAR SKETCH OF THE ORIGIN AND PROGRESS OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE.** By the Rev. W. W. SKELAT, M.A. 12mo. 1s. 6d.

**HINTS TO MAID SERVANTS IN SMALL HOUSEHOLDS**, on Manners, Dress, and Duties. By MRS. MOTHERLY. Feap. 8vo. 1s. 6d.

**A WIFE'S HOME DUTIES; containing Hints to inexperienced Housekeepers.** Feap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**HALCYON: or Rod-Fishing in Clear Waters.** By HENRY WADE, Secretary to the Weardale Angling Association. With Coloured representations of the principal Flies, and other Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

## Sermons.

 **ARISH SERMONS.** By the Rev. M. F. SADLER, M.A., Vicar of Bridgewater. Author of the "Sacrament of Responsibility," and "The Second Adam and the New Birth." Vol. I. Advent to Trinity. Feap. 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**TWENTY-FOUR SERMONS ON CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE AND PRACTICE, AND ON THE CHURCH.** By C. J. BLOMFIELD, D.D., late Lord Bishop of London. (*Hitherto unpublished*.) 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**ING'S COLLEGE SERMONS.** By the Rev. E. H. PLUMPTRE, M.A., Divinity Professor. Feap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**TWENTY PLAIN SERMONS** for Country Congregations and Family Reading. By the Rev. A. GATTY, D.D., Vicar of Ecclesfield. Feap. 8vo. 5s.

**SERMONS.** By the Rev. A. GATTY, D.D., Vicar of Ecclesfield. 12mo. 3s.

**SERMONS PREACHED IN WESTMINSTER.** By the Rev. C. F. SERRITAS, M.A., Incumbent of Holy Trinity, Vauxhall-Bridge Road. Feap. 8vo. 6s.

**SERMONS TO A COUNTRY CONGREGATION—Advent to Trinity.** By the Rev. HARRISON COMLOS, M.A. 12mo. 6s.



**GOSPEL TRUTHS IN PAROCHIAL SERMONS FOR THE GREAT FESTIVALS.** By the Rev. J. Townson, M.A., Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**THE BIBLE AND ITS INTERPRETERS:** being the Substance of Three Sermons preached in the Parish Church, St. Ann, Wandsworth. By JAMES BOOTH, LL.D., Vicar of Stone, Buckinghamshire. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**FOUR SERMONS ON THE "COMFORTABLE WORDS" IN THE OFFICE FOR THE HOLY COMMUNION.** By ALEXANDER GOALEN, B.A. Fcap. 8vo. 2s.

**THE PRODIGAL SON.** Sermons by W. R. CLARK, M.A., Vicar of Taunton, S. Mary Magdalene. Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**PAROCHIAL SERMONS.** By the Rev. D. G. STACY, Vicar of Hornchurch, Essex. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**SERMONS SUGGESTED BY THE MIRACLES OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST.** By the Very Rev. DEAN HOOK. 2 vols. Fcap. 8vo. 12s.

**FIVE SERMONS PREACHED BEFORE THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD.** By the Very Rev. W. F. HOOK, D.D., Dean of Chichester. *Third Edition.* 3s.

**PLAIN PAROCHIAL SERMONS.** By the Rev. C. F. C. Pigott, B.A., late Curate of St. Michael's, Handsworth. Fcap. 8vo. 6s.

**OUR PRIVILEGES, RESPONSIBILITIES, AND TRIALS.** By the Rev. E. PHILLIPS, M.A. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**SERMONS, CHIEFLY PRACTICAL.** By the Rev. T. NUNNS, M.A. Edited by the Very Rev. W. F. HOOK, D.D., Dean of Chichester. Fcap. 8vo. 6s.

**SERMONS, Preached in the Parish Church of Godalming, Surrey,** by the Rev. E. J. BOYCE, M.A., Vicar. *Second Edition.* Fcap. 8vo. 6s.

**LIFE IN CHRIST.** By the Rev. J. LLEWELLYN DAVIES, M.A., Rector of Christ Church, Marylebone. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND;** its Constitution, Mission, and Trials. By the Rt. Rev. Bishop Broughton. Edited, with a Prefatory Memoir, by the Ven. Archdeacon HARRISON. 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**PLAIN SERMONS.** Addressed to a Country Congregation. By the late T. PLESCOWE, M.A. 1st and 3rd Series. Fcap. 8vo. 7s. 6d. each.

**OCCASIONAL SERMONS.** By a Member of the Church of England. Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**MISSIONARY SERMONS PREACHED AT HAGLEY.** Fcap. 3s. 6d.

**THE SUFFICIENCY OF CHRIST.** Sermons preached during the Reading Lenten Mission of 1860. Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**WESTMINSTER ABBEY SERMONS** for the Working Classes. Fcap. 8vo. *Authorized Edition.* 1858. 2s.; 1859. 2s. 6d.

**SERMONS PREACHED AT ST. PAUL'S CATHEDRAL.** *Authorized Edition.* 1859. Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

 **DAILY READINGS FOR A YEAR,** on the Life of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. By the Rev. PETER YOUNG, M.A. *Second Edition,* improved. 2 vols. Crown 8vo. 1l. 1s. Antique calf, 1l. 16s. Morocco, Hayday, 2l.

**A COMMENTARY ON THE GOSPELS** for the Sundays and other Holy Days of the Christian Year. By the Rev. W. DENTON, A.M., Worcester College Oxford, and Incumbent of St. Bartholomew's, Cripplegate. 8vo. Vol. I. Advent to Easter, 15s. Vol. II. Easter to the Sixteenth Sunday after Trinity, 14s.

**LIGHTS OF THE MORNING:** or Meditations for every Day in the Year From the German of FREDERIC ARNDT With a Preface by the Rev. W. C. MAGEE D.D. Fcap. 8vo. Advent to Whitsuntide 5s. 6d. Trinity, 5s. 6d.

**SHORT SUNDAY EVENING READINGS,** Selected and Abridged from various Authors by the Dowager Countess of Cawdor. In large type. 8vo. 5s.

**A COMPANION TO THE AUTHORIZED VERSION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT:** being Explanatory Notes together with Explanatory Observations and an Introduction. By the Rev. H. B. HALL, B.C.L. *Second and cheaper Edition* revised and enlarged. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**THE SECOND ADAM, AND THE NEW BIRTH;** or, the Doctrine of Baptism as contained in Holy Scripture. By the Rev. M. F. SADLER, M.A., Vicar of Bridgwater, Author of "The Sacrament of Responsibility." *Third Edition*, greatly enlarged. Fcap. 8vo. 4s. 6d.

**THE SACRAMENT OF RESPONSIBILITY;** or, Testimony of the Scripture to the teaching of the Church on Holy Baptism, with especial reference to the Cases of Infants, and Answers to Objections. *Sixth Edition.* 6d.

**THE ACTS AND WRITINGS OF THE APOSTLES.** By C. PIERRING CLARKE, M.A., late Curate of Teddington. Post 8vo. Vol. I., with Map, 7s. 6d.

**CIVILIZATION CONSIDERED AS A SCIENCE** in Relation to its Essence, its Elements, and its End. By GEORGE HARRIS, F.S.A., of the Middle Temple, Barrister at Law, Author of "The Life of Lord Chancellor Hardwicke." 8vo. 12s.

**THE WISDOM OF THE SON OF DAVID:** an Exposition of the First Nine Chapters of the Book of Proverbs. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**A HISTORY OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND** from the Accession of James II. to the Rise of the Bangorian Controversy in 1717. By the Rev. T. DEBARY, M.A. 8vo. 14s.

**A TREATISE ON METAPHYSICS IN CONNECTION WITH REVEALED RELIGION.** By the Rev. J. H. MACMAHON. 8vo. 14s.

**AIDS TO PASTORAL VISITATION,** selected and arranged by the Rev. H. B. BROWNING, M.A., Curate of St. George, Stamford. 8vo. 5s.

**A POPULAR PARAPHRASE OF ST. PAUL'S EPISTLE TO THE ROMANS,** with Notes. By the Rev. A. C. BROMHEAD, M.A. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**REMARKS ON CERTAIN OFFICES OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND,** popularly termed the Occasional Services. By the Rev. W. J. DAMPIER. 12mo. 5s.

**THE SYMPATHY OF CHRIST.** Six Readings for the Sundays in Lent, or for the Days of the Holy Week. By the Rev. W. J. DAMPIER, M.A., Vicar of Coggeshall. *Second Edition.* 18mo. 2s. 6d.

**THE SPIRIT OF THE HEBREW POLITRY.** By ISAAC TAYLOR, Esq., Author of "The Natural History of Enthusiasm," "Ultimate Civilization," &c. 8vo. 10s. 6d.

**ON PARTY SPIRIT IN THE ENGLISH CHURCH.** By the Rev. S. BOBBS. 12mo. 2s. 6d.

**PAPERS ON PREACHING AND PUBLIC SPEAKING.** By a Wykehamist. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

This volume is an enlargement and extension, with corrections, of the Papers which appeared in the "Guardian" in 1853-2.

**THE SPEAKER AT HOME.** Chapters on Public Speaking and Reading aloud, by the Rev. J. J. HALCOMBE, M.A., and on the Physiology of Speech, by W. H. STONE, M.A., M.B. *Second Edition.* Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**THE ENGLISH CHURCHMAN'S SIGNAL.** By the Writer of "A Plain Word to the Wise in Heart." Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**A PLAIN WORD TO THE WISE IN HEART** on our Duties at Church, and on our Prayer Book. *Fourth Edition.* Sewed, 1s. 6d.

**REGISTER OF PARISHIONERS WHO HAVE RECEIVED HOLY CONFIRMATION.** Arranged by WILLIAM FRASER, B.C.L., Vicar of Alton. Oblong 4to. 7s. 6d.; 10s. 6d.; 12s.

**READINGS ON THE MORNING AND EVENING PRAYER AND THE LITANY.** By J. S. BLUNT. *Second Edition, enlarged.* Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**CONFIRMATION.** By J. S. BLUNT, Author of "Readings on the Morning and Evening Prayer," &c. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**LIFE AFTER CONFIRMATION.** By the same Author. 18mo. 1s.

**WELCHMAN ON THE THIRTY-NINE ARTICLES OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND,** with Scriptural Proofs, &c. 18mo. 2s., or interleaved for Students, 5s.

**BISHOP JEWEL'S APOLOGY FOR THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND,** with his famous Epistle to the Council of Trent, and a Memoir. 32mo. 2s.



**THE BOOK OF PSALMS** (Prayer Book Version). With Short Headings and Explanatory Notes. By the Rev. **ERNEST HAWKINS, B.D.**, Prebendary of St. Paul's. *Second and cheaper Edition, revised and enlarged.* Fcap. 8vo. Cloth limp, red edges, 2s. 6d.

**FAMILY PRAYERS** : — containing Psalms, Lessons, and Prayers, for every Morning and Evening in the Week. By the Rev. **ERNEST HAWKINS, B.D.**, Prebendary of St. Paul's. *Eighth Edition.* Fcap. 8vo. 1s.; sewed, 9d.

**HOUSEHOLD PRAYERS ON SCRIPTURAL SUBJECTS**, for Four Weeks. With Forms for various occasions. By a Member of the Church of England. *Second Edition, enlarged.* 8vo. 4s. 6d.

**FORMS OF PRAYER ADAPTED TO EACH DAY OF THE WEEK.** For use in Families or Households. By the Rev. **JOHN JEBB, D.D.** 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**WALTON'S LIVES OF DONNE, WOTTON, HOOKER, HERBERT, AND SANDERSON.** A New Edition, to which is now added a Memoir of Mr. Isaac Walton, by **WILLIAM DOWLING, Esq.** of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-Law. With Illustrative Notes, numerous Portraits, and other Engravings, Index, &c. Crown 8vo. 10s. 6d. Calf antique, 15s. Morocco, 18s.

**THE LIFE OF MARTIN LUTHER.** By **H. WORSLEY, M.A.**, Rector of Easton, Suffolk. 2 vols. 8vo. 1l. 4s.

**THE CHURCH HYMNAL**, (with or without Psalms.) 12mo. Large Type, 1s. 6d. 18mo. 1s. 32mo. for Parochial Schools, 6d.

This book is now in use in every English Diocese, and is the *Authorized Book* in some of the Colonial Dioceses.

**THREE LECTURES ON ARCH-BISHOP CRANMER.** By the Rev. **C. J. BURTON, M.A.**, Chancellor of Carlisle. 12mo. 3s.

**CHURCH READING** : according to the Method advised by **THOMAS SHERIDAN.** By the Rev. **J. J. HALCOMBE, M.A.** 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**THE KAFIR, THE HOTTENTOT, AND THE FRONTIER FARMER.** Passages of Missionary Life from the Journals of the Ven. Archdeacon Merriman. Illustrated. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**LECTURES ON THE TINNEVELLY MISSIONS.** By the Rev. **Dr. CALDWELL**, of Edeyenkoody. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**THE "CRUISE OF THE BEACON."** A Narrative of a Visit to the Islands in Bass's Straits. By the Right Rev. the Bishop of Tasmania. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 5s.

\* \* \* Messrs. Bell and Daldy are agents for all the other Publications of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts.

**THE SWEET PSALMIST OF ISRAEL**; or, the Life of David, King of Israel; illustrated by his own Psalms, newly versified in various metres. By the Rev. **WILLIAM SHEPHERD, B.D.** Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**GILES WITHERNE**; or, The Reward of Disobedience. A Village Tale for the Young. By **RAVEN WITHERNE.** *New Edition, preparing.*

**THE DISORDERLY FAMILY**; or, the Village of R\*\*\*\*. A Tale for Young Persons. In Two Parts. By a Father. 6d.; Cloth, gilt edges, 1s.

By **THE REV. J. ERSKINE CLARKE,**  
of Derby.

 **HEART MUSIC**, for the Hearth-Ring; the Street-Walk; the Country Stroll; the Work-Hours; the Rest-Day; the Trouble-Time. *New Edition.* 1s. paper; 1s. 6d. cloth limp.

**THE GIANT'S ARROWS.** A Book for the Children of Working People. 16mo. 6d.; cloth, 1s.

**CHILDREN AT CHURCH.** Twelve Simple Sermons. 2 vols. 1s. each; 1s. 6d. cloth, gilt; or together in 1 vol. cloth gilt, 2s. 6d.

**LITTLE LECTURES FOR LITTLE FOLK.** 16mo. 1s.

**PLAIN PAPERS ON THE SOCIAL ECONOMY OF THE PEOPLE.** Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

No. 1. Recreations of the People.—No. 2. Penny Banks.—No. 3. Labourer's Clubs and Working Men's Refreshment Rooms.—No. 4. Children of the People. 6d. each.



## The Devotional Library.

Edited by the Very Rev. W. F. Hook, D.D., Dean of Chichester.

A Series of Works, original or selected from well-known Church of England Divines, published at the lowest price, and suitable, from their practical character and cheapness, for Parochial distribution.

**SHORT MEDITATIONS FOR EVERY DAY IN THE YEAR.** 2 vols. (1260 pages), 32mo. Cloth, 5s.; calf, gilt edges, 9s.; calf antique, 12s.

*In Separate Parts.*

ADVENT to LENT, cloth, 1s.; limp calf, gilt edges, 2s. 6d. LENT, cloth, 9d.; calf, 2s. 3d. EASTER, cloth, 9d.; calf, 2s. 3d. TRINITY, Part I. 1s.; calf, 2s. 6d. TRINITY, Part II. 1s.; calf, 2s. 6d.

•• Large Paper Edition, 4 vols. Fcap 8vo. Large type. 14s. Morocco, 30s.

**HELPS TO DAILY DEVOTION.**

32mo. Cloth, 8d. Containing:—

The Sum of Christianity, 1d.

Directions for Spending one Day Well,  $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

Helps to Self-Examination,  $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

Short Reflections for Morning and Evening, 2d.

Prayers for a Week, 2d.

**AIDS TO A HOLY LIFE.** First Series. 32mo. Cloth, 1s. 6d.; calf, gilt edges, 3s. 6d.; calf antique, 5s. Containing:—

Prayers for the Young. By Dr. Hook,  $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

Pastoral Address to a Young Communicant. By Dr. Hook.  $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

Helps to Self-Examination. By W. F. Hook, D.D.  $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

Directions for Spending One Day Well. By Archbishop Synge.  $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

Rules for the Conduct of Human Life. By Archbishop Synge. 1d.

The Sum of Christianity, wherein a short and plain Account is given of the Christian Faith; Christian's Duty; Christian Prayer; Christian Sacrament. By C. FOLIS. 1d.

Ejaculatory Prayer; or, the Duty of Offering up Short Prayers to God on all Occasions. By R. COOK. 2d.

Prayers for a Week. From J. SORRELL. 2d.

Companion to the Altar; being Prayers, Thanksgivings, and Meditations. Edited by Dr. Hook. Cloth, 6d.

•• Any of the above may be had for distribution at the prices affixed; they are arranged together as being suitable for Young Persons and for Private Devotion.

**THE CHRISTIAN TAUGHT BY THE CHURCH'S SERVICES.** (420 pages), royal 32mo. Cloth, 2s. 6d.; calf, gilt edges, 4s. 6d.; calf antique, 6s.

*In Separate parts.*

ADVENT TO TRINITY, cloth, 1s.; limp calf, gilt edges, 2s. 6d. TRINITY, cloth, 8d.; calf, 2s. 2d. MINOR FESTIVALS, 8d.; calf, 2s. 2d.

•• Large Paper Edition. Fcap. 8vo. Large type. 6s. 6d. Calf antique, or morocco, 11s. 6d.

**HALL'S SACRED APHORISMS.**

Selected and arranged with the Texts to which they refer, by the Rev. R. B. EXTON, M.A. 32mo. cloth, 9d.; limp calf, gilt edges, 2s. 3d.

**DEVOUT MUSINGS ON THE BOOK**

OF PSALMS. 2 vols. 32mo. Cloth, 5s.; calf, gilt edges, 9s.; calf antique, 12s. Or, in four parts, price 1s. each; limp calf, gilt edges, 2s. 6d.

**AIDS TO A HOLY LIFE.** Second SERIES. 32mo. Cloth, 2s.; calf, gilt edges, 4s.; calf antique, 5s. 6d. Containing:—

Holy Thoughts and Prayers, arranged for Daily Use on each Day of the Week. 3d.

The Retired Christian exercised on Divine Thoughts and Heavenly Meditations. By Bishop KEN. 3d.

Penitential Reflections for the Holy Season of Lent, and other Days of Fasting and Abstinence during the Year. 6d.

The Crucified Jesus; a Devotional Commentary on the XXII. and XXIII. Chapters of St. Luke. By A. HORSECK, D.D. 3d.

Short Reflections for every Morning and Evening during the Week. By N. SPENCER, 2d.

The Sick Man Visited, or, Meditations and Prayers for the Sick Room. By N. SPENCER. 3d.

•• These are arranged together as being suitable for Private Meditation and Prayer: they may be had separately at the prices affixed.

**DEVOTIONS FOR DOMESTIC USE.** 32mo. Cloth, 2s.; calf, gilt edges, 4s.; calf antique, 5s. 6d. Containing:—

The Common Prayer Book the best Companion in the Family as well as in the Temple. 3d.

Litanies for Domestic Use. 2d.

Family Prayers; or, Morning and Evening Services for every Day in the Week. By the Bishop of Salisbury; cloth, 6d.; calf, 2s.

Bishop HALL'S Sacred Aphorisms. Selected and arranged with the Texts to which they refer. By the Rev. R. B. EXTON, M.A.; cloth, 9d.

\* \* These are arranged together as being suitable for Domestic Use; but they may be had separately at the prices affixed.

**THE HISTORY OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST;** in Three Parts, with suitable Meditations and Prayers. By W. READING, M.A. 32mo. Cloth, 2s.; calf, gilt edges, 4s.; calf antique, 5s. 6d.

**THE CHURCH SUNDAY SCHOOL HYMN BOOK.** 32mo. cloth, 8d.; calf, gilt edges, 2s. 6d.

\* \* A Large Paper Edition, for Prizes, &c. 1s. 6d.; calf, gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

**SHORT MEDITATIONS FOR EVERY DAY IN THE YEAR.** Edited by the Very Rev. W. F. HOOK, D.D. *New Edition.* 4 vols. fcap. 8vo., large type, 14s.; morocco, 30s.

**THE CHRISTIAN TAUGHT BY THE CHURCH'S SERVICES.** Edited by the Very Rev. W. F. HOOK, D.D. *New Edition,* fcap. 8vo. large type, 6s. 6d. Antique calf, or morocco, 11s. 6d.

**HOLY THOUGHTS AND PRAYERS,** arranged for Daily Use on each Day of the Week, according to the stated Hours of Prayer. *Fifth Edition,* with additions. 16mo. Cloth, red edges, 2s.; calf, gilt edges, 3s.

**A COMPANION TO THE ALTAR.** Being Prayers, Thanksgivings, and Meditations, and the Office of the Holy Communion. Edited by the Very Rev. W. F. HOOK, D.D. *Second Edition.* Handsomely printed in red and black. 32mo. Cloth, red edges, 2s. Morocco, 3s. 6d.

**THE CHURCH SUNDAY SCHOOL HYMN BOOK.** Edited by W. F. HOOK, D.D. *Large Paper.* Cloth, 1s. 6d.; calf, gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

\* \* For cheap editions of the above Five Books, see List of the Devotional Library.

## Periodicals.

**NOTES AND QUERIES:** a Medium of Intercommunication for Literary Men, Artists, Antiquaries, Genealogists, &c.

Published every Saturday. 4to. 4d. Stamped, 5d.

Vols. I. to XII. Second Series, now ready, 10s. 6d. each.

\* \* General Index to the First Series, 5s.

————— Second Series, 5s.

**THE GOSPEL MISSIONARY.** Published for the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, Monthly at ½d. Vols. II. to XI. in cloth, 1s. each. (Vol. I. is out of print.)

**CHURCH IN THE COLONIES,** consisting chiefly of Journals by the Colonial Bishops of their Progress and Special Visitations. Published occasionally at prices varying from 2d. to 1s. 6d. each. Nos. 1 to 37 are already published.

**MISSIONS TO THE HEATHEN;** being Records of the Progress of the Efforts made by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts for the Conversion of the Heathen. Published occasionally in a cheap form for distribution, at prices varying from 1d. to 1s. 6d. each. Nos. 1 to 43 are already published.

**THE MISSION FIELD:** a Monthly Record of the Proceedings of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel. Vols. II. to VI. post 8vo. 3s. each. (Vol. I. is out of print.) Continued in Numbers, 2d. each.

**THE MONTHLY MEDLEY FOR HAPPY HOMES.** A New Miscellany for Children. Conducted by the Rev. J. ERSKINE CLARKE. Price 1d. Volumes for 1860 and 1861, 1s. 6d. each.

**THE PARISH MAGAZINE.** Edited by J. ERSKINE CLARKE, M.A., Derby. Monthly, Price 1d. Volumes for 1859, 1860, and 1861, 1s. 6d. and 2s. each.



## Educational Books.

### **Bibliotheca Classica.**

A Series of Greek and Latin Authors. With English Notes. 8vo. Edited by various Scholars, under the direction of G. LONG, Esq., M.A., Classical Lecturer of Brighton College; and the late Rev. A. J. MACLEANE, M.A., Head Master of King Edward's School, Bath.

 **ÆSCHYLUS.** By F. A. PALEY, M.A. 18s.

**CICERO'S ORATIONS.** Edited by G. LONG, M.A. 4 vols. Vol. I. 16s.; Vol. II. 14s.; Vol. III. 16s.; Vol. IV. 18s.

**DEMOSTHENES.** By R. WHISTON, M.A., Head Master of Rochester Grammar School. Vol. I. 16s. Vol. II. *preparing*.

**EURIPIDES.** By F. A. PALEY, M.A. 3 vols. 16s. each.

**HERODOTUS.** By J. W. BLAKESLEY, B.D., late Fellow and Tutor of Trinity College, Cambridge. 2 vols. 32s.

**HESIOD.** By F. A. PALEY, M.A. 10s. 6d.

**HORACE.** By A. J. MACLEANE, M.A. 13s.

**JUVENAL AND PERSIUS.** By A. J. MACLEANE, M.A. 14s.

**SOPHOCLES.** By F. H. BLAYDES, M.A. Vol. I. 18s. Vol. II. *preparing*.

**TERENCE.** By E. St. J. PARRY, M.A. Balliol College, Oxford. 13s.

**VIRGIL.** By J. CONINGTON, M.A., Professor of Latin at Oxford. Vol. I. containing the *Bucolics* and *Georgics*. 12s. Vol. II. *in the press*.

**PLATO.** By W. H. THOMPSON, M.A. Vol. I. [*Preparing*].

### **Grammar-School Classics.**

A Series of Greek and Latin Authors. Newly Edited, with English Notes for Schools. Fcap. 8vo.

 **CAESARIS COMMENTARII DE BELLO GALLICO.** *Second Edition.* By G. LONG, M.A. 5s. 6d.

**CAESAR DE BELLO GALLICO.** Books 1 to 3. With English Notes for Junior Classes. By G. LONG, M.A. 2s. 6d.

**M. TULLII CICERONIS CATO MAJOR.** *Sive de Senectute, Laelius, Sive de Amicitia, et Epistulae Selectae.* By G. LONG, M.A. 4s. 6d.

**QUINTI HORATII FLACCI OPERA OMNIA.** By A. J. MACLEANE. 6s. 6d.

**P. OVIDII NASONIS FASTORUM LIBRI SEX.** By F. A. PALEY. 5s.

**C. SALLUSTII CRISPI CATILINA ET JUGURTHA.** By G. LONG, M.A. 5s.

**TACITI GERMANIA ET AGRICOLA.** By P. FROST, M.A. 3s. 6d.

**XENOPHONTIS ANABASIS,** with Introduction; Geographical and other Notes, Itinerary, and Three Maps compiled from recent surveys. By J. F. Macmichael, B.A. *New Edition.* 5s.

**XENOPHONTIS CYROPAEDIA.** By G. M. GORDON, M.A., late Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. 6s.

*Uniform with the above.*

**THE NEW TESTAMENT IN GREEK.** With English Notes and Prefaces by J. F. Macmichael, B.A. 750 pages. 7s. 6d.

### **Cambridge Greek and Latin Texts.**

This Series is intended to supply for the use of Schools and Students cheap and accurate editions of the Classics, which shall be superior in mechanical execution to the small German editions now current in this country, and more convenient in form.

The texts of the *Bibliotheca Classica* and *Grammar-School Classics*, so far as they have been published, will be adopted. These editions have taken their place amongst scholars as valuable contributions to the Classical Literature of this country, and are admitted to be good examples of the judicious and practical nature of English scholarship; and as the editors have formed their texts from a



careful examination of the best editions extant, it is believed that no texts better for general use can be found.

The volumes will be well printed at the Cambridge University Press, in a 16mo. size, and will be issued at short intervals.



**ÆSCHYLUS**, ex novissima recensione F. A. PALEY. 3s.

**CÆSAR DE BELLO GALLICO**, ex recensione G. LONG, A.M. 2s.

**CICERO, DE SENECTUTE ET DE AMICITIA ET EPISTOLÆ SELECTÆ**, ex recensione G. LONG, A.M. 1s. 6d.

**EURIPIDES**, ex recensione F. A. PALEY, A.M. 3 vols. 3s. 6d. each.

**HERODOTUS**, ex recensione J. W. BLAKESLEY, S.T.B. 2 vols. 7s.

**HORATIUS**, ex recensione A. J. MACLEANE, A.M. 2 s. 6d.

**LUCRETIUS**, recognovit H. A. J. MUNRO, A.M. 2s. 6d.

**THUCYDIDES**, ex recensione J. G. DONALDSON, S.T.P. 2 vols. 7s.

**VERGILIUS**, ex recensione J. CO-NINGTON, A.M. 3s. 6d.

**XENOPHONTIS ANABASIS**, ex recensione J. F. MACMICHAEL, B.A. [*Shortly*].

**NOVUM TESTAMENTUM GRAECUM TEXTUS STEPHANICI, 1550.** Accedunt variae Lectiones editionum Bezae, Elzeviri, Lachmanni Tischendorfii, Tregellesii, curante F. H. SCRIVENER, A.M. 4s. 6d.

Also, on 4to writing paper, for MSS. Notes. Half bound, gilt top, 12s.

### Foreign Classics.

With English Notes for Schools. Uniform with the *Grammar School Classics*. Fcap. 8vo.



**AVENTURES DE TELEMAQUE**, par FENELON. Edited by C. J. DELILLE. *Second Edition, revised.* 4s. 6d.

**HISTOIRE DE CHARLES XII.** par VOLTAIRE. Edited by L. DIREY. *Second Edition, revised.* 3s. 6d.

**SELECT FABLES OF LA FONTAINE.** Edited by F. GASE, M.A. *Second Edition, revised.* 3s.

"None need now be afraid to introduce this eminently French Author, either on account of the difficulty of translating him, or the occasional licence of thought and expression in which he indulges. The renderings of idiomatic passages are unusually good, and the purity of English perfect."—*Athenæum*.

**PICCIOLA**, by X. B. SAINTINE. Edited by Dr. DUMÉNIL. 3s. 6d.

This interesting story has been selected with the intention of providing for schools and young persons a good specimen of contemporary French literature, free from the solecisms which are frequently met with in writers of a past age.

**THE WALLENSTEIN OF SCHILLER**, with Notes by Dr. A. BUCHHEIM. [*Immediately*].

### Classical Tables. 8vo.



**MOTABILIA QUEDAM:** or, the principal tenses of such Irregular Greek Verbs and such Elementary Greek, Latin, and French Constructions, as are of constant occurrence. 1s. 6d.

**GREEK ACCIDENCE.** By the Rev. P. FROST, M.A. 1s.

**LATIN ACCIDENCE.** By the Rev. P. FROST, M.A. 1s.

**LATIN VERSIFICATION.** 1s.

**THE PRINCIPLES OF LATIN SYNTAX.** 1s.

**HOMERIC DIALECT:** its leading Forms and Peculiarities. By J. S. BAIRD, T.C.D. 1s. 6d.

**A CATALOGUE OF GREEK VERBS, IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE;** their leading formations, tenses in use, and dialectic inflexions; with a copious Appendix, containing Paradigms for conjugation, Rules for formation of tenses, &c. &c. By J. S. BAIRD, T.C.D. *New Edition, revised.* 3s. 6d.

**RICHMOND RULES TO FORM THE OVIDIAN DISTICH.** &c. By J. TATE, M.A. *New Edition, revised.* 1s. 6d.



**AN ATLAS OF CLASSICAL GEOGRAPHY,** containing 24 Maps; constructed by W. HUGHES, and edited by G. LONG. *New Edition, with coloured outlines, and an Index of Places.* 12s. 6d.

**A GRAMMAR SCHOOL ATLAS OF CLASSICAL GEOGRAPHY.** The Maps constructed by W. HUGHES, and edited by G. LONG. Imp. 8vo. 5s.

**FIRST CLASSICAL MAPS,** with Chronological Tables of Grecian and Roman History, Tables of Jewish Chronology, and a Map of Palestine. By the Rev. J. TATE, M.A. *Third Edition.* Imp. 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**THE CHOEOPHORAE OF ÆSCHYLUS AND ITS SCHOLIA.** Revised and interpreted by J. F. DAVIES, Esq., B.A., Trinity College, Dublin. 8vo. [*In the press.*]

**A LATIN GRAMMAR.** By T. HAWTH KEY, M.A., F.R.S., Professor of Comparative Grammar, and Head Master of the Junior School, in University College. *Third Edition, revised.* Post 8vo. 8s.

**A SHORT LATIN GRAMMAR,** for Schools. By T. H. KEY, M.A., F.R.S. *Third Edition.* Post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**LATIN ACCIDENCE.** Consisting of the Forms, and intended to prepare boys for Key's Short Latin Grammar. Post 8vo. 2s.

**RULES FOR THE GENDERS OF LATIN NOUNS,** and the Perfects and Supines of Verbs; with Hints on construing, &c. By H. HAINES, M.A. 1s. 6d.

**MATERIALS FOR LATIN PROSE COMPOSITION.** By the Rev. P. FROST, M.A., St. John's College, Cambridge. *Second Edition.* 12mo. 2s. 6d. Key, 4s.

**THE WORKS OF VIRGIL,** closely rendered into English Rhythm, and Illustrated from British Poets of the 16th, 17th, and 18th Centuries. By the Rev. R. C. SINGLETON, M.A. 2 vols. Post 8vo. 18s.

**QUINTUS HORATIUS FLACCUS.** Illustrated with 50 Engravings from the antique. Fcap. 8vo. 5s. Morocco, 9s.

**SELECTIONS FROM OVID:** Amores, Tristia, Heroides, Metamorphoses. With English Notes, by the Rev. A. J. MACLEANE, M.A. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**SABRINAE COROLLA IN HORTULIS REGIAE SCHOLAE SALOPIENSIS** contexuerunt tres viri floribus legendis. *Latine Aitona.* 8vo. 12s. Morocco, 21s.

**A FIRST CHEQUE BOOK FOR LATIN VERSE MAKERS.** By the Rev. F. GRIFFITHS, Stamford Free Grammar School. 1s. 6d. Key, 3s. 6d.

This little volume contains about 60 sets of verses, graduated in difficulty;—the exercise is to be turned out by the Master, and the paper is to be handed up by the boy when he has written the Latin Version underneath.

**REDDENDA; or Passages with Parallel Hints for translation into Latin Prose and Verse.** By the Rev. F. L. GRIFFITHS, Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.

**AUXILIA GRAECA:** containing Forms of Parsing and the Greek Trees, the Greek Prepositions, Rules of Accentuation, Greek Idioms, &c. &c. By the Rev. H. FOWLER, M.A. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

**RUDIMENTARY ART INSTRUCTION** for Artisans and others, and for Schools. **FREEHAND OUTLINE.** Part I. OUTLINE FROM OUTLINE, or from the Flat. 3s. Part II. OUTLINE FROM OBJECTS, or from the Round. 4s. By JOHN BELL, Sculptor. Oblong 4to.

**A GRADUATED SERIES OF EXERCISES IN ELEMENTARY ALGEBRA,** with an Appendix containing Papers of Miscellaneous Examples. Designed for the use of Schools. By the Rev. G. F. WRIGHT, M.A., Mathematical Master at Wellington College. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**THE ELEMENTS OF EUCLID.** Books I.—VI. XI. 1—21; XII. 1, 2; a new text, based on that of Simson, with Exercises. Edited by H. J. HOSKIN, late Mathematical Master of Westminster School. Fcap. 8vo. 4s. 6d.

**A GRADUATED SERIES OF EXERCISES ON THE ELEMENTS OF EUCLID:** Books I.—VI.; XI. 1—21; XII. 1, 2. Selected and arranged by HENRY J. HOSKIN, M.A. 12mo. 1s.

**THE ENUNCIATIONS AND FIGURES BELONGING TO THE PROPOSITIONS IN THE FIRST SIX AND PART OF THE ELEVENTH BOOKS OF EUCLID'S ELEMENTS,** (usually read in the Universities, & prepared for Students in Geometry. By the Rev. J. REYSE, D.D. *New Edition.* Fcap. 8vo. 1s. On cards, in case, 5s. 6d.; without the Figures, 6s.



## A NEW FRENCH COURSE, BY MONS.

F. E. A. GASC, M.A.

*French Master at Brighton College.*

 LE PETIT COMPAGNON: a French Talk-book for Little Children. With numerous woodcuts. 16mo. 3s. 6d. [Shortly.]

FIRST FRENCH BOOK; being a New, Practical, and Easy Method of Learning the Elements of the French Language. *New Edition.* Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d.

FRENCH FABLES, for Beginners, in Prose, with an Index of all the Words at the end of the Work. Fcap. 8vo. 2s.

SECOND FRENCH BOOK; being a Grammar and Exercise Book, on a new and practical plan, exhibiting the chief peculiarities of the French Language, as compared with the English, and intended as a sequel to the "First French Book." Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

A KEY TO THE FIRST AND SECOND FRENCH BOOKS. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

HISTOIRES AMUSANTES ET INSTRUCTIVES; or, Selections of Complete Stories of the best French Authors, who have written for the Young. With English Notes. *New Edition.* Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

PRACTICAL GUIDE TO MODERN FRENCH CONVERSATION: containing:—I. The most current and useful Phrases in Every-day Talk; II. Everybody's Necessary Questions and Answers in Travel-Talk. Fcap. 2s. 6d.

FRENCH POETRY FOR THE YOUNG. With English Notes, and preceded by a few plain Rules of French Prosody. Fcap. 8vo. 2s.

MATERIALS FOR FRENCH PROSE COMPOSITION; or, Selections from the best English Prose Writers. With copious Foot Notes, and Hints for Idiomatic Renderings. *New Edition.* Fcap. 8vo. 4s. 6d. Key, 6s.

LE NOUVEAU TRESOR: or, French Student's Companion: designed to facilitate the Translation of English into French at Sight. *Thirteenth Edition*, with additions. By M. E\*\*\* S\*\*\*\*. 12mo. Roan, 3s. 6d.

 THE FRENCH DRAMA; being a Selection of the best Tragedies and Comedies of MOLIÈRE, RACINE, P. CORNEILLE, T. CORNEILLE, and VOLTAIRE. With Arguments in English at the head of each scene, and Notes, Critical and Explanatory, by A. GOMBERT. 12mo. Sold separately at 1s. each. Half-bound, 1s. 6d. each.

## COMEDIES BY MOLIÈRE.

Le Misanthrope.  
L'Avare.  
Le Bourgeois Gentilhomme.  
Le Tartuffe.  
Le Malade Imaginaire.  
Les Femmes Savantes.  
Les Fourberies de Scapin.  
Le Précieuses Ridicules.  
L'Ecole des Femmes.  
L'Ecole des Maris.  
Le Médecin Malgré Lui.  
M. de Pourceaugnac.  
Amphitryon.

## TRAGEDIES, &amp;c. BY RACINE.

La Thébaïde, ou les Frères ennemis.  
Alexandre le Grand.  
Andromaque.  
Les Plaideurs, (Com.)  
Britannicus.  
Bérénice.  
Bajazet.  
Mithridate.  
Iphigénie.  
Phédre.  
Esther.  
Athalie.

## TRAGEDIES, &amp;c. BY P. CORNEILLE.

Le Cid.  
Horace.  
Cinna.  
Polyeucte.  
Pompée.

## BY T. CORNEILLE.

Ariane.

## PLAYS BY VOLTAIRE.

Brutus.  
Zaire.  
Alzire.  
Orestes.  
Le Fanatisme.  
Mérope.  
La Mort de César.  
Semiramis.

## HANDBOOK OF THE SLIDE

RULE: showing its applicability to Arithmetic, including Interest and Annuities; Mensuration, including Land Surveying. With numerous Examples and useful Tables. By W. H. BAYLEY, H. M. East India Civil Service. 12mo. 6s.



**A TABLE OF ANTI-LOGARITHMS;**

containing to seven places of decimals, natural numbers, answering to all Logarithms from '00001 to '99999; and an improved table of Gauss' Logarithms, by which may be found the Logarithm of the sum or difference of two quantities. With an Appendix, containing a Table of Annuities for three Joint Lives at 3 per cent. Carlisle. By H. E. FILIPOWSKI. *Third Edition*. 8vo. 15s.

**THE MECHANICS OF CON-**

**STRUCTION**; including the Theories on the Strength of Materials, Roofs, Arches, and Suspension Bridges. With numerous Examples. By STEPHEN FENWICK, Esq., of the Royal Military Academy, Woolwich. 8vo. 12s.

**A TEST-BOOK FOR STUDENTS:**

Examination Papers for Students preparing for the Universities or for Appointments in the Army and Civil Service, and arranged for General Use in Schools. By the Rev. THOMAS STANTIAL, M.A., Head Master of the Grammar School, Bridgwater. Part I.—History and Geography, 2s. 6d. Part II.—Language and Literature, 2s. 6d. Part III.—Mathematical Science, 2s. 6d. Part IV.—Physical Science, 1s. 6d. Or in 1 vol., Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**TABLES OF COMPARATIVE**

**CHRONOLOGY**, illustrating the division of Universal History, into Ancient, Mediæval, and Modern History; and containing a System of Combinations, distinguished by a particular type, to assist the Memory in retaining Dates. By W. E. BICKMORE, and the Rev. C. BICKMORE, M.A. *Third Edition*. 4to. 5s.

**A COURSE OF HISTORICAL AND**

**CHRONOLOGICAL INSTRUCTION.** By W. E. BICKMORE. 2 Parts. 12mo. 3s. 6d.

**A PRACTICAL SYNOPSIS OF**

**ENGLISH HISTORY**: or, a General Summary of Dates and Events for the Use of Schools, and Candidates for Public Examinations. By ARTHUR BOWEN. *Third Edition*, enlarged. 8vo. 2s.

**THE STUDENT'S TEXT-BOOK OF**

**ENGLISH AND GENERAL HISTORY**, from B. C. 100 to the present time. With Genealogical Tables, and a Sketch of the English Constitution. By D. BEALE. *Sixth Edition*. Post 8vo. Sewed, 2s. Cloth, 2s. 6d.

"This is very much in advance of most works we have seen devoted to similar purposes. We can award very high praise to a volume which may prove invaluable to teachers and taught."—*Athenæum*.

**THE ELEMENTS OF THE ENG-**

**LISH LANGUAGE FOR SCHOOLS AND COLLEGES.** By ERNEST ADAMS, Ph. D. University College School. *New Edition*, enlarged. Post 8vo. [*Immediately*].

**THE GEOGRAPHICAL TEXT-**

**BOOK**; a Practical Geography, calculated to facilitate the Study of that Useful Science, by a constant reference to the Blank Maps. By M. F. S. . . . . 12mo. 2s. II. The Blank Maps done up separately, 4to. 2s. coloured.

**THE 1862 EDITION OF UNDER**

**GOVERNMENT**: an Official Key to the Civil Service, and Guide for Candidates seeking Appointments under the Crown. By J. C. PARRINSON, Chief Accountant's Office, Inland Revenue, Somerset House. Cr. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**GOVERNMENT EXAMINATIONS;**

being a Companion to "Under Government," and a Guide to the Civil Service Examinations. By J. C. PARRINSON. Cr. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

**THE MANUAL OF BOOK-KEEP-**

**ING.** By an Experienced Clerk. 12mo. *Eighth Edition*. 4s.

**DOUBLE ENTRY ELUCIDATED.**

By B. W. FOSTER. 4to. 3s. 6d.

**PENMANSHIP.** Theoretical and Prac-

tical, Illustrated and Explained. By B. F. FOSTER. 12mo. *New Edition*. 2s. 6d.

**GOLDSMITH'S (J.) COPY BOOKS:**

five sorts, large, text, round, small, and mixed. Post 4to. on fine paper. 6s. per dozen.

**THE YOUNG LADIES' SCHOOL**

**RECORD**: or, Register of Studies and Conduct. 12mo. 6d.

**A SHORT EXPLANATION OF THE**

**EPISTLES AND GOSPELS OF THE CHRISTIAN YEAR**, with Questions for Schools. Royal 32mo. 2s. 6d.; calf, 4s. 6d.

**MANUAL OF ASTRONOMY: a**

Popular Treatise on Descriptive, Physical, and Practical Astronomy. By JAMES DREW, F.R.A.S. *Second Edition*. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.

**THE FIRST BOOK OF BOTANY.**

Being a Plain and Brief Introduction to that Science, for Schools and Young Persons. By MRS. LEECHES. Illustrated with 36 Wood Engravings. *Second Edition*. 16mo. 1s.

**A HANDY BOOK OF THE CHE-**

**MISTRY OF SOILS.** By JAMES SCOTTES, M.B. Crown 8vo. [*In the press*].

ENGLISH POETRY FOR CLASSICAL SCHOOLS; or, *Florilegium Poeticum Anglicanum*. 12mo. 1s. 6d.

HINTS AND HELPS FOR YOUTHS LEAVING SCHOOL. By the Rev. J. S. GILBERTDALE, M.A. Fcap. 8vo. 5s.; calf, 8s. 6d.

*Bell and Daldy's Illustrated School Books.* Royal 16mo.



SCHOOL PRIMER. 6d.

SCHOOL READER. 1s.

[Shortly.]

POETRY BOOK FOR SCHOOLS. 1s.

*Course of Instruction for the Young.*  
By Horace Grant.



EXERCISES FOR THE IMPROVEMENT OF THE SENSES; for Young Children. 16mo. 1s. 6d.

GEOGRAPHY FOR YOUNG CHILDREN. *New Edition.* 16mo. 2s.

ARITHMETIC FOR YOUNG CHILDREN. *New Edition.* 16mo. 1s. 6d.

ARITHMETIC. Second Stage. *New Edition.* 16mo. 3s.



LARKE'S COMMERCIAL COPY BOOKS. Price 4d. A liberal allowance to Schools and Colleges.

The FIRST COPY-BOOK contains *elementary turns*, with a broad mark like a T, which divides a well-formed turn into two equal parts. This exercise enables the learner to judge of *form, distance, and proportion*.

The SECOND contains *large-hand letters*, and the means by which such letters may be properly combined; the joinings in writing being probably as difficult to learn as the form of each character. This book also gives the whole alphabet, not in separate letters, but rather as one *word*; and, at the end of the alphabet, the difficult letters are repeated so as to render the writing of the pupil more thorough and *uniform*.

The THIRD contains additional *large-hand practice*.

The FOURTH contains *large-hand words*, commencing with *unflourished capitals*; and the words being short, the capitals in question receive the attention they demand. As Large, and Extra Large-text, to which the fingers of the learner are not equal, have been dispensed with in this series, the popular objection of having *too many Copy-books* for the pupil to drudge through, is now fairly met. When letters are very large, the scholar cannot compass them without stopping to change the position of his hand, which *destroys the freedom* which such writing is intended to promote.

The FIFTH contains the essentials of a useful kind of *small-hand*. There are first, as in large-hand, five easy letters of the

alphabet, forming four copies, which of course are repeated. Then follows the remainder of the alphabet, with the difficult characters alluded to. The letters in this hand, especially the *a, c, d, g, o, and q*, are so formed that when the learner will have to correspond, his writing will not appear stiff. The copies in this book are not *mere Large-hand reduced*.

The SIXTH contains *small-hand copies*, with instructions as to the manner in which the pupil should hold his pen, so that when he leaves school he may not merely have some facility in copying, but really possess the information on the subject of writing which he may need at any future time.

The SEVENTH contains the foundation for a style of *small-hand*, adapted to females, *moderately pointed*.

The EIGHTH contains copies for females; and the holding of the pen is, of course, the subject to which they specially relate.

This Series is specially adapted for those who are preparing for a commercial life. It is generally found when a boy leaves school that his writing is of such a character that it is some months before it is available for book-keeping or accounts. The special object of this Series of Copy-Books is to form his writing in such a style that he may be put to the work of a counting-house at once. By following this course from the first the writing is kept free and legible, whilst it avoids unnecessary flourishing.

Specimens of hand-writing after a short course may be seen on application to the Publishers.



*Preparing for publication. Imperial 4to.*

## Jerusalem Explored ;

*Being a Description of the Ancient and Modern City, with upwards of One Hundred Illustrations, consisting of Views, Ground-plans, and Sections.*

BY DR. ERMETE PIEROTTI.

ARCHITECT-ENGINEER TO HIS EXCELLENCY SOOBRAYA PASHA OF JERUSALEM,  
AND ARCHITECT OF THE HOLY LAND.

 HIS important work, the result of a scientific study of subterranean Jerusalem, prosecuted on the spot, during a residence of eight years, by one qualified by a professional education to turn his opportunities to the best account, will supply the Biblical Student with that which has been the great desideratum of all recent archaeologists, and will furnish, for the first time, accurate data for a reconstruction of the city of Solomon, and for an identification of its topographical features as described by Josephus and other ancient authors, sacred and profane.

The various remains of Jewish and Christian architecture will be fully illustrated by engravings, and in particular the subterranean conduits, aqueducts, and cisterns excavated in the rock within the Temple area, and other parts of the Ancient City.

The appointment of Dr. Pierotti as architect-engineer to the Pasha of Jerusalem, involving his professional employment in the Haram-es-

Sherif—the Temple Close—has allowed him free access to all the buildings and substructures within the sacred enclosure, to which the European traveller has been permitted, at the most, only a hurried visit; while his operations, in all parts of Jerusalem, as surveyor of the various Christian communities, and agent for the purchase of land, have put him in possession of a fund of information bearing on the ancient topography of the city.

It is hoped that this work, while of the greatest value to the scientific archaeologist, will not be of less interest to the general reader, as its copious pictorial illustrations will serve to explain such technical details as may be found necessary for the elucidation of the subject.

The work will be published in imperial quarto, and the price to Subscribers will not exceed four guineas.

*[Preparing for publication.]*

PLAN DE JERUSALEM ANCIENNE ET MODERNE. Par le Docteur ERMETE PIEROTTI. On a large sheet 41 in. by 29 in.; with numerous details. Price 10s.  
*[Now ready.]*

RITISH SEAWEEDS. Drawn from Professor HARVEY's "Phycologia Britannica," with Descriptions by Mrs. ALFRED GATTY. 4to. *[Shortly.]*

This volume contains a drawing of every species of British Seaweed, with magnified sections where necessary, in 463 figures, accurately coloured after nature.

BRITISH MOTHS AND BUTTERFLIES. Transferred in 195 plates from CURTIS's "British Entomology;" with Descriptions by E. W. JASSOS, Esq. Secretary of the Entomological Society. 4to. *[Shortly.]*

BRITISH BEETLES. Transferred in 259 plates from CURTIS's "British Entomology;" with Descriptions by E. W. JASSOS, Esq. Secretary of the Entomological Society. 4to. *[Shortly.]*



# BELL AND DALDY'S POCKET VOLUMES.

A SERIES OF SELECT WORKS OF  
FAVOURITE AUTHORS.



THE intention of the Publishers is to produce a Series of Volumes adapted for general reading, moderate in price, compact and elegant in form, and executed in a style fitting them to be permanently preserved.

They do not profess to compete with the so-called cheap volumes. They believe that a cheapness which is attained by the use of inferior type and paper, and absence of editorial care, and which results in volumes that no one cares to keep, is a false cheapness. They desire rather to produce books superior in quality, and relatively as cheap.

Each volume will be carefully revised by a competent editor, and printed at the Chiswick Press, on fine paper, with new type, and ornaments and initial letters specially designed for the series.

The *Pocket Volumes* will include all classes of Literature, both copyright and non-copyright;—Biography, History, Voyages, Travels, Poetry, sacred and secular, Books of Adventure and Fiction. They will include Translations of Foreign Books, and also such American Literature as may be considered worthy of adoption.

The Publishers desire to respect the moral claims of authors who cannot secure legal copyright in this country, and to remunerate equitably those whose works they may reprint.

The books will be issued, at short intervals, in paper covers, at various prices, from 1s. to 3s. 6d., and in cloth, top edge gilt, at 6d. per volume extra, in half morocco, Roxburgh style, at 1s. extra, in antique or best plain morocco (Hayday), at 4s. extra.

## *Now Ready.*

- The Robin Hood Ballads. 2s. 6d.
- The Lieutenant and Commander. By Capt. Basil Hall, R.N. 3s.
- The Midshipman. By Capt. Basil Hall, R.N. 3s.
- Southey's Life of Nelson. 2s. 6d.
- George Herbert's Poems. 2s.
- George Herbert's Works. 3s.
- Longfellow's Poems. 2s. 6d.
- Lamb's Tales from Shakspeare. 2s. 6d.
- Milton's Paradise Lost. 2s. 6d.
- Milton's Paradise Regained and other Poems. 2s. 6d.

## *Preparing.*

- White's Natural History of Selborne.
- The Conquest of India. By Capt. Basil Hall, R.N.
- Sea Songs and Ballads. By Charles Dibdin, and others.
- Walton's Lives of Donne, Wotton, Hooker, &c.
- Walton's Complete Angler.
- Gray's Poems.
- Goldsmith's Poems.
- Goldsmith's Vicar of Wakefield.
- Henry Vaughan's Poems.
- Burns's Poems.
- Burns's Songs.
- Coleridge's Poems.

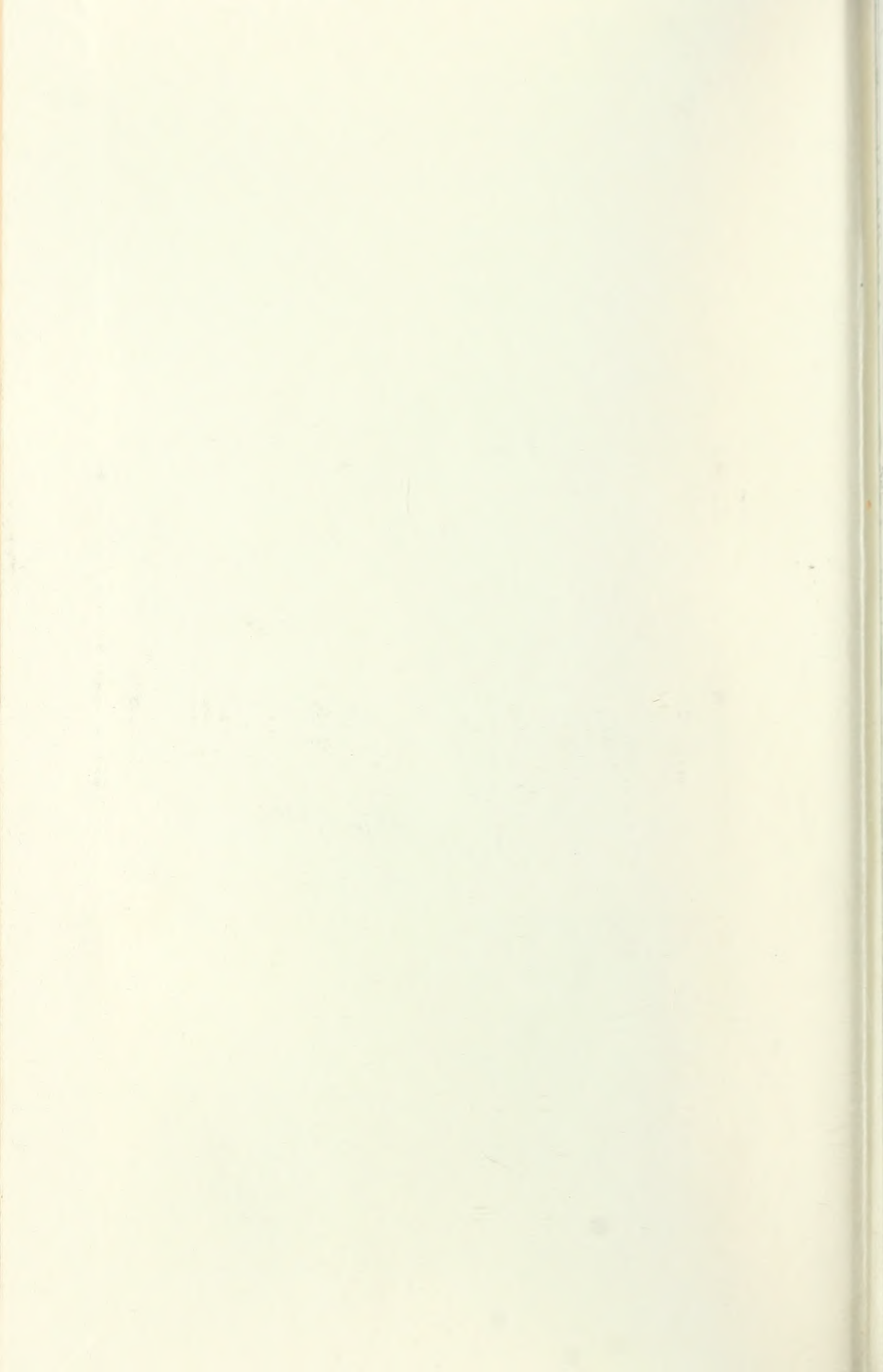
*Other Works are in preparation.*











PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---

HM  
101  
H35

Harris, George  
Civilization considered as  
a science



UTL AT DOWNSVIEW



D RANGE BAY SHLF POS ITEM C  
39 16 13 25 07 011 3